MEMORIAL BRANCH

BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 9999 01536 758 2

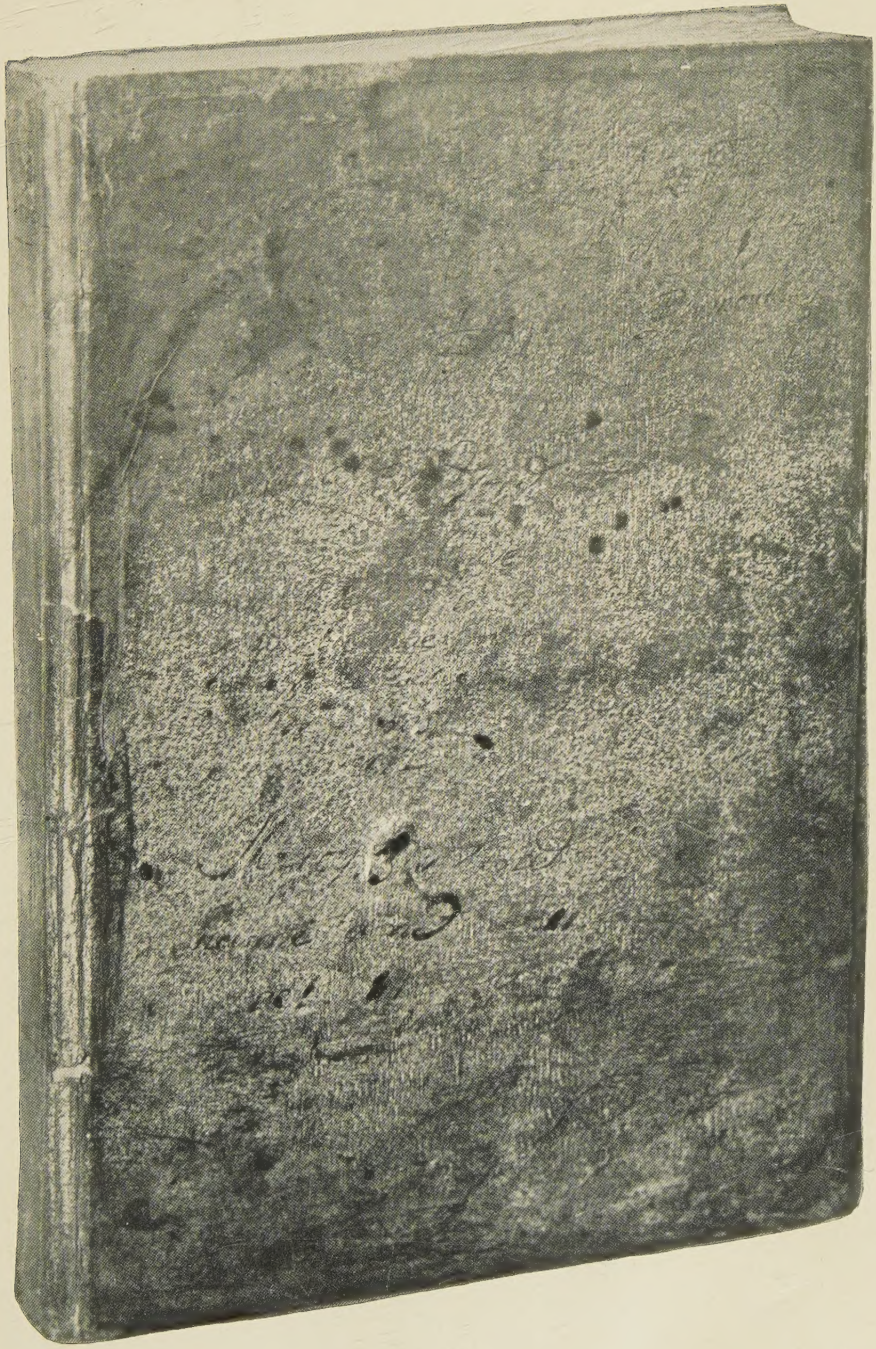
THE PUBLIC LIBRARY
OF THE
CITY OF BOSTON
1956

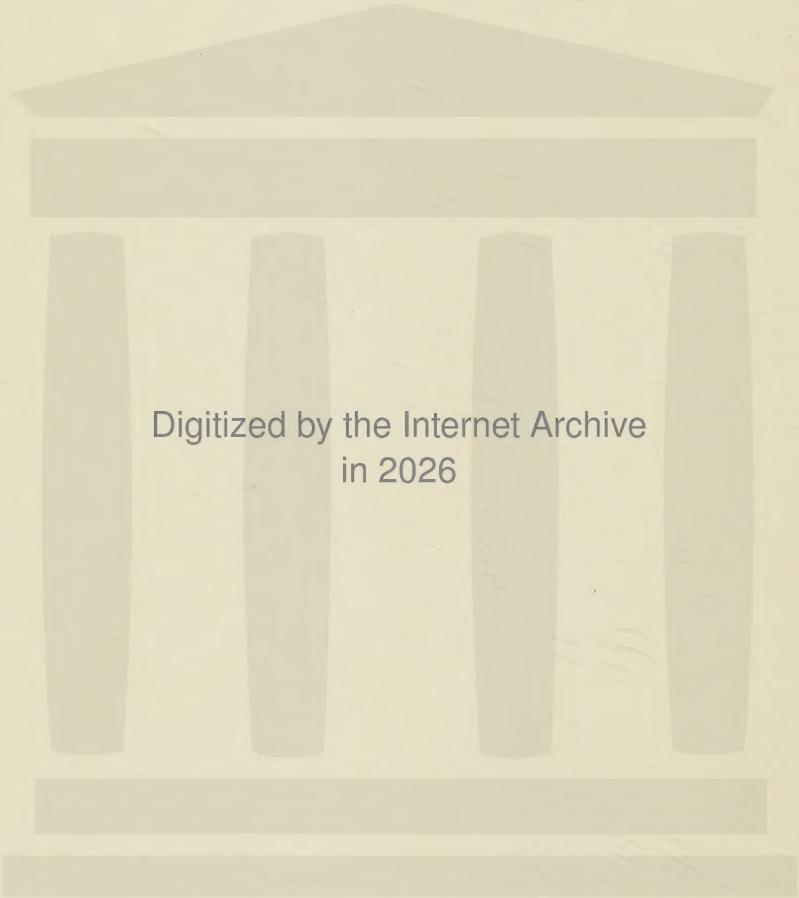
'56

1969

1963

GROVE HALL
BRANCH LIBRARY




Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/bradfordshistory0000unse_f3g1

BRADFORD'S HISTORY

"OF PLIMOTH PLANTATION."

FROM THE ORIGINAL MANUSCRIPT.

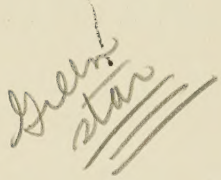
WITH A REPORT OF THE PROCEEDINGS INCIDENT
TO THE RETURN OF THE MANUSCRIPT
TO MASSACHUSETTS.

PRINTED UNDER THE DIRECTION OF THE SECRETARY OF THE
COMMONWEALTH,
BY ORDER OF THE GENERAL COURT.

Memorial Branch

BOSTON:
WRIGHT & POTTER PRINTING CO., STATE PRINTERS,
18 POST OFFICE SQUARE.
1898.

Em 1110



Mam

Mrs. L. B. Greenleaf
March 22, 1921

9-24-42
10-30

INTRODUCTION. .

To many people the return of the Bradford Manuscript is a fresh discovery of colonial history. By very many it has been called, incorrectly, the log of the "Mayflower." Indeed, that is the title by which it is described in the decree of the Consistorial Court of London. The fact is, however, that Governor Bradford undertook its preparation long after the arrival of the Pilgrims, and it cannot be properly considered as in any sense a log or daily journal of the voyage of the "Mayflower." It is, in point of fact, a history of the Plymouth Colony, chiefly in the form of annals, extending from the inception of the colony down to the year 1647. The matter has been in print since 1856, put forth through the public spirit of the Massachusetts Historical Society, which secured a transcript of the document from London, and printed it in the society's proceedings of the above-named year. As thus presented, it had copious notes, prepared with great care by the late Charles Deane; but these are not given in the present volume, wherein only such comments as seem indispensable to a proper understanding of the story have been made, leaving what-

ever elaboration may seem desirable to some future private enterprise.

It is a matter of regret that no picture of Governor Bradford exists. Only Edward Winslow of the Mayflower Company left an authenticated portrait of himself, and that, painted in England, is reproduced in this volume. In those early days Plymouth would have been a poor field for portrait painters. The people were struggling for their daily bread rather than for to-morrow's fame through the transmission of their features to posterity.

The volume of the original manuscript, as it was presented to the Governor of the Commonwealth and is now deposited in the State Library, is a folio measuring eleven and one-half inches in length, seven and seven-eighths inches in width and one and one-half inches in thickness. It is bound in parchment, once white, but now grimy and much the worse for wear, being somewhat cracked and considerably scaled. Much scribbling, evidently by the Bradford family, is to be seen upon its surface, and out of the confusion may be read the name of Mercy Bradford, a daughter of the governor. On the inside of the front cover is pasted a sheet of manilla paper, on which is written the following: —

"*Consistory Court of the Diocese of London*

In the matter of the application of The Honorable Thomas Francis Bayard, Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary

in London of the United States of America, for the delivery to him, on behalf of the President and Citizens of the said States, of the original manuscript book entitled and known as The Log of the Mayflower.

Produced in Court this 25th day of March, 1897, and marked with the letter A.

HARRY W. LEE
Registrar.
1 Deans Court
Doctors Commons"

Then come two manilla leaves, on both sides of which is written the decree of the Consistorial Court. These leaves and the manilla sheet pasted on the inside of the front cover were evidently inserted after the decree was passed.

Next comes a leaf (apparently the original first leaf of the book), and on it are verses, signed "A. M.," on the death of Mrs. Bradford. The next is evidently one of the leaves of the original book. At the top of the page is written the following: —

This book was rit by govener William bradford and given to his son mager William Bradford and by him to his son mager John Bradford. rit by me Samuel bradford mach 20, 1705

At the bottom of the same page the name John Bradford appears in different handwriting, evidently written with the book turned wrong side up.

The next is a leaf bearing the following, in the handwriting of Thomas Prince: —

Tuesday, June 4 — 1728

Calling at *Major John Bradford's* at Kingston near Plimouth, son of Major Wm. Bradford formerly Dep Gov'r of Plimouth Colony, who was eldest son of Wm. Bradford Esq their 2nd Gov'r, & author of this History; ye sd Major John Bradford gave me *several manuscript octavoes* wh he assured me were written with his said Grandfather Gov'r Bradford's own hand. He also gave me a *little Pencil Book* wrote with a Blew lead Pencil by his sd Father ye Dep Gov'r. And He also told me yt He had lent & only lent his sd Grandfather Gov'r Bradford's History of Plimouth Colony wrote by his own Hand also, to judg Sewall; and desired me to get it of Him or find it out, & take out of it what I thought proper for my New-England Chronology: wh I accordingly obtained, and This is ye sd History: wh I found wrote in ye same Handwriting as ye Octavo manuscripts above sd.

Thomas Prince.

N. B. I also mentioned to him my Desire of lodging this History in ye New England Library of Prints & manuscripts, wh I had been then collecting for 23 years, to wh He signified his willingness — only yt He might have ye Perusal of it while He lived.

T. Prince.

Following this, on the same page, is Thomas Prince's printed book-mark, as follows: —

This Book belongs to
The New-England-Library,
Begun to be collected by Thomas Prince, upon
his entring Harvard-College, July 6
1703; and was given by

On the lower part of a blank space which follows the word "by" is written: —

It now belongs to the Bishop of London's Library at Fulham.

There are evidences that this leaf did not belong to the original book, but was inserted by Mr. Prince.

At the top of the first page of the next leaf, which was evidently one of the original leaves of the book, is written in Samuel Bradford's hand, "march 20 Samuel Bradford;" and just below there appears, in Thomas Prince's handwriting, the following: —

But major Bradford tells me & assures me that He only lent this Book of his Grandfather's to Mr. Sewall & that it being of his Grandfather's own hand writing He had so high a value of it that he would never Part with ye Property, but would lend it to me & desired me to get it, which I did, & write down this that sd Major Bradford and his Heirs may be known to be the right owners.

Below this, also in Thomas Prince's handwriting, appears this line: —

"Page 243 missing when ye Book came into my Hands at 1st."

Just above the inscription by Prince there is a line or two of writing, marked over in ink so carefully as to be wholly undecipherable. On the reverse page of this leaf and on the first page of the next are written Hebrew words, with definitions. These are all in Gov-

ernor Bradford's handwriting. On the next page appears the following: —

Though I am growne aged, yet I have had a longing desire, to see with my own eyes, something of that most ancient language, and holy tongue, in which the Law, and oracles of God were write; and in which God, and angels, spake to the holy patriarks, of old time; and what names were given to things, from the creation. And though I cañot attaine to much herein, yet I am refreshed, to have seen some glimpse hereof; (as Moses saw the Land of canan afarr of) my aime and desire is, to see how the words, and phrases lye in the holy texte; and to dicerne somewhat of the same for my owne contente.

J

Then begins the history proper, the first page of which is produced in facsimile in this volume, slightly reduced. The ruled margins end with page thirteen. From that page to the end of the book the writing varies considerably, sometimes being quite coarse and in other places very fine, some pages containing nearly a thousand words each. As a rule, the writing is upon one side of the sheet only, but in entering notes and subsequent thoughts the reverse is sometimes used. The last page number is 270, as appears from the facsimile reproduction in this volume of that page. Page 270 is followed by two blank leaves; then on

the second page of the next leaf appears the list of names of those who came over in the "Mayflower," covering four pages and one column on the fifth page. The arrangement of this matter is shown by the facsimile reproduction in this volume of the first page of these names. Last of all there is a leaf of heavy double paper, like the one in the front of the book containing the verses on the death of Mrs. Bradford, and on this last leaf is written an index to a few portions of the history.

For copy, there was used the edition printed in 1856 by the Massachusetts Historical Society. The proof was carefully compared, word for word, with the photographic *facsimile* issued in 1896 in both London and Boston. The value of this comparison is evident in that a total of sixteen lines of the original, omitted in the original first copy, is supplied in this edition. As the work of the Historical Society could not be compared, easily, with the original manuscript in London, these omissions, with sundry minor errors in word and numeral, are not unreasonable. The curious will be pleased to learn that the supplied lines are from the following pages of the manuscript, viz.: page 122, eight lines; page 129, two lines; the obverse of page 201, found on the last page of Appendix A, two lines; page 219, two

lines; pages 239 and 258, one line each. The pages of the manuscript are indicated in these printed pages by numerals in parentheses.

There are several errors in the paging of the original manuscript. Pages 105 and 106 are marked 145 and 146, and pages 219 and 220 are marked 119 and 120, respectively. Page 243 is missing.

Such as it is, the book is put forth that the public may know what manner of men the Pilgrims were, through what perils and vicissitudes they passed, and how much we of to-day owe to their devotion and determination.

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

LEGISLATURE.

JOURNAL OF THE SENATE.

MONDAY, MAY 24, 1897.

The following message from His Excellency the Governor came up from the House, to wit: —

BOSTON, May 22, 1897.

To the Honorable Senate and House of Representatives.

I have the honor to call to your attention the fact that Wednesday, May 26, at 11 A.M., has been fixed as the date of the formal presentation to the Governor of the Commonwealth of the Bradford Manuscript History, recently ordered by decree of the Consistory Court of the Diocese of London to be returned to the Commonwealth of Massachusetts by the hands of the Honorable Thomas F. Bayard, lately Ambassador at the Court of St. James; and to suggest for the favorable consideration of your honorable bodies that the exercises of presentation be held in the House of Representatives on the day and hour above given, in the presence of a joint convention of the two bodies and of invited guests and the public.

ROGER WOLCOTT.

Thereupon, on motion of Mr. Roe, —

Ordered, That, in accordance with the suggestion of His Excellency the Governor, a joint convention of the two branches be held in the chamber of the House

of Representatives, on Wednesday, May the twenty-sixth, at eleven o'clock A.M., for the purpose of witnessing the exercises of the formal presentation, to the Governor of the Commonwealth, of the Bradford Manuscript History, recently ordered by decree of the Consistory Court of the Diocese of London to be returned to the Commonwealth of Massachusetts by the hands of the Honorable Thomas F. Bayard, lately Ambassador at the Court of St. James; and further

Ordered, That the clerks of the two branches give notice to His Excellency the Governor of the adoption of this order.

Sent down for concurrence. (It was concurred with same date.)

JOURNAL OF THE SENATE.

WEDNESDAY, MAY 26, 1897.

Joint Convention.

At eleven o'clock A.M., pursuant to assignment, the two branches met in

CONVENTION

in the chamber of the House of Representatives.

On motion of Mr. Roe,—

Ordered, That a committee, to consist of three members of the Senate and eight members of the House of Representatives, be appointed, to wait upon His Excellency the Governor and inform him that the two branches are now in convention for the purpose of witnessing the exercises of the formal presentation, to the Governor of the Commonwealth, of the Bradford Manuscript History.

Messrs. Roe, Woodward and Gallivan, of the Senate, and Messrs. Pierce of Milton, Bailey of Plymouth, Brown of Gloucester, Fairbank of Warren, Bailey of Newbury, Sanderson of Lynn, Whittlesey of Pittsfield

and Bartlett of Boston, of the House, were appointed the committee.

Mr. Roe, from the committee, afterwards reported that they had attended to the duty assigned them, and that His Excellency the Governor had been pleased to say that he received the message and should be pleased to wait upon the Convention forthwith for the purpose named.

His Excellency the Governor, accompanied by His Honor the Lieutenant-Governor and the Honorable Council, and by the Honorable Thomas F. Bayard, lately Ambassador of the United States at the Court of St. James's, the Honorable George F. Hoar, Senator from Massachusetts in the Congress of the United States, and other invited guests, entered the chamber.

The decree of the Consistorial and Episcopal Court of London, authorizing the return of the manuscript and its delivery to the Governor, was read.

The President then presented the Honorable George F. Hoar, who gave an account of the manuscript and of the many efforts that had been made to secure its return.

The Honorable Thomas F. Bayard was then introduced by the President, and he formally presented the manuscript to His Excellency the Governor, who accepted it in behalf of the Commonwealth.

On motion of Mr. Bradford, the following order was adopted: —

Whereas, In the presence of the Senate and of the House of Representatives in joint convention assembled, and in accordance with a decree of the Consistorial and Episcopal Court of London, the manuscript of Bradford's "History of the Plimouth Plantation" has this day been delivered to His Excellency the Governor of the Commonwealth by the Honorable Thomas F. Bayard, lately Ambassador of the United States at the Court of St. James's; and

Whereas, His Excellency the Governor has accepted the said manuscript in behalf of the Commonwealth; therefore, be it

Ordered, That the Senate and the House of Representatives of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts place on record their high appreciation of the generous and gracious courtesy that prompted this act of international good-will, and express their grateful thanks to all concerned therein, and especially to the Lord Bishop of London, for the return to the Commonwealth of this precious relic; and be it further

Ordered, That His Excellency the Governor be requested to transmit an engrossed and duly authenticated copy of this order with its preamble to the Lord Bishop of London.

His Excellency, accompanied by the other dignitaries, then withdrew, the Convention was dissolved, and the Senate returned to its chamber.

Subsequently a resolve was passed (approved June

10, 1897) providing for the publication of the history from the original manuscript, together with a report of the proceedings of the joint convention, such report to be prepared by a committee consisting of one member of the Senate and two members of the House of Representatives, and to include, so far as practicable, portraits of His Excellency Governor Roger Wolcott, William Bradford, the Honorable George F. Hoar, the Honorable Thomas F. Bayard, the Archbishop of Canterbury and the Lord Bishop of London; facsimiles of pages from the manuscript history, and a picture of the book itself; copies of the decree of the Consistorial and Episcopal Court of London, the receipt of the Honorable Thomas F. Bayard for the manuscript, and the receipt sent by His Excellency the Governor to the Consistorial and Episcopal Court; an account of the legislative action taken with reference to the presentation and reception of the manuscript; the addresses of the Honorable George F. Hoar, the Honorable Thomas F. Bayard and His Excellency Governor Roger Wolcott; and such other papers and illustrations as the committee might deem advisable; the whole to be printed under the direction of the Secretary of the Commonwealth, and the book distributed by him according to directions contained in the resolve.

Senator Alfred S. Roe of Worcester and Representatives Francis C. Lowell of Boston and Walter L. Bouvé of Hingham were appointed as the committee.

DECREE

OF THE

CONSISTORIAL AND EPISCOPAL

COURT OF LONDON.

DECREE.

MANDELL by Divine Permission LORD BISHOP OF LONDON — To The Honorable THOMAS FRANCIS BAYARD Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary to Her Most Gracious Majesty Queen Victoria at the Court of Saint James's in London and To The Governor and Commonwealth of Massachusetts in the United States of America Greeting — WHEREAS a Petition has been filed in the Registry of Our Consistorial and Episcopal Court of London by you the said Honorable Thomas Francis Bayard as Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary to Her Most Gracious Majesty Queen Victoria at the Court of Saint James's in London on behalf of the President and Citizens of the United States of America wherein you have alleged that there is in Our Custody as Lord Bishop of London a certain Manuscript Book known as and entitled "The Log of the Mayflower" containing an account as narrated by Captain William Bradford who was one of the Company of Englishmen who left England in April 1620 in the ship known as "The Mayflower" of the circumstances leading to the prior Settlement of

that Company at Leyden in Holland their return to England and subsequent departure for New England their landing at Cape Cod in December 1620 their Settlement at New Plymouth and their later history for several years they being the Company whose Settlement in America is regarded as the first real Colonisation of the New England States and wherein you have also alleged that the said Manuscript Book had been for many years past and was then deposited in the Library attached to Our Episcopal Palace at Fulham in the County of Middlesex and is of the greatest interest importance and value to the Citizens of the United States of America inasmuch as it is one of the earliest records of their national History and contains much valuable information in regard to the original Settlers in the States their family history and antecedents and that therefore you earnestly desired to acquire possession of the same for and on behalf of the President and Citizens of the said United States of America AND WHEREIN you have also alleged that you are informed that We as Lord Bishop of London had fully recognised the value and interest of the said Manuscript Book to the Citizens of the United States of America and the claims which they have to its possession and that We were desirous of transferring it to the said President and Citizens AND WHEREIN you have also alleged that you are advised and believe that the Custody of documents in

the nature of public or ecclesiastical records belonging to the See of London is vested in the Consistorial Court of the said See and that any disposal thereof must be authorised by an Order issued by the Judge of that Honorable Court And that you therefore humbly prayed that the said Honorable Court would deliver to you the said Manuscript Book on your undertaking to use every means in your power for the safe transmission of the said Book to the United States of America and its secure deposit and custody in the Pilgrim Hall at New Plymouth or in such other place as may be selected by the President and Senate of the said United States and upon such conditions as to security and access by and on behalf of the English Nation as that Honorable Court might determine AND WHEREAS the said Petition was set down for hearing on one of the Court days in Hilary Term to wit Thursday the Twenty fifth day of March One thousand eight hundred and ninety seven in Our Consistorial Court in the Cathedral Church of Saint Paul in London before The Right Worshipful Thomas Hutchinson Tristram Doctor of Laws and one of Her Majesty's Counsel learned in the Law Our Vicar General and Official Principal the Judge of the said Court and you at the sitting of the said Court appeared by Counsel in support of the Prayer of the said Petition and during the hearing thereof the said Manuscript Book was produced in the said Court by Our legal

Secretary and was then inspected and examined by the said Judge and evidence was also given before the Court by which it appeared that the Registry at Fulham Palace was a Public Registry for Historical and Ecclesiastical Documents relating to the Diocese of London and to the Colonial and other possessions of Great Britain beyond the Seas so long as the same remained by custom within the said Diocese AND WHEREAS it appeared on the face of the said Manuscript Book that the whole of the body thereof with the exception of part of the last page thereof was in the handwriting of the said William Bradford who was elected Governor of New Plymouth in April 1621 and continued Governor thereof from that date excepting between the years 1635 and 1637 up to 1650 and that the last five pages of the said Manuscript which is in the handwriting of the said William Bradford contain what in Law is an authentic Register between 1620 and 1650 of the fact of the Marriages of the Founders of the Colony of New England with the names of their respective wives and the names of their Children the lawful issue of such Marriages and of the fact of the Marriages of many of their Children and Grandchildren and of the names of the issue of such marriages and of the deaths of many of the persons named therein And after hearing Counsel in support of the said application the Judge being of opinion that the said Manu-

script Book had been upon the evidence before the Court presumably deposited at Fulham Palace sometime between the year 1729 and the year 1785 during which time the said Colony was by custom within the Diocese of London for purposes Ecclesiastical and the Registry of the said Consistorial Court was a legitimate Registry for the Custody of Registers of Marriages Births and Deaths within the said Colony and that the Registry at Fulham Palace was a Registry for Historical and other Documents connected with the Colonies and possessions of Great Britain beyond the Seas so long as the same remained by custom within the Diocese of London and that on the Declaration of the Independence of the United States of America in 1776 the said Colony had ceased to be within the Diocese of London and the Registry of the Court had ceased to be a public registry for the said Colony and having maturely deliberated on the Cases precedents and practice of the Ecclesiastical Court bearing on the application before him and having regard to the Special Circumstances of the Case Decreed as follows— (1) That a Photographic facsimile reproduction of the said Manuscript Book verified by affidavit as being a true and correct Photographic reproduction of the said Manuscript Book be deposited in the Registry of Our said Court by or on behalf of the Petitioner before the delivery to the Petitioner of the said original Manuscript Book as hereinafter

ordered— (2) That the said Manuscript Book be delivered over to the said Honorable Thomas Francis Bayard by the Lord Bishop of London or in his Lordship's absence by the Registrar of the said Court on his giving his undertaking in writing that he will with all due care and diligence on his arrival from England in the United States convey and deliver in person the said Manuscript Book to the Governor of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts in the United States of America at his Official Office in the State House in the City of Boston and that from the time of the delivery of the said Book to him by the said Lord Bishop of London or by the said Registrar until he shall have delivered the same to the Governor of Massachusetts he will retain the same in his own Personal custody— (3) That the said Book be deposited by the Petitioner with the Governor of Massachusetts for the purpose of the same being with all convenient speed finally deposited either in the State Archives of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts in the City of Boston or in the Library of the Historical Society of the said Commonwealth in the City of Boston as the Governor shall determine— (4) That the Governors of the said Commonwealth for all time to come be officially responsible for the safe custody of the said Manuscript Book whether the same be deposited in the State Archives at Boston or in the Historical Library in Boston aforesaid as well as for

the performance of the following conditions subject to a compliance wherewith the said Manuscript Book is hereby decreed to be deposited in the Custody of the aforesaid Governor of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts and his Successors to wit: — (a) That all persons have such access to the said Manuscript Book as to the Governor of the said Commonwealth for the time being shall appear to be reasonable and with such safeguard as he shall order — (b) That all persons desirous of searching the said Manuscript Book for the bonâ fide purpose of establishing or tracing a Pedigree through persons named in the last five pages thereof or in any other part thereof shall be permitted to search the same under such safeguards as the Governor for the time being shall determine on payment of a fee to be fixed by the Governor — (c) That any person applying to the Official having the immediate custody of the said Manuscript Book for a Certified Copy of any entry contained in proof of Marriage Birth or Death of persons named therein or of any other matter of like purport for the purpose of tracing descents shall be furnished with such certificate on the payment of a sum not exceeding one Dollar — (d) That with all convenient speed after the delivery of the said Manuscript Book to the Governor of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts the Governor shall transmit to the Registrar of the Court a Certificate of the delivery of the same to him by

the Petitioner and that he accepts the Custody of the same subject to the terms and conditions herein named AND the Judge lastly decreed that the Petitioner on delivering the said Manuscript Book to the Governor aforesaid shall at the same time deliver to him this Our Decree Sealed with the Seal of the Court WHEREFORE WE the Bishop of London aforesaid well weighing and considering the premises DO by virtue of Our Authority Ordinary and Episcopal and as far as in Us lies and by Law We may or can ratify and confirm such Decree of Our Vicar General and Official Principal of Our Consistorial and Episcopal Court of London IN TESTIMONY whereof We have caused the Seal of Our said Vicar General and Official Principal of the Consistorial and Episcopal Court of London which We use in this behalf to be affixed to these Presents DATED AT LONDON this Twelfth day of April One thousand eight hundred and ninety seven and in the first year of Our Translation.

HARRY W. LEE

Exd. H.E.T. Registrar

(L. S.)

RECEIPT

OF

AMBASSADOR BAYARD.

RECEIPT OF AMBASSADOR BAYARD.

In the Consistory Court of London

IN THE MATTER OF THE ORIGINAL MANUSCRIPT OF THE BOOK ENTITLED AND KNOWN AS "THE LOG OF THE MAYFLOWER."

I THE HONOURABLE THOMAS FRANCIS BAYARD lately Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary of the United States of America at the Court of Saint James's London Do hereby undertake, in compliance with the Order of this Honourable Court dated the twelfth day of April 1897 and made on my Petition filed in the said Honourable Court, that I will with all due care and diligence on my arrival from England in the United States of America safely convey over the Original Manuscript Book Known as and entitled "The Log of the Mayflower" which has been this twenty ninth day of April 1897 delivered over to me by the Lord Bishop of London, to the City of Boston in the United States of America and on my arrival in the said City deliver the same over in person to the Governor of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts at his Official Office in the State House in the said City of Boston AND I further hereby undertake from the time of the said

delivery of the said Book to me by the said Lord Bishop of London until I shall have delivered the same to the Governor of Massachusetts, to retain the same in my own personal custody.

(Signed) T. F. Bayard

29 April 1897

RECEIPT

OF

His Excellency ROGER WOLCOTT.

RECEIPT OF GOVERNOR WOLCOTT.

His Excellency ROGER WOLCOTT, *Governor of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, in the United States of America.*

To the Registrar of the Consistorial and Episcopal Court of London.

Whereas, The said Honorable Court, by its decree dated the twelfth day of April, 1897, and made on the petition of the Honorable Thomas Francis Bayard, lately Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary of the United States of America at the Court of Saint James in London, did order that a certain original manuscript book then in the custody of the Lord Bishop of London, known as and entitled "The Log of the Mayflower," and more specifically described in said decree, should be delivered over to the said Honorable Thomas Francis Bayard by the Lord Bishop of London, on certain conditions specified in said decree, to be delivered by the said Honorable Thomas Francis Bayard in person to the Governor of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, thereafter to be kept in the custody of the aforesaid Governor of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts and his successors, subject to a compliance with certain conditions, as set forth in said decree;

And Whereas, The said Honorable Court by its decree aforesaid did further order that, with all convenient speed after the delivery of the said manuscript book to the Governor of the Commonwealth of Massa-

chusetts, the Governor should transmit to the Registrar of the said Honorable Court a certificate of the delivery of the same to him by the said Honorable Thomas Francis Bayard, and his acceptance of the custody of the same, subject to the terms and conditions named in the decree aforesaid;

Now, Therefore, In compliance with the decree aforesaid I do hereby certify that on the twenty-sixth day of May, 1897, the said Honorable Thomas Francis Bayard delivered in person to me, at my official office in the State House in the city of Boston, in the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, in the United States of America, a certain manuscript book which the said Honorable Thomas Francis Bayard then and there declared to be the original manuscript book known as and entitled "The Log of the Mayflower," which is more specifically described in the decree aforesaid; and I do further certify that I hereby accept the custody of the same, subject to the terms and conditions named in the decree aforesaid.

In witness whereof, I have hereunto signed my name and caused the seal of the Commonwealth to be affixed, at the Capitol in Boston, this twelfth day of July in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and ninety-seven.

ROGER WOLCOTT.

By His Excellency the Governor,

WM. M. OLIN,

Secretary of the Commonwealth.

ADDRESS

OF THE

Hon. GEORGE F. HOAR.

ADDRESS OF SENATOR HOAR.

The first American Ambassador to Great Britain, at the end of his official service, comes to Massachusetts on an interesting errand. He comes to deliver to the lineal successor of Governor Bradford, in the presence of the representatives and rulers of the body politic formed by the compact on board the "Mayflower," Nov. 11, 1620, the only authentic history of the founding of their Commonwealth; the only authentic history of what we have a right to consider the most important political transaction that has ever taken place on the face of the earth.

Mr. Bayard has sought to represent to the mother country, not so much the diplomacy as the good-will of the American people. If in this anybody be tempted to judge him severely, let us remember what his great predecessor, John Adams, the first minister at the same court, representing more than any other man, embodying more than any other man, the spirit of Massachusetts, said to George III., on the first day of June, 1785, after the close of our long and bitter struggle for independence: "I shall esteem myself the happiest of men if I can be instru-

mental in restoring an entire esteem, confidence and affection, or, in better words, the old good-nature and the old good-humor between people who, though separated by an ocean and under different governments, have the same language, a similar religion and kindred blood."

And let us remember, too, the answer of the old monarch, who, with all his faults, must have had something of a noble and royal nature stirring in his bosom, when he replied: "Let the circumstances of language, religion and blood have their natural and full effect."

It has long been well known that Governor Bradford wrote and left behind him a history of the settlement of Plymouth. It was quoted by early chroniclers. There are extracts from it in the records at Plymouth. Thomas Prince used it when he compiled his annals. Hubbard depended on it when he wrote his "History of New England." Cotton Mather had read it, or a copy of a portion of it, when he wrote his "Magnalia." Governor Hutchinson had it when he published the second volume of his history in 1767. From that time it disappeared from the knowledge of everybody on this side of the water. All our historians speak of it as lost, and can only guess what had been its fate. Some persons suspected that it was destroyed when Governor Hutchinson's house was sacked in 1765, others that it was

carried off by some officer or soldier when Boston was evacuated by the British army in 1776.

In 1844 Samuel Wilberforce, Bishop of Oxford, afterward Bishop of Winchester, one of the brightest of men, published one of the dullest and stupidest of books. It is entitled "The History of the Protestant Episcopal Church in America." It contained extracts from manuscripts which he said he had discovered in the library of the Bishop of London at Fulham. The book attracted no attention here until, about twelve years later, in 1855, John Wingate Thornton, whom many of us remember as an accomplished antiquary and a delightful gentleman, happened to pick up a copy of it while he was lounging in Burnham's book store. He read the bishop's quotations, and carried the book to his office, where he left it for his friend, Mr. Barry, who was then writing his "History of Massachusetts," with passages marked, and with a note which is not preserved, but which, according to his memory, suggested that the passages must have come from Bradford's long-lost history. That is the claim for Mr. Thornton. On the other hand, it is claimed by Mr. Barry that there was nothing of that kind expressed in Mr. Thornton's note, but in reading the book when he got it an hour or so later, the thought struck him for the first time that the clew had been found to the precious book which had been lost so long. He at once repaired to Charles

Deane, then and ever since, down to his death, as President Eliot felicitously styled him, "the master of historical investigators in this country." Mr. Deane saw the importance of the discovery. He communicated at once with Joseph Hunter, an eminent English scholar. Hunter was high authority on all matters connected with the settlement of New England. He visited the palace at Fulham, and established beyond question the identity of the manuscript with Governor Bradford's history, an original letter of Governor Bradford having been sent over for comparison of handwriting.

How the manuscript got to Fulham nobody knows. Whether it was carried over by Governor Hutchinson in 1774; whether it was taken as spoil from the tower of the Old South Church in 1775; whether, with other manuscripts, it was sent to Fulham at the time of the attempts of the Episcopal churches in America, just before the revolution, to establish an episcopate here, — nobody knows. It would seem that Hutchinson would have sent it to the colonial office; that an officer would naturally have sent it to the war office; and a private would have sent it to the war office, unless he had carried it off as mere private booty and plunder, — in which case it would have been unlikely that it would have reached a public place of custody. But we find it in the possession of the church and of the church official having,

until independence was declared, special jurisdiction over Episcopal interests in Massachusetts and Plymouth. This may seem to point to a transfer for some ecclesiastical purpose.

The bishop's chancellor conjectures that it was sent to Fulham because of the record annexed to it of the early births, marriages and deaths, such records being in England always in ecclesiastical custody. But this is merely conjecture.

I know of no incident like this in history, unless it be the discovery in a chest in the castle of Edinburgh, where they had been lost for one hundred and eleven years, of the ancient regalia of Scotland, — the crown of Bruce, the sceptre and sword of state. The lovers of Walter Scott, who was one of the commissioners who made the search, remember his intense emotion, as described by his daughter, when the lid was removed. Her feelings were worked up to such a pitch that she nearly fainted, and drew back from the circle.

As she was retiring she was startled by his voice exclaiming, in a tone of the deepest emotion, "something between anger and despair," as she expressed it: "By God, no!" One of the commissioners, not quite entering into the solemnity with which Scott regarded this business, had, it seems, made a sort of motion as if he meant to put the crown on the head of one of the young ladies near him, but the

voice and the aspect of the poet were more than sufficient to make this worthy gentleman understand his error; and, respecting the enthusiasm with which he had not been taught to sympathize, he laid down the ancient diadem with an air of painful embarrassment. Scott whispered, "Pray forgive me," and turning round at the moment observed his daughter deadly pale and leaning by the door. He immediately drew her out of the room, and when she had somewhat recovered in the fresh air, walked with her across Mound to Castle Street. "He never spoke all the way home," she says, "but every now and then I felt his arm tremble, and from that time I fancied he began to treat me more like a woman than a child. I thought he liked me better, too, than he had ever done before."

There have been several attempts to procure the return of the manuscript to this country. Mr. Winthrop, in 1860, through the venerable John Sinclair, archdeacon, urged the Bishop of London to give it up, and proposed that the Prince of Wales, then just coming to this country, should take it across the Atlantic and present it to the people of Massachusetts. The Attorney-General, Sir Fitzroy Kelley, approved the plan, and said it would be an exceptional act of grace, a most interesting action, and that he heartily wished the success of the application. But the bishop refused. Again, in 1869, John Lothrop

Motley, then minister to England, who had a great and deserved influence there, repeated the proposition, at the suggestion of that most accomplished scholar, Justin Winsor. But his appeal had the same fate. The bishop gave no encouragement, and said, as had been said nine years before, that the property could not be alienated without an act of Parliament. Mr. Winsor planned to repeat the attempt on his visit to England in 1877. When he was at Fulham the bishop was absent, and he was obliged to come home without seeing him in person.

In 1881, at the time of the death of President Garfield, Benjamin Scott, chamberlain of London, proposed again in the newspapers that the restitution should be made. But nothing came of it.

Dec. 21, 1895, I delivered an address at Plymouth, on the occasion of the two hundred and seventy-fifth anniversary of the landing of the Pilgrims upon the rock. In preparing for that duty, I read again, with renewed enthusiasm and delight, the noble and touching story, as told by Governor Bradford. I felt that this precious history of the Pilgrims ought to be in no other custody than that of their children. But the case seemed hopeless. I found myself compelled by a serious physical infirmity to take a vacation, and to get a rest from public cares and duties, which was impossible while I stayed at home. When I went abroad I determined to visit the locality, on the

borders of Lincolnshire and Yorkshire, from which Bradford and Brewster and Robinson, the three leaders of the Pilgrims, came, and where their first church was formed, and the places in Amsterdam and Leyden where the emigrants spent thirteen years. But I longed especially to see the manuscript of Bradford at Fulham, which then seemed to me, as it now seems to me, the most precious manuscript on earth, unless we could recover one of the four gospels as it came in the beginning from the pen of the Evangelist.

The desire to get it back grew and grew during the voyage across the Atlantic. I did not know how such a proposition would be received in England. A few days after I landed I made a call upon John Morley. I asked him whether he thought the thing could be done. He inquired carefully into the story, took down from his shelf the excellent though brief life of Bradford in Leslie Stephen's "Biographical Dictionary," and told me he thought the book ought to come back to us, and that he should be glad to do anything in his power to help. It was my fortune, a week or two after, to sit next to Mr. Bayard at a dinner given to Mr. Collins by the American consuls in Great Britain. I took occasion to tell him the story, and he gave me the assurance, which he has since so abundantly and successfully fulfilled, of his powerful aid. I was

compelled, by the health of one of the party with whom I was travelling, to go to the continent almost immediately, and was disappointed in the hope of an early return to England. So the matter was delayed until about a week before I sailed for home, when I went to Fulham, in the hope at least of seeing the manuscript. I had supposed that it was a quasi-public library, open to general visitors. But I found the bishop was absent. I asked for the librarian, but there was no such officer, and I was told very politely that the library was not open to the public, and was treated in all respects as that of a private gentleman. So I gave up any hope of doing anything in person. But I happened, the Friday before I sailed for home, to dine with an English friend who had been exceedingly kind to me. As he took leave of me, about eleven o'clock in the evening, he asked me if there was anything more he could do for me. I said, "No, unless you happen to know the Lord Bishop of London. I should like to get a sight at the manuscript of Bradford's history before I go home." He said, "I do not know the bishop myself, but Mr. Grenfell, at whose house you spent a few days in the early summer, married the bishop's niece, and will gladly give you an introduction to his uncle. He is in Scotland. But I will write to him before I go to bed."

Sunday morning brought me a cordial letter from

Mr. Grenfell, introducing me to the bishop. I wrote a note to his lordship, saying I should be glad to have an opportunity to see Bradford's history; that I was to sail for the United States the next Wednesday, but would be pleased to call at Fulham Tuesday, if that were agreeable to him.

I got a note in reply, in which he said if I would call on Tuesday he would be happy to show me "The Log of the Mayflower," which is the title the English, without the slightest reason in the world, give the manuscript. I kept the appointment, and found the bishop with the book in his hand. He received me with great courtesy, showed me the palace, and said that that spot had been occupied by a bishop's palace for more than a thousand years.

After looking at the volume and reading the records on the flyleaf, I said: "My lord, I am going to say something which you may think rather audacious. I think this book ought to go back to Massachusetts. Nobody knows how it got over here. Some people think it was carried off by Governor Hutchinson, the Tory governor; other people think it was carried off by British soldiers when Boston was evacuated; but in either case the property would not have changed. Or, if you treat it as a booty, in which last case, I suppose, by the law of nations ordinary property does change, no civilized nation in modern times

applies that principle to the property of libraries and institutions of learning."

"Well," said the bishop, "I did not know you cared anything about it."

"Why," said I, "if there were in existence in England a history of King Alfred's reign for thirty years, written by his own hand, it would not be more precious in the eyes of Englishmen than this manuscript is to us."

"Well," said he, "I think myself it ought to go back, and if it had depended on me it would have gone back before this. But the Americans who have been here — many of them have been commercial people — did not seem to care much about it except as a curiosity. I suppose I ought not to give it up on my own authority. It belongs to me in my official capacity, and not as private or personal property. I think I ought to consult the Archbishop of Canterbury. And, indeed," he added, "I think I ought to speak to the Queen about it. We should not do such a thing behind Her Majesty's back."

I said: "Very well. When I go home I will have a proper application made from some of our literary societies, and ask you to give it consideration."

I saw Mr. Bayard again, and told him the story. He was at the train when I left London for the steamer at Southampton. He entered with great in-

terest into the matter, and told me again he would gladly do anything in his power to forward it.

When I got home I communicated with Secretary Olney about it, who took a kindly interest in the matter, and wrote to Mr. Bayard that the administration desired he should do everything in his power to promote the application. The matter was then brought to the attention of the council of the American Antiquarian Society, the Massachusetts Historical Society, the Pilgrim Society of Plymouth and the New England Society of New York. These bodies appointed committees to unite in the application. Governor Wolcott was also consulted, who gave his hearty approbation to the movement, and a letter was dispatched through Mr. Bayard.

Meantime Bishop Temple, with whom I had my conversation, had himself become Archbishop of Canterbury, and in that capacity Primate of all England. His successor, Rev. Dr. Creighton, had been the delegate of John Harvard's College to the great celebration at Harvard University on the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of its foundation, in 1886. He had received the degree of doctor of laws from the university, had been a guest of President Eliot, and had received President Eliot as his guest in England.

He is an accomplished historical scholar, and very friendly in sentiment to the people of the United

States. So, by great fortune, the two eminent ecclesiastical personages who were to have a powerful influence in the matter were likely to be exceedingly well disposed. Dr. Benjamin A. Gould, the famous mathematician, was appointed one of the committee of the American Antiquarian Society. He died suddenly, just after a letter to the Bishop of London was prepared and about to be sent to him for signing. He took a very zealous interest in the matter. The letter formally asked for the return of the manuscript, and was signed by the following-named gentlemen: George F. Hoar, Stephen Salisbury, Edward Everett Hale, Samuel A. Green, for the American Antiquarian Society; Charles Francis Adams, William Lawrence, Charles W. Eliot, for the Massachusetts Historical Society; Arthur Lord, William M. Evarts, William T. Davis, for the Pilgrim Society of Plymouth; Charles C. Beaman, Joseph H. Choate, J. Pierpont Morgan, for the New England Society of New York; Roger Wolcott, Governor of Massachusetts.

The rarest good fortune seems to have attended every step in this transaction.

I was fortunate in having formed the friendship of Mr. Grenfell, which secured to me so cordial a reception from the Bishop of London.

It was fortunate that the Bishop of London was Dr. Temple, an eminent scholar, kindly disposed toward the people of the United States, and a man

thoroughly capable of understanding and respecting the deep and holy sentiment which a compliance with our desire would gratify.

It was fortunate, too, that Bishop Temple, who thought he must have the approbation of the archbishop before his action, when the time came had himself become Archbishop of Canterbury and Primate of all England.

It was fortunate that Dr. Creighton had succeeded to the see of London. He is, himself, as I have just said, an eminent historical scholar. He has many friends in America. He was the delegate of Emmanuel, John Harvard's College, at the great Harvard centennial celebration in 1886. He received the degree of doctor of laws at Harvard and is a member of the Massachusetts Historical Society. He had, as I have said, entertained President Eliot as his guest in England.

It was fortunate, too, that the application came in a time of cordial good-will between the two countries, when the desire of John Adams and the longing of George III. have their ample and complete fulfilment. This token of the good-will of England reached Boston on the eve of the birthday of the illustrious sovereign, who is not more venerated and beloved by her own subjects than by the kindred people across the sea.

It comes to us at the time of the rejoicing of the

THE ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY.

English people at the sixtieth anniversary of a reign more crowded with benefit to humanity than any other known in the annals of the race. Upon the power of England, the sceptre, the trident, the lion, the army and the fleet, the monster ships of war, the all-shattering guns, the American people are strong enough now to look with an entire indifference. We encounter her commerce and her manufacture in the spirit of a generous emulation. The inheritance from which England has gained these things is ours also. We, too, are of the Saxon strain.

> In our halls is hung
> Armory of the invincible knights of old.

Our temple covers a continent, and its porches are upon both the seas. Our fathers knew the secret to lay, in Christian liberty and law, the foundations of empire. Our young men are not ashamed, if need be, to speak with the enemy in the gate.

But to the illustrious lady, type of gentlest womanhood, model of mother and wife and friend, who came at eighteen to the throne of George IV. and William; of purer eyes than to behold iniquity; the maiden presence before which everything unholy shrank; the sovereign who, during her long reign, "ever knew the people that she ruled;" the royal nature that disdained to strike at her kingdom's rival in the hour of our sorest need; the heart which even in

the bosom of a queen beat with sympathy for the cause of constitutional liberty; who, herself not unacquainted with grief, laid on the coffin of our dead Garfield the wreath fragrant with a sister's sympathy, — to her our republican manhood does not disdain to bend.

> The eagle, lord of land and sea,
> Will stoop to pay her fealty.

But I am afraid this application might have had the fate of its predecessors but for our special good fortune in the fact that Mr. Bayard was our ambassador at the Court of St. James. He had been, as I said in the beginning, the ambassador not so much of the diplomacy as of the good-will of the American people. Before his powerful influence every obstacle gave way. It was almost impossible for Englishmen to refuse a request like this, made by him, and in which his own sympathies were so profoundly enlisted.

You are entitled, sir, to the gratitude of Massachusetts, to the gratitude of every lover of Massachusetts and of every lover of the country. You have succeeded where so many others have failed, and where so many others would have been likely to fail. You may be sure that our debt to you is fully understood and will not be forgotten.

The question of the permanent abiding-place of this

manuscript will be settled after it has reached the hands of His Excellency. Wherever it shall go it will be an object of reverent care. I do not think many Americans will gaze upon it without a little trembling of the lips and a little gathering of mist in the eyes, as they think of the story of suffering, of sorrow, of peril, of exile, of death and of lofty triumph which that book tells, — which the hand of the great leader and founder of America has traced on those pages.

There is nothing like it in human annals since the story of Bethlehem. These Englishmen and English women going out from their homes in beautiful Lincoln and York, wife separated from husband and mother from child in that hurried embarkation for Holland, pursued to the beach by English horsemen; the thirteen years of exile; the life at Amsterdam "in alley foul and lane obscure;" the dwelling at Leyden; the embarkation at Delfthaven; the farewell of Robinson; the terrible voyage across the Atlantic; the compact in the harbor; the landing on the rock; the dreadful first winter; the death roll of more than half the number; the days of suffering and of famine; the wakeful night, listening for the yell of wild beast and the war-whoop of the savage; the building of the State on those sure foundations which no wave or tempest has ever shaken; the breaking of the new light; the dawning of the new day; the

beginning of the new life; the enjoyment of peace with liberty, — of all these things this is the original record by the hand of our beloved father and founder. Massachusetts will preserve it until the time shall come that her children are unworthy of it; and that time shall come, — never.

ADDRESS

OF THE

Hon. THOMAS F. BAYARD.

ADDRESS OF AMBASSADOR BAYARD.

Your Excellency, Gentlemen of the two Houses of the Legislature of Massachusetts, Ladies and Gentlemen, Fellow Countrymen: The honorable and most gratifying duty with which I am charged is about to receive its final act of execution, for I have the book here, as it was placed in my hands by the Lord Bishop of London on April 29, intact then and now; and I am about to deliver it according to the provisions of the decree of the Chancellor of London, which has been read in your presence, and the receipt signed by me and registered in his court that I would obey the provisions of that decree.

I have kept my trust; I have kept the book as I received it; I shall deliver it into the hands of the representative of the people who are entitled to its custody.

And now, gentlemen, it would be superfluous for me to dwell upon the historical features of this remarkable occasion, for it has been done, as we all knew it would be done, with ability, learning, eloquence and impressiveness, by the distinguished Senator who represents you so well in the Congress of the United States.

For all that related to myself, and for every gracious word of recognition and commendation that fell from his lips in relation to the part that I have taken in the act of restoration, I am profoundly grateful. It is an additional reward, but not the reward which induced my action.

To have served your State, to have been instrumental in such an act as this, was of itself a high privilege to me. The Bradford manuscript was in the library of Fulham palace, and if, by lawful means, I could have become possessed of the volume, and have brought it here and quietly deposited it, I should have gone to my home with the great satisfaction of knowing that I had performed an act of justice, an act of right between two countries. Therefore the praise, however grateful, is additional, and I am very thankful for it.

It may not be inappropriate or unpleasing to you should I state in a very simple manner the history of my relation to the return of this book, for it all has occurred within the last twelve months.

I knew of the existence of this manuscript, and had seen the reproduction in facsimile. I knew that attempts had been made, unsuccessfully, to obtain the original book.

At that time Senator Hoar made a short visit to England, and in passing through London I was informed by him of the great interest that he, in

common with the people of this State, had in the restoration of this manuscript to the custody of the State.

We discussed the methods by which it might be accomplished, and after two or three concurrent suggestions he returned to the United States, and presently I received, under cover from the Secretary of State, — a distinguished citizen of your own State, Mr. Olney, — a formal note, suggesting rather than instructing that in an informal manner I should endeavor to have carried out the wishes of the various societies that had addressed themselves to the Bishop of London and the Archbishop of Canterbury, in order to obtain the return of this manuscript.

It necessarily had to be done informally. The strict regulations of the office I then occupied forbade my correspondence with any member of the British government except through the foreign office, unless it were informal. An old saying describes the entire case, that "When there's a will there's a way." There certainly was the will to get the book, and there certainly was also a will and a way to give the book, and that way was discovered by the legal custodians of the book itself.

At first there were suggestions of difficulty, some technical questions; and following a very safe rule, the first thought was, What is the law? and the case was submitted to the law officers of the Crown.

Then there arose the necessity of a formal act of permission.

There could be entertained no question as to the title to the manuscript in the possession of the British government. There was no authority to grant a claim, founded on adverse title, and the question arose as to the requisite form of law of a permissive rather than of a mandatory nature, in order to be authoritative with those who had charge of the document.

But, as I have said, when there was a will there was found a way. By personal correspondence and interviews with the Bishop of London, I soon discovered that he was as anxious to find the way as I was that he should find it. In March last it was finally agreed that I should employ legal counsel to present a formal petition in the Episcopal Consistorial Court of London, and there before the Chancellor to represent the strong desire of Massachusetts and her people for the return of the record of her early Governor.

Accordingly, the petition was prepared, and by my authority signed as for me by an eminent member of the bar, and it was also signed by the Bishop of London, so that there was a complete consensus. The decree was ordered, as is published in the London "Times" on March 25 last, and nothing after that remained but formalities, in which, as you are well aware, the English law is not lacking, especially in the ecclesiastical tribunals.

These formalities were carried out during my absence from London on a short visit to the Continent, and the decree which you have just heard read was duly entered on April 12 last, consigning the document to my personal custody, to be delivered by me in this city to the high official therein named, subject to those conditions which you have also heard.

Accordingly, on the 29th of April last I was summoned to the court, and there, having signed the receipt, this decree was read in my presence. Then the Bishop of London arose, and, taking the book in his hands, delivered it with a few gracious words into my custody, and here it is to-day.

The records of those proceedings will no doubt be preserved here as accompanying this book, as they are in the Episcopal Consistorial Court in London, and they tell the entire story.

But that is but part. The thing that I wish to impress upon you, and upon my fellow countrymen throughout the United States, is that this is an act of courtesy and friendship by another government — the government of what we once called our "mother country" — to the entire people of the United States.

You cannot limit it to the Governor of this Commonwealth; nor to the Legislature; nor even to the citizens of this Commonwealth. It extends in its courtesy, its kindness and comity to the entire people of the United States. From first to last there was

the ready response of courtesy and kindness to the request for the restoration of this manuscript record.

I may say to you that there has been nothing that I have sought more earnestly than to place the affairs of these two great nations in the atmosphere of mutual confidence and respect and good-will. If it be a sin to long for the honor of one's country, for the safety and strength of one's country, then I have been a great sinner, for I have striven to advance the honor and the safety and the welfare of my country, and believed it was best accomplished by treating all with justice and courtesy, and doing those things to others which we would ask to have done to ourselves.

When the Chancellor pronounced his decree in March last, he cited certain precedents to justify him in restoring this volume to Massachusetts. One precedent which powerfully controlled his decision, and which in the closing portion of his judgment he emphasizes, was an act of generous liberality upon the part of the American Library Society in Philadelphia in voluntarily returning to the British government some volumes of original manuscript of the period of James the First, which by some means not very clearly explained had found their way among the books of that institution.

Those books were received by a distinguished man, Lord Romilly, Master of the Rolls, who took occasion

to speak of the liberality and kindness which dictated the action of the Philadelphia library. Gentlemen, I am one of those who believe that a generous and kindly act is never unwise between individuals or nations.

The return of this book to you is an echo of the kindly act of your countrymen in the city of Philadelphia in 1866.

It is that, not, as Mr. Hoar has said, any influence or special effort of mine; but it is international good feeling and comity which brought about to you the pleasure and the joy of having this manuscript returned, and so it will ever be. A generous act will beget a generous act; trust and confidence will beget trust and confidence; and so it will be while the world shall last, and well will it be for the man or for the people who shall recognize this truth and act upon it.

Now, gentlemen, there is another coincidence that I may venture to point out. It is history repeating itself. More than three hundred years ago the ancestors from whom my father drew his name and blood were French Protestants, who had been compelled to flee from the religious persecutions of that day, and for the sake of conscience to find an asylum in Holland. Fifty years after they had fled and found safety in Holland, the little congregation of Independents from the English village of Scrooby, under the pastorate of John Robinson, was forced to fly, and with

difficulty found its way into the same country of the Netherlands, seeking an asylum for consciences' sake.

Time passed on. The little English colony removed, as this manuscript of William Bradford will tell you, across the Atlantic, and soon after the Huguenot family from whom I drew my name found their first settlement in what was then the New Netherlands, now New York. Both came from the same cause; both came with the same object, the same purpose, — "soul freedom," as Roger Williams well called it. Both came to found homes where they could worship God according to their own conscience and live as free men. They came to these shores, and they have found the asylum, and they have strengthened it, and it is what we see to-day, — a country of absolute religious and civil freedom, — of equal rights and toleration.

And is it not fitting that I, who have in my veins the blood of the Huguenots, should present to you and your Governor the log of the English emigrants, who left their country for the sake of religious freedom?

They are blended here, — their names, their interests. No man asks and no man has a right to ask or have ascertained by any method authorized by law what is the conscientious religious tenet or opinion of any man, of any citizen, as a prerequisite for holding an office of trust or power in the United States.

I think it well on this occasion to make, as I am sure you are making, acknowledgment to that heroic little country, the Lowlands as they call it, the Netherlands, — the country without one single feature of military defence except the brave hearts of the men who live in it and defend it.

Holland was the anvil upon which religious and civil liberty was beaten out in Europe at a time when the clang was scarcely heard anywhere else. We can never forget our historical debt to that country and to those people. Puritan, Independent, Huguenot, whoever he may be, forced to flee for conscience's sake, will not forget that in the Netherlands there was found in his time of need the asylum where conscience, property and person might be secure.

And now my task is done. I am deeply grateful for the part that I have been enabled to take in this act of just and natural restitution. In Massachusetts or out of Massachusetts there is no one more willing than I to assist this work; and here, sir [addressing Governor Wolcott], I fulfil my trust in placing in your hands the manuscript.

To you, as the honored representative of the people of this Commonwealth, I commit this book, in pursuance of my obligations, gladly undertaken under the decree of the Episcopal Consistorial Court of London.

ADDRESS

OF

His Excellency ROGER WOLCOTT.

ADDRESS OF GOVERNOR WOLCOTT.

On receiving the volume, Governor Wolcott, addressing Mr. Bayard, spoke as follows: I thank you, sir, for the diligent and faithful manner in which you have executed the honorable trust imposed upon you by the decree of the Consistorial and Episcopal Court of London, a copy of which you have now placed in my hands. It was fitting that one of your high distinction should be selected to perform so dignified an office.

The gracious act of international courtesy which is now completed will not fail of grateful appreciation by the people of this Commonwealth and of the nation. It is honorable alike to those who hesitated not to prefer the request and to those whose generous liberality has prompted compliance with it. It may be that the story of the departure of this precious relic from our shores may never in its every detail be revealed; but the story of its return will be read of all men, and will become a part of the history of the Commonwealth. There are places and objects so intimately associated with the world's greatest men or with mighty deeds that the soul of him who gazes upon them is lost in a sense of reverent awe, as it

listens to the voice that speaks from the past, in words like those which came from the burning bush, "Put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest is holy ground."

On the sloping hillside of Plymouth, that bathes its feet in the waters of the Atlantic, such a voice is breathed by the brooding genius of the place, and the ear must be dull that fails to catch the whispered words. For here not alone did godly men and women suffer greatly for a great cause, but their noble purpose was not doomed to defeat, but was carried to perfect victory. They stablished what they planned. Their feeble plantation became the birthplace of religious liberty, the cradle of a free Commonwealth. To them a mighty nation owns its debt. Nay, they have made the civilized world their debtor. In the varied tapestry which pictures our national life, the richest spots are those where gleam the golden threads of conscience, courage and faith, set in the web by that little band. May God in his mercy grant that the moral impulse which founded this nation may never cease to control its destiny; that no act of any future generation may put in peril the fundamental principles on which it is based, — of equal rights in a free state, equal privileges in a free church and equal opportunities in a free school.

In this precious volume which I hold in my hands — the gift of England to the Commonwealth of Mas-

sachusetts — is told the noble, simple story "of Plimoth Plantation." In the midst of suffering and privation and anxiety the pious hand of William Bradford here set down in ample detail the history of the enterprise from its inception to the year 1647. From him we may learn "that all great and honourable actions are accompanied with great difficulties, and must be both enterprised and overcome with answerable courages."

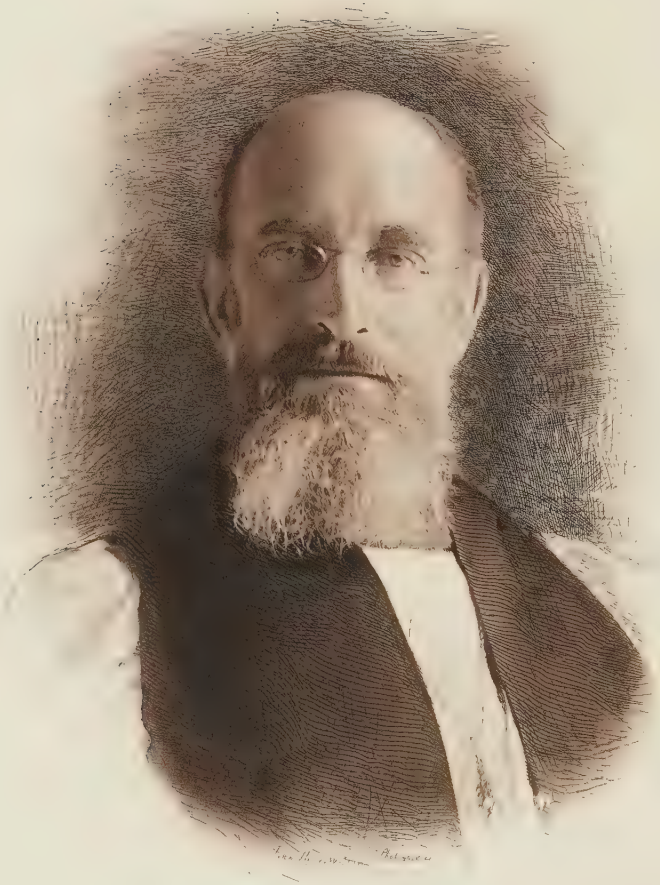
The sadness and pathos which some might read into the narrative are to me lost in victory. The triumph of a noble cause even at a great price is theme for rejoicing, not for sorrow, and the story here told is one of triumphant achievement, and not of defeat.

As the official representative of the Commonwealth, I receive it, sir, at your hands. I pledge the faith of the Commonwealth that for all time it shall be guarded in accordance with the terms of the decree under which it is delivered into her possession as one of her chiefest treasures. I express the thanks of the Commonwealth for the priceless gift. And I venture the prophecy that for countless years to come and to untold thousands these mute pages shall eloquently speak of high resolve, great suffering and heroic endurance made possible by an absolute faith in the over-ruling providence of Almighty God.

ACKNOWLEDGMENT

BY THE

BISHOP OF LONDON.



THE BISHOP OF LONDON.

(Copy)

Fulham Palace, S. W.
Oct. 16, 1897.

Dear Sir,

I would ask you to express to the Convention of the two branches of the General Court of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts my grateful thanks for the copy of their resolution of May 26, which was presented to me by Mr. Adams.*

I consider it a great privilege to have been associated with an act of courtesy, which was also an act of justice, in restoring to its proper place a document which is so important in the records of your illustrious Commonwealth.

I am
Yours faithfully,

M. LONDON.

H. D. Coolidge, Esq.
Clerk of the Convention.

---

* The Hon. Charles Francis Adams.

Of Plimoth Plantation.

Of plimoth plantation

And first of ye occasion, and inducments ther vnto; the which that I may truly vnfould, I must begine at ye very roote & rise of ye same. The which I shall endeuer to manefest in a plaine stile; with singuler regard vnto ye simple trueth in all things, at least as ~~farr~~ neare as my slender iudgmente can attaine the same.

1. Chapter

It is well knowne vnto ye godly, and iudicious; how euer since ye first breaking out of ye lighte of ye gospell, in our Honourable nation of England (which was ye first of nations, whom ye Lord adorned ther with, after ye grosse darknes of popery which had couered, & ouerspred ye christian worlde) what warrs, & oppositions euer since Satan hath raised, maintained, and continued against the saincts, from time, to time, in one sorte, or other. Some times by bloody death & cruell torments; other whiles imprisonments, banishments, & other hard vsages: As being loath his kingdom should goe downe, the trueth preuaile; and ye churches of god reuerte to their anciente puritie; and recouer their primitiue order, libertie, & lentie. But when he could not prevaile by these means, against the maine trueths of ye gospell; but that they began to take rooting in many places; being watered with ye bloud of ye martires, and blessed from heauen with a gracious encrease. He then began to take him to his anciente stratagemes, vsed of old against the first christians. That when by ye bloody, & barbarous persecutions of ye Heathen Emperours, he could not stoppe, & subuerte the course of ye gospell; but that it spredily ouerspred, with a wounderfull celeritie, the then best known parts of ye world. He then begane to sow errours, heresies, and wounderfull dissentions amongst ye professours them selues (working vpon their pride, & ambition, with other corrupte passions, incidente to all mortall men; yea to ye saints them selues in some measure) by which wofull effects followed; as not only bitter contentions, & hartburnings, schismes, with other horrible confusions. But Satan tooke occasion & aduantage ther by to foyst in a number of vile ceremoneys, with many vnprofitable Cannons, & decrees which have since been as snares, to many poore, & peacable soules, euen to this day. So as in ye anciente times, the persecuti-

Of Plimoth Plantation.

And first of y^e occasion and indũsments ther unto; the which that I may truly unfould, I must begine at y^e very roote & rise of y^e same. The which I shall endevor to manefest in a plaine stile, with singuler regard unto y^e simple trueth in all things, at least as near as my slender judgmente can attaine the same.

1. Chapter.

It is well knowne unto y^e godly and judicious, how ever since y^e first breaking out of y^e lighte of y^e gospell in our Honourable Nation of England, (which was y^e first of nations whom y^e Lord adorned ther with, affter y^t grosse darknes of popery which had covered & overspred y^e Christian worled,) what warrs & opposissions ever since, Satan hath raised, maintained, and continued against the Saincts, from time to time, in one sorte or other. Some times by bloody death and cruell torments; other whiles imprisonments, banishments, & other hard usages; as being loath his kingdom should goe downe, the trueth prevaile, and y^e churches of God reverte to their anciente puritie, and recover their primative order, libertie, & bewtie. But when he could not

prevaile by these means, against the maine trueths of y^e^ gospell, but that they began to take rootting in many places, being watered with y^e^ blooud of y^e^ martires, and blessed from heaven with a gracious encrease; He then begane to take him to his anciente strategemes, used of old against the first Christians. That when by y^e^ bloody & barbarous persecutions of y^e^ Heathen Emperours, he could not stoppe & subuerte the course of y^e^ gospell, but that it speedily overspred with a wounderfull celeritie the then best known parts of y^e^ world, He then begane to sow errours, heresies, and wounderfull dissentions amongst y^e^ professours them selves, (working upon their pride & ambition, with other corrupte passions incidente to all mortall men, yea to y^e^ saints them selves in some measure,) by which wofull effects followed; as not only bitter contentions, & hartburnings, schismes, with other horrible confusions, but Satan tooke occasion & advantage therby to foyst in a number of vile ceremoneys, with many unproffitable cannons & decrees, which have since been as snares to many poore & peaceable souls even to this day. So as in y^e^ anciente times, the persecutions [2] by y^e^ heathen & their Emperours, was not greater then of the Christians one against other; the Arians & other their complices against y^e^ orthodoxe & true Christians. As witneseth Socrates in his 2. booke. His words are these;* *The violence truly* (saith he) *was no less than*

* Lib. 2. Chap. 22.

that of ould practised towards y^e^ Christians when they were compelled & drawne to sacrifice to idoles; for many indured sundrie kinds of tormente, often rackings, & dismembering of their joynts; confiscating of ther goods; some bereaved of their native soyle; others departed this life under y^e^ hands of y^e^ tormentor; and some died in banishmēte, & never saw ther cuntrie againe, &c.

The like methode Satan hath seemed to hold in these later times, since y^e^ trueth begane to springe & spread after y^e^ great defection made by Antichrist, y^t^ man of siñe.

For to let pass y^e^ infinite examples in sundrie nations and severall places of y^e^ world, and instance in our owne, when as y^t^ old serpente could not prevaile by those firie flames & other his cruell tragedies, which he * by his instruments put in ure every wher in y^e^ days of queene Mary & before, he then begane an other kind of warre, & went more closly to worke; not only to oppuggen, but even to ruinate & destroy y^e^ kingdom of Christ, by more secrete & subtile means, by kindling y^e^ flames of contention and sowing y^e^ seeds of discorde & bitter enmitie amongst y^e^ proffessors & seeming reformed them selves. For when he could not prevaile by y^e^ former means against y^e^ principall doctrins of faith, he bente his force against ye holy discipline & outward regimente of y^e^ kingdom of

* In the text, parentheses are used frequently, apparently in place of commas. For this reason, many are omitted in the reprint.

Christ, by which those holy doctrines should be conserved, & true pietie maintained amongest the saints & people of God.

Mr. Foxe recordeth how y^t^ besids those worthy martires & confessors which were burned in queene Marys days & otherwise tormented,* *many (both studients & others) fled out of y^e^ land, to y^e^ number of* 800. *And became severall congregations. At Wesell, Frankford, Bassill, Emden, Markpurge, Strausborugh, & Geneva, &c.* Amongst whom (but especialy those at Frankford) begane y^t^ bitter warr of contention & persecutiō aboute y^e^ ceremonies, & servise-booke, and other popish and antichristian stuffe, the plague of England to this day, which are like y^e^ highplases in Israell, w^ch^ the prophets cried out against, & were their ruine; [3] which y^e^ better parte sought, according to y^e^ puritie of y^e^ gospell, to roote out and utterly to abandon. And the other parte (under veiled pretences) for their ouwn ends & advancments, sought as stifly to continue, maintaine, & defend. As appeareth by y^e^ discourse therof published in printe, An^o^: 1575; a booke y^t^ deserves better to be knowne and considred.

The one side laboured to have y^e^ right worship of God & discipline of Christ established in y^e^ church, according to y^e^ simplicitie of y^e^ gospell, without the mixture of mens inventions, and to have & to be

* Acts & Mon: pag. 1587. editi: 2.

ruled by y^e^ laws of Gods word, dispensed in those offices, & by those officers of Pastors, Teachers, & Elders, &c. according to y^e^ Scripturs. The other partie, though under many colours & pretences, endevored to have y^e^ episcopall dignitie (affter y^e^ popish mañer) with their large power & jurisdiction still retained; with all those courts, cannons, & ceremonies, togeather with all such livings, revenues, & subordinate officers, with other such means as formerly upheld their antichristian greatnes, and enabled them with lordly & tyranous power to persecute y^e^ poore servants of God. This contention was so great, as neither y^e^ honour of God, the commone persecution, nor y^e^ mediation of Mr. Calvin & other worthies of y^e^ Lord in those places, could prevaile with those thus episcopally minded, but they proceeded by all means to disturbe y^e^ peace of this poor persecuted church, even so farr as to charge (very unjustly, & ungodlily, yet prelatelike) some of their cheefe opposers, with rebellion & hightreason against y^e^ Emperour, & other such crimes.

And this contẽtion dyed not with queene Mary, nor was left beyonde y^e^ seas, but at her death these people returning into England under gracious queene Elizabeth, many of them being preferred to bishopricks & other promotions, according to their aimes and desires, that inveterate hatered against y^e^ holy discipline of Christ in his church hath continued to

this day. In somuch that for fear [4] it should preveile, all plotts & devices have been used to keepe it out, incensing y^e^ queene & state against it as dangerous for y^e^ com̄on wealth; and that it was most needfull y^t^ y^e^ fundamentall poynts of Religion should be preached in those ignorante & superstitious times; and to wiñe y^e^ weake & ignorante, they might retaine diverse harmles ceremoneis; and though it were to be wished y^t^ diverse things were reformed, yet this was not a season for it. And many the like, to stop y^e^ mouthes of y^e^ more godly, to bring them over to yeeld to one ceremoney after another, and one corruption after another; by these wyles begyleing some & corrupting others till at length they begane to persecute all y^e^ zealous professors in y^e^ land (though they knew little what this discipline mente) both by word & deed, if they would not submitte to their ceremonies, & become slaves to them & their popish trash, which have no ground in y^e^ word of God, but are relikes of y^t^ man of sine. And the more y^e^ light of y^e^ gospell grew, y^e^ more y^ey^ urged their subscriptions to these corruptions. So as (notwithstanding all their former pretences & fair colures) they whose eyes God had not justly blinded might easily see wherto these things tended. And to cast contempte the more upon y^e^ sincere servants of God, they opprobriously & most injuriously gave unto, & imposed upon them, that name of Puritans, which [it] is said

the Novatians out of prid did assume & take unto themselves.* And lamentable it is to see y^e^ effects which have followed. Religion hath been disgraced, the godly greeved, afflicted, persecuted, and many exiled, sundrie have lost their lives in prisones & otherways. On the other hand, sin hath been countenanced, ignorance, profannes, & atheisme increased, & the papists encouraged to hope againe for a day.

This made that holy man Mr. Perkins † crie out in his exhortation to repentance, upon Zeph. 2. *Religion* (saith he) *hath been amongst us this* 35. *years; but the more it is published, the more it is contemned & reproached of many, &c. Thus not prophanes nor wickednes, but Religion it selfe is a byword, a moking-stock, & a matter of reproach; so that in England at this day the man or woman y^t^ begines to profes Religion, & to serve God, must resolve with him selfe to sustaine* [5] *mocks & injueries even as though he lived amongst y^e^ enimies of Religion.* And this com̄one experience hath confirmed & made too apparente.

A late observation, as it were by the way, worthy to be Noted. ‡

Full litle did I thinke, y^t^ the downfall of y^e^ Bishops, with their courts, cannons, & ceremonies, &c. had been so neare, when I first begane these scribled writings (which was aboute y^e^ year 1630, and so peeced up at times of leasure after-

* Ens: lib: 6. Chap. 42. † Pag. 421

‡ A note of the author at this place, written subsequent to this portion of the narrative, on the reverse pages of his History.

ward), or that I should have lived to have seene or heard of y^e^ same; but it is y^e^ Lords doing, and ought to be marvelous in our eyes! Every plante which mine heavenly father hath not planted (saith our Saviour) shall be rooted up. Mat: 15. 13.* I have snared the, and thou art taken, O Babell (Bishops), and thou wast not aware; thou art found, and also caught, because thou hast striven against the Lord. Jer. 50. 24. But will they needs strive against y^e^ truth, against y^e^ servants of God; what, & against the Lord him selfe? Doe they provoke the Lord to anger? Are they stronger than he? 1. Cor: 10. 22. No, no, they have mete with their match. Behold, I come unto y^e^, O proud man, saith the Lord God of hosts; for thy day is come, even the time that I will visite the. Jer: 50. 31. May not the people of God now say (and these pore people among y^e^ rest), The Lord hath brought forth our righteousnes; come, let us declare in Sion the work of the Lord our God. Jer: 51. 10. Let all flesh be still before the Lord; for he is raised up out of his holy place. Zach: 2. 13.

In this case, these poore people may say (among y^e^ thousands of Israll), *When the Lord brougt againe the captivite of Zion, we were like them that dreame. Psa:* 126. 1. *The Lord hath done greate things for us, wherof we rejoyce. v.* 3. *They that sow in teares, shall reap in joye. They wente weeping, and carried precious seede, but they shall returne with joye, and bring their sheaves. v.* 5, 6.

Doe you not now see y^e^ fruits of your labours, O all yee servants of y^e^ Lord that have suffered for his truth, and have been faithfull witneses of y^e^ same, and yee litle handfull amongst y^e^ rest, y^e^ least amongest y^e^ thousands of Israll? You have not only had a seede time, but many of you have seene y^e^ joyefull harvest; should you not then rejoyse, yea,

* All these and subsequent passages are quoted from the Geneva version of the Bible.

and againe rejoyce, and say Hallelu-iah, salvation, and glorie, and honour, and power, be to y^e^ Lord our God; for true and righteous are his judgments. Rev. 19. 1, 2.

But thou wilte aske what is y^e^ mater? What is done? Why, art thou a stranger in Israll, that thou shouldest not know what is done? Are not those Jebusites overcome that have vexed the people of Israll so long, even holding Jerusalem till Davids days, and been as thorns in their sids, so many ages; and now begane to scorne that any David should meadle with them; they begane to fortifie their tower, as that of the old Babelonians; but those proud Anakimes are throwne downe, and their glory laid in y^e^ dust. The tiranous bishops are ejected, their courts dissolved, their cannons forceless, their servise casheired, their ceremonies uselese and despised; their plots for popery prevented, and all their superstitions discarded & returned to Roome from whence they came, and y^e^ monuments of idolatrie rooted out of y^e^ land. And the proud and profane suporters, and cruell defenders of these (as bloody papists & wicked athists, and their malignante consorts) marvelously over throwne. And are not these greate things? Who can deney it?

But who hath done it? Who, even he that siteth on y^e^ white horse, who is caled faithfull, & true, and judgeth and fighteth righteously, Rev: 19. 11. whose garments are dipte in blood, and his name was caled the word of God, v. 13. for he shall rule them with a rode of iron; for it is he that treadeth the winepress of the feircenes and wrath of God almighty. And he hath upon his garmente, and upon his thigh, a name writen, The King of Kings, and Lord of Lords. v. 15, 16.

Hallelu-iah.

Anno Dom: 1646.

But that I may come more near my intendmente; when as by the travell & diligence of some godly & zealous preachers, & Gods blessing on their labours, as

in other places of y^e^ land, so in y^e^ North parts, many became inlightened by y^e^ word of God, and had their ignorance & sins discovered unto them, and begane by his grace to reforme their lives, and make conscience of their wayes, the worke of God was no sooner manifest in them, but presently they were both scoffed and scorned by y^e^ prophane multitude, and y^e^ ministers urged with y^e^ yoak of subscription, or els must be silenced; and y^e^ poore people were so vexed with apparators, & pursuants, & y^e^ comissarie courts, as truly their affliction was not smale; which, notwithstanding, they bore sundrie years with much patience, till they were occasioned (by y^e^ continuance & encrease of these troubls, and other means which y^e^ Lord raised up in those days) to see further into things by the light of y^e^ word of God. How not only these base and beggerly ceremonies were unlawfull, but also that y^e^ lordly & tiranous power of y^e^ prelats ought not to be submitted unto; which thus, contrary to the freedome of the gospell, would load & burden mens consciences, and by their compulsive power make a prophane mixture of persons & things in y^e^ worship of God. And that their offices & calings, courts & cannons, &c. were unlawfull and antichristian; being such as have no warrante in y^e^ word of God; but the same y^t^ were used in poperie, & still retained. Of which a famous author thus writeth in his Dutch com̄taries.* At y^e^ coming of

* Em: meter: lib: 25. col. 119.

king James into England; *The new king* (saith he) *found their established y^e^ reformed religion, according to y^e^ reformed religion of king Edward y^e^* 6. *Retaining, or keeping still y^e^ spirituall state of y^e^ Bishops, &c. after y^e^ ould maner, much varying & differing from y^e^ reformed churches in Scotland, France, & y^e^ Neatherlands, Embden, Geneva, &c. whose reformation is cut, or shapen much nerer y^e^ first Christian churches, as it was used in y^e^ Apostles times.**

[6] So many therfore of these proffessors as saw y^e^ evill of these things, in thes parts, and whose harts y^e^ Lord had touched w^th^ heavenly zeale for his trueth, they shooke of this yoake of antichristian bondage, and as y^e^ Lords free people, joyned them selves (by a covenant of the Lord) into a church estate, in y^e^ felowship of y^e^ gospell, to walke in all his wayes, made known, or to be made known unto them, according to their best endeavours, whatsoever it should cost them, the Lord assisting them. And that it cost them something this ensewing historie will declare.

These people became 2. distincte bodys or churches, & in regarde of distance of place did congregate severally; for they were of sundrie townes & vilages, some in Notingamshire, some of Lincollinshire, and some of Yorkshire, wher they border nearest togeather. In one

* The reformed churches shapen much neerer y^e^ primitive patterne *then England*, for they cashered y^e^ Bishops w^ith^ al their courts, cannons, and ceremoneis, at the first; and left them amongst y^e^ popish tr. . to c̄h w^ch^ they pertained. (The last word in the note is uncertain in the MS.)

of these churches (besids others of note) was Mr. John Smith, a man of able gifts, & a good preacher, who afterwards was chosen their pastor. But these afterwards falling into some errours in y^e^ Low Countries, ther (for y^e^ most part) buried them selves, & their names.

But in this other church (w^ch^ must be y^e^ subjecte of our discourse) besids other worthy men, was M^r^. Richard Clifton, a grave & reverēd preacher, who by his paines and dilligens had done much good, and under God had ben a means of y^e^ conversion of many. And also that famous and worthy man M^r^. John Robinson, who afterwards was their pastor for many years, till y^e^ Lord tooke him away by death. Also M^r^. William Brewster a reverent man, who afterwards was chosen an elder of y^e^ church and lived with them till old age.

But after these things they could not long continue in any peaceable condition, but were hunted & persecuted on every side, so as their former afflictions were but as flea-bitings in comparison of these which now came upon them. For some were taken & clapt up in prison, others had their houses besett & watcht night and day, & hardly escaped their hands; and y^e^ most were faine to flie & leave their howses & habitations, and the means of their livelehood. Yet these & many other sharper things which affterward befell them, were no other then they looked for, and therfore were y^e^ better prepared to bear them by y^e^ assistance of Gods

grace & spirite. Yet seeing them selves thus molested, [7] and that ther was no hope of their continuance ther, by a joynte consente they resolved to goe into y^e^ Low-Countries, wher they heard was freedome of Religion for all men; as also how sundrie from London, & other parts of y^e^ land, had been exiled and persecuted for y^e^ same cause, & were gone thither, and lived at Amsterdam, & in other places of y^e^ land. So affter they had continued togeither aboute a year, and kept their meetings every Saboth in one place or other, exercising the worship of God amongst them selves, notwithstanding all y^e^ dilligence & malice of their adverssaries, they seeing they could no longer continue in y^t^ condition, they resolved to get over into Hollād as they could; which was in y^e^ year 1607. & 1608.; of which more at large in y^e^ next chap.

2. Chap.

Of their departure into Holland and their troubls ther aboute, with some of y^e^ many difficulties they found and mete withall.

An^o^. 1608.

Being thus constrained to leave their native soyle and countrie, their lands & livings, and all their freinds & famillier acquaintance, it was much, and thought marvelous by many. But to goe into a countrie they knew not (but by hearsay), wher they must learne a new language, and get their livings they

knew not how, it being a dear place, & subjecte to y^e^ misseries of warr, it was by many thought an adventure almost desperate, a case intolerable, & a misseric worse then death. Espetially seeing they were not aquainted with trads nor traffique, (by which y^t^ countrie doth subsiste,) but had only been used to a plaine countrie life, & y^e^ inocente trade of husbandrey. But these things did not dismay them (though they did some times trouble them) for their desires were sett on y^e^ ways of God, & to injoye his ordinances; but they rested on his providence, & knew whom they had beleeved. Yet [8] this was not all, for though they could not stay, yet were y^e^ not suffered to goe, but y^e^ ports & havens were shut against them, so as they were faine to seeke secrete means of conveance, & to bribe & fee y^e^ mariners, & give exterordinarie rates for their passages. And yet were they often times betrayed (many of them), and both they & their goods intercepted & surprised, and therby put to great trouble & charge, of which I will give an instance or tow, & omitte the rest.

Ther was a large companie of them purposed to get passage at Boston in Lincoln-shire, and for that end had hired a shipe wholy to them selves, & made agreement with the maister to be ready at a certaine day, and take them and their goods in, at a conveniente place, wher they accordingly would all attende in readines. So after long waiting, & large

expences, though he kepte not day with them, yet he came at length & tooke them in, in y^e^ night. But when he had them & their goods abord, he betrayed them, haveing before hand complotted with y^e^ serchers & other officers so to doe; who tooke them, and put them into open boats, & ther rifled & ransaked them, searching them to their shirts for money, yea even y^e^ women furder then became modestie; and then caried them back into y^e^ towne, & made them a spectackle & wonder to y^e^ multitude, which came flocking on all sids to behould them. Being thus first, by the chatchpoule officers, rifled, & stripte of their money, books, and much other goods, they were presented to y^e^ magestrates, and messengers sente to informe y^e^ lords of y^e^ Counsell of them; and so they were comited to ward. Indeed y^e^ magestrats used them courteously, and shewed them what favour they could; but could not deliver them, till order came from y^e^ Counsell-table. But y^e^ issue was that after a months imprisonmente, y^e^ greatest parte were dismiste, & sent to y^e^ places from whence they came; but 7. of y^e^ principall were still kept in prison, and bound over to y^e^ Assises.

The nexte spring after, ther was another attempte made by some of these & others, to get over at an other place. And it so fell out, that they light of a Dutchman at Hull, having a ship of his owne belonging to Zealand; they made agreemente with him, and

acquainted [9] him with their condition, hoping to find more faithfullnes in him, then in y^e^ former of their owne nation. He bad them not fear, for he would doe well enough. He was by appointment to take them in betweene Grimsbe & Hull, wher was a large co̅mone a good way distante from any towne. Now aganst the prefixed time, the women & children, with y^e^ goods, were sent to y^e^ place in a small barke, which they had hired for y^t^ end; and y^e^ men were to meete them by land. But it so fell out, that they were ther a day before y^e^ shipe came, & y^e^ sea being rough, and y^e^ women very sicke, prevailed with y^e^ seamen to put into a creeke hardby, wher they lay on ground at lowwater. The nexte morning y^e^ shipe came, but they were fast, & could not stir till aboute noone. In y^e^ mean time, y^e^ shipe maister, perceiveing how y^e^ matter was, sente his boate to be getting y^e^ men abord whom he saw ready, walking aboute y^e^ shore. But after y^e^ first boat full was gott abord, & she was ready to goe for more, the m^r^ espied a greate company, both horse & foote, with bills, & gunes, & other weapons; for y^e^ countrie was raised to take them. Y^e^ Dutch-man seeing y^t^, swore his countries oath, "sacremente," and having y^e^ wind faire, waiged his Ancor, hoysed sayles, & away. But y^e^ poore men which were gott abord, were in great distress for their wives and children, which they saw thus to be taken, and were left destitute of their helps; and

them selves also, not having a cloath to shifte them with, more then they had on their baks, & some scarce a peney aboute them, all they had being abord y^e^ barke. It drew tears from their eyes, and any thing they had they would have given to have been a shore againe; but all in vaine, ther was no remedy, they must thus sadly part. And afterward endured a fearfull storme at sea, being 14. days or more before y^ey^ arived at their porte, in 7. wherof they neither saw son, moone, nor stars, & were driven near y^e^ coast of Norway; the mariners them selves often despairing of life; and once with shriks & cries gave over all, as if y^e^ ship had been foundred in y^e^ sea, & they sinking without recoverie. But when mans hope & helpe wholy failed, y^e^ Lords power & mercie appeared in ther recoverie; for y^e^ ship rose againe, & gave y^e^ mariners courage againe to manage her. And if modestie woud suffer me, I might declare with what fervente [10] prayres they cried unto y^e^ Lord in this great distres, (espetialy some of them,) even without any great distraction, when y^e^ water rane into their mouthes & ears; & the mariners cried out, We sinke, we sinke; they cried (if not with mirakelous, yet with a great hight or degree of devine faith), Yet Lord thou canst save, yet Lord thou canst save; with shuch other expressions as I will forbeare. Upon which y^e^ ship did not only recover, but shortly after y^e^ violence of y^e^ storme be-

gane to abate, and y^e^ Lord filed their afflicted minds with shuch comforts as every one cañot understand, and in y^e^ end brought them to their desired Haven, wher y^e^ people came flockeing admiring their deliverance, the storme having ben so longe & sore, in which much hurt had been don, as y^e^ masters freinds related unto him in their congrattulations.

But to returne to y^e^ others wher we left. The rest of y^e^ men y^t^ were in greatest danger, made shift to escape away before y^e^ troope could surprise them; those only staying y^t^ best might, to be assistante unto y^e^ women. But pitifull it was to see y^e^ heavie case of these poore women in this distress; what weeping & crying on every side, some for their husbands, that were caried away in y^e^ ship as is before related; others not knowing what should become of them, & their litle ones; others againe melted in teares, seeing their poore litle ones hanging aboute them, crying for feare, and quaking with could. Being thus aprehended, they were hurried from one place to another, and from one justice to another, till in y^e^ ende they knew not what to doe with them; for to imprison so many women & innocent children for no other cause (many of them) but that they must goe with their husbands, semed to be unreasonable and all would crie out of them; and to send them home againe was as difficult, for they aledged, as y^e^ trueth was, they had no homes to goe to, for they had either sould, or other-

wise disposed of their houses & livings. To be shorte, after they had been thus turmolyed a good while, and conveyed from one constable to another, they were glad to be ridd of them in y^e^ end upon any termes; for all were wearied & tired with them. Though in y^e^ mean time they (poore soules) indured miserie enough; and thus in y^e^ end necessitie forste a way for them.

But y^t^ I be not tedious in these things, I will omitte y^e^ rest, though I might relate many other notable passages and troubles which they endured & underwente in these their wanderings & travells both at land & sea; but I hast to [11] other things. Yet I may not omitte y^e^ fruite that came hearby, for by these so publick troubls, in so many eminente places, their cause became famouss, & occasioned many to looke into y^e^ same; and their godly cariage & Christian behaviour was such as left a deep impression in the minds of many. And though some few shrunk at these first conflicts & sharp beginings, (as it was no marvell,) yet many more came on with fresh courage, & greatly animated others. And in y^e^ end, notwithstanding all these stormes of oppossition, they all gatt over at length, some at one time & some at an other, and some in one place & some in an other, and mette togeather againe according to their desires, with no small rejoycing.

Memorial Branch

The 3. Chap.

Of their setling in Holand, & their maner of living, & entertainmente ther.

Being now come into y^e^ Low Countries, they saw many goodly & fortified cities, strongly walled and garded with troopes of armed men. Also they heard a strange & uncouth language, and beheld y^e^ differente mañers & customes of y^e^ people, with their strange fashons and attires; all so farre differing from y^t^ of their plaine countrie villages (wherin they were bred, & had so longe lived) as it seemed they were come into a new world. But these were not y^e^ things they much looked on, or long tooke up their thoughts; for they had other work in hand, & an other kind of warr to wage & maintaine. For though they saw faire & bewtifull cities, flowing with abundance of all sorts of welth & riches, yet it was not longe before they saw the grim̃e & grisly face of povertie coming upon them like an armed man, with whom they must bukle & incounter, and from whom they could not flye; but they were armed with faith & patience against him, and all his encounters; and though they were sometimes foyled, yet by Gods assistance they prevailed and got y^e^ victorie.

Now when M^r^. Robinson, M^r^. Brewster, & other principall members were come over, (for they were of y^e^

last, & stayed to help y^e^ weakest over before them,) such things were [12] thought on as were necessarie for their setling and best ordering of y^e^ church affairs. And when they had lived at Amsterdam aboute a year, M^r^. Robinson, their pastor, and some others of best discerning, seeing how M^r^. John Smith and his companie was allready fallen in to contention with y^e^ church y^t^ was ther before them, & no means they could use would doe any good to cure y^e^ same, and also that y^e^ flames of contention were like to breake out in y^t^ anciente church it selfe (as affterwards lamentably came to pass); which things they prudently foreseeing, thought it was best to remove, before they were any way engaged with y^e^ same; though they well knew it would be much to y^e^ prejudice of their outward estats, both at presente & in licklyhood in y^e^ future; as indeed it proved to be.

Their remoovall to Leyden.

For these & some other reasons they removed to Leyden, a fair & bewtifull citie, and of a sweete situation, but made more famous by y^e^ universitie wherwith it is adorned, in which of late had been so many learned men. But wanting that traffike by sea which Amsterdam injoyes, it was not so beneficiall for their outward means of living & estats. But being now hear pitchet they fell to such trads & imployments as they best could; valewing peace & their spirituall comforte above

any other riches whatsoever. And at lenght they came to raise a competente & comforteable living, but with hard and continuall labor.

Being thus setled (after many difficulties) they continued many years in a comfortable condition, injoying much sweete & delightefull societie & spirituall comforte togeather in y^e^ wayes of God, under y^e^ able ministrie, and prudente governmente of M^r^. John Robinson, & M^r^. William Brewster, who was an assistante unto him in y^e^ place of an Elder, unto which he was now called & chosen by the church. So as they grew in knowledge & other gifts & graces of y^e^ spirite of God, & lived togeather in peace, & love, and holines; and many came unto them from diverse parts of England, so as they grew a great congregation. And if at any time any differences arose, or offences broak [13] out (as it cannot be, but some time ther will, even amongst y^e^ best of men) they were ever so mete with, and nipt in y^e^ head betims, or otherwise so well composed, as still love, peace, and communion was continued; or els y^e^ church purged of those that were incurable & incorrigible, when, after much patience used, no other means would serve, which seldom came to pass. Yea such was y^e^ mutuall love, & reciprocall respecte that this worthy man had to his flocke, and his flocke to him, that it might be said of them as it once was of y^t^ famouse Emperour Marcus Aurelious,* and y^e^ people of

* Goulden booke, &c.

Rome, that it was hard to judge wheather he delighted more in haveing shuch a people, or they in haveing such a pastor. His love was greate towards them, and his care was all ways bente for their best good, both for soule and body; for besids his singuler abilities in devine things (wherin he excelled), he was also very able to give directions in civill affaires, and to foresee dangers & inconveniences; by w^{ch} means he was very helpfull to their outward estats, & so was every way as a commone father unto them. And none did more offend him then those that were close and cleaving to them selves, and retired from y^{e} commõe good; as also such as would be stiffe & riged in matters of outward order, and invey against y^{e} evills of others, and yet be remisse in them selves, and not so carefull to express a vertuous conversation. They in like maner had ever a reverente regard unto him, & had him in precious estimation, as his worth & wisdom did deserve; and though they esteemed him highly whilst he lived & laboured amongst them, yet much more after his death, when they came to feele y^{e} wante of his help, and saw (by woefull experience) what a treasure they had lost, to y^{e} greefe of their harts, and wounding of their sowls; yea such a loss as they saw could not be repaired; for it was as hard for them to find such another leader and feeder in all respects, as for y^{e} Taborits to find another Ziska. And though they did not call themselves orphans, as the other did, after his death, yet

they had cause as much to lamente, in another regard, their present condition, and after usage. But to returne; I know not but it may be spoken to y^e^ honour of God, & without prejudice [14] to any, that such was y^e^ true pietie, y^e^ humble zeale, & fervent love, of this people (whilst they thus lived together) towards God and his waies, and y^e^ single hartednes & sinceir affection one towards another, that they came as near y^e^ primative patterne of y^e^ first churches, as any other church of these later times have done, according to their ranke & qualitie.

But seeing it is not my purpose to treat of y^e^ severall passages that befell this people whilst they thus lived in y^e^ Low Countries, (which might worthily require a large treatise of it selfe,) but to make way to shew y^e^ begining of this plantation, which is that I aime at; yet because some of their adversaries did, upon y^e^ rumore of their removall, cast out slanders against them, as if that state had been wearie of them, & had rather driven them out (as y^e^ heathen historians did faine of Moyses & y^e^ Isralits when they went out of Egipte), then y^t^ it was their owne free choyse & motion, I will therfore mention a perticuler or too to shew y^e^ contrary, and y^e^ good acceptation they had in y^e^ place wher they lived. And first though many of them weer poore, yet ther was none so poore, but if they were known to be of y^t^ congregation, the *Dutch* (either bakers or others) would

trust them in any reasonable matter when y^ey wanted money. Because they had found by experience how carfull they were to keep their word, and saw them so painfull & dilligente in their callings; yea, they would strive to gett their custome, and to imploy them above others, in their worke, for their honestie & diligence.

Againe; y^e magistrats of y^e citie, aboute y^e time of their coming away, or a litle before, in y^e publick place of justice, gave this comendable testemoney of them, in y^e reproofe of the Wallons, who were of y^e French church in y^t citie. These English, said they, have lived amongst us now this 12. years, and yet we never had any sute or accusation came against any of them; but your strifs & quarels are continuall, &c. In these times allso were y^e great troubls raised by y^e Arminians, who, as they greatly mollested y^e whole state, so this citie in particuler, in which was y^e cheefe universitie; so as ther were dayly & hote disputs in y^e schooles ther aboute; and as y^e studients & other lerned were devided in their oppinions hearin, so were y^e 2. proffessors or devinitie readers them selves; the one daly teaching for it, y^e other against it. Which grew to that pass, that few of the discipls of y^e one would hear y^e other teach. But M^r. Robinson, though he taught thrise a weeke him selfe, & write sundrie books, besids his manyfould pains otherwise, yet he went constantly [15] to hear ther readings, and heard y^e one as well as y^e other; by which

means he was so well grounded in y^e^ controversie, and saw y^e^ force of all their arguments, and knew y^e^ shifts of y^e^ adversarie, and being him selfe very able, none was fitter to buckle with them then him selfe, as appered by sundrie disputs; so as he begane to be terrible to y^e^ Arminians; which made Episcopius (y^e^ Arminian professor) to put forth his best stringth, and set forth sundrie Theses, which by publick dispute he would defend against all men. Now Poliander y^e^ other proffessor, and y^e^ cheefe preachers of y^e^ citie, desired M^r^. Robinson to dispute against him; but he was loath, being a stranger; yet the other did importune him, and tould him y^t^ such was y^e^ abilitie and nimblnes of y^e^ adversarie, that y^e^ truth would suffer if he did not help them. So as he condescended, & prepared him selfe against the time; and when y^e^ day came, the Lord did so help him to defend y^e^ truth & foyle this adversarie, as he put him to an apparent nonplus, in this great & publike audience. And y^e^ like he did a 2. or 3. time, upon such like occasions. The which as it caused many to praise God y^t^ the trueth had so famous victory, so it procured him much honour & respecte from those lerned men & others which loved y^e^ trueth. Yea, so farr were they from being weary of him & his people, or desiring their absence, as it was said by some, of no mean note, that were it not for giveing offence to y^e^ state of England, they would have preferd him otherwise if

he would, and alowd them some publike favour. Yea when ther was speech of their remoovall into these parts, sundrie of note & eminencie of y^{t} nation would have had them come under them, and for y^{t} end made them large offers. Now though I might aledg many other perticulers & examples of y^{e} like kinde, to shew y^{e} untruth & unlicklyhode of this slander, yet these shall suffice, seeing it was beleeved of few, being only raised by y^{e} malice of some, who laboured their disgrace.

The 4. Chap.

Showing y^{e} reasons & causes of their remoovall.

After they had lived in this citie about some 11. or 12. years, (which is y^{e} more observable being y^{e} whole time of y^{t} famose truce between that state & y^{e} Spaniards,) and sundrie of them were taken away by death, & many others begane to be well striken in years, the grave mistris Experience haveing taught them many things, [16] those prudent governours with sundrie of y^{e} sagest members begane both deeply to apprehend their present dangers, & wisely to foresee y^{e} future, & thinke of timly remedy. In y^{e} agitation of their thoughts, and much discours of things hear aboute, at length they began to incline to this conclusion, of remoovall to some other place. Not out of any newfanglednes, or other such like giddie humor, by which men are oftentimes transported to their great hurt & danger, but for sundrie weightie & solid

reasons; some of y^e^ cheefe of which I will hear breefly touch. And first, they saw & found by experience the hardnes of y^e^ place & countrie to be such, as few in comparison would come to them, and fewer that would bide it out, and continew with them. For many y^t^ came to them, and many more y^t^ desired to be with them, could not endure y^t^ great labor and hard fare, with other inconveniences which they underwent & were contented with. But though they loved their persons, approved their cause, and honoured their sufferings, yet they left them as it weer weeping, as Orpah did her mother in law Naomie, or as those Romans did Cato in Utica, who desired to be excused & borne with, though they could not all be Catoes. For many, though they desired to injoye y^e^ ordinances of God in their puritie, and y^e^ libertie of the gospell with them, yet, alass, they admitted of bondage, with danger of conscience, rather then to indure these hardships; yea, some preferred & chose y^e^ prisons in England, rather then this libertie in Holland, with these afflictions. But it was thought that if a better and easier place of living could be had, it would draw many, & take away these discouragments. Yea, their pastor would often say, that many of those w^o^ both wrate & preached now against them, if they were in a place wher they might have libertie and live comfortably, they would then practise as they did.

2^ly^. They saw that though y^e^ people generally bore

all these difficulties very cherfully, & with a resolute courage, being in y^e best & strength of their years, yet old age began to steale on many of them, (and their great & continuall labours, with other crosses and sorrows, hastened it before y^e time,) so as it was not only probably thought, but apparently seen, that within a few years more they would be in danger to scatter, by necessities pressing them, or sinke under their burdens, or both. And therfore according to y^e devine proverb, y^t a wise man seeth y^e plague when it cometh, & hideth him selfe, Pro. 22. 3., so they like skillfull & beaten souldiers were fearfull either to be intrapped or surrounded by their enimies, so as they should neither be able to fight nor flie; and therfor thought it better to dislodge betimes to some place of better advantage & less danger, if any such could be found. [16] Thirdly; as necessitie was a taskmaster over them, so they were forced to be such, not only to their servants, but in a sorte, to their dearest chilldren; the which as it did not a litle wound y^e tender harts of many a loving father & mother, so it produced likwise sundrie sad & sorowful effects. For many of their children, that were of best dispositions and gracious inclinations, haveing lernde to bear y^e yoake in their youth, and willing to bear parte of their parents burden, were, often times, so oppressed with their hevie labours, that though their minds were free and willing, yet their bodies bowed under y^e weight of y^e same, and became decreped in

their early youth; the vigor of nature being consumed in y^e^ very budd as it were. But that which was more lamentable, and of all sorowes most heavie to be borne, was that many of their children, by these occasions, and y^e^ great licentiousnes of youth in y^t^ countrie, and y^e^ manifold temptations of the place, were drawne away by evill examples into extravagante & dangerous courses, getting y^e^ raines off their neks, & departing from their parents. Some became souldiers, others tooke upon them farr viages by sea, and other some worse courses, tending to dissolutnes & the danger of their soules, to y^e^ great greefe of their parents and dishonour of God. So that they saw their posteritie would be in danger to degenerate & be corrupted.

Lastly, (and which was not least,) a great hope & inward zeall they had of laying some good foundation, or at least to make some way therunto, for y^e^ propagating & advancing y^e^ gospell of y^e^ kingdom of Christ in those remote parts of y^e^ world; yea, though they should be but even as stepping-stones unto others for y^e^ performing of so great a work.

These, & some other like reasons, moved them to undertake this resolution of their removall; the which they afterward prosecuted with so great difficulties, as by the sequell will appeare.

The place they had thoughts on was some of those vast & unpeopled countries of America, which are frutfull & fitt for habitation, being devoyd of all civill

inhabitants, wher ther are only salvage & brutish men, which range up and downe, litle otherwise then y^e^ wild beasts of the same. This proposition being made publike and coming to y^e^ scaning of all, it raised many variable opinions amongst men, and caused many fears & doubts amongst them selves. Some, from their reasons & hops conceived, laboured to stirr up & incourage the rest to undertake & prosecute y^e^ same; others, againe, out of their fears, objected against it, & sought to diverte from it, aledging many things, and those neither unreasonable nor unprobable; as that it was a great designe, and subjecte to many unconceivable perills & dangers; as, besids the casulties of y^e^ seas (which none can be freed from) the length of y^e^ vioage was such, as y^e^ weake bodys of women and other persons worne out with age & traville (as many of them were) could never be able to endure. And yet if they should, the miseries of y^e^ land which they should be [17] exposed unto, would be to hard to be borne; and lickly, some or all of them togeither, to consume & utterly to ruinate them. For ther they should be liable to famine, and nakednes, & y^e^ wante, in a maner, of all things. The chang of aire, diate, & drinking of water, would infecte their bodies with sore sickneses, and greevous diseases. And also those which should escape or overcome these difficulties, should yett be in continuall danger of y^e^ salvage people, who are cruell, barbarous, & most trecherous, being most furious

in their rage, and merciles wher they overcome; not being contente only to kill, & take away life, but delight to tormente men in y^e^ most bloodie mañer that may be; fleaing some alive with y^e^ shells of fishes, cutting of y^e^ members & joynts of others by peesmeale, and broiling on y^e^ coles, eate y^e^ collops of their flesh in their sight whilst they live; with other cruelties horrible to be related. And surely it could not be thought but y^e^ very hearing of these things could not but move y^e^ very bowels of men to grate within them, and make y^e^ weake to quake & tremble. It was furder objected, that it would require greater sum̃es of money to furnish such a voiage, and to fitt them with necessaries, then their consumed estats would amounte too; and yett they must as well looke to be seconded with supplies, as presently to be trāsported. Also many presidents of ill success, & lamentable misseries befalne others in the like designes, were easie to be found, and not forgotten to be aledged; besids their owne experience, in their former troubles & hardships in their removall into Holand, and how hard a thing it was for them to live in that strange place, though it was a neighbour countrie, & a civill and rich comone wealth.

It was answered, that all great & honourable actions are accompanied with great difficulties, and must be both enterprised and overcome with answerable courages. It was granted y^e^ dangers were great, but not desperate; the difficulties were many, but not invincible.

For though their were many of them likly, yet they were not cartaine; it might be sundrie of y^e^ things feared might never befale; others by providente care & y^e^ use of good means, might in a great measure be prevented; and all of them, through y^e^ help of God, by fortitude and patience, might either be borne, or overcome. True it was, that such atempts were not to be made and undertaken without good ground & reason; not rashly or lightly as many have done for curiositie or hope of gaine, &c. But their condition was not ordinarie; their ends were good & honourable; their calling lawfull, & urgente; and therfore they might expecte y^e^ blessing of God in their proceding. Yea, though they should loose their lives in this action, yet might they have comforte in the same, and their endeavors would be honourable. They lived hear but as men in exile, & in a poore condition; and as great miseries might possibly befale them in this place, for y^e^ 12. years of truce were now out, & ther was nothing but beating of drumes, and preparing for warr, the events wherof are allway uncertaine. Y^e^ Spaniard might prove as cruell as [18] the salvages of America, and y^e^ famine and pestelence as sore hear as ther, & their libertie less to looke out for remedie. After many other perticuler things answered & aledged on both sids, it was fully concluded by y^e^ major parte, to put this designe in execution, and to prosecute it by the best means they could.

The 5. Chap.

Shewing what means they used for preparation to this waightie vioag.

And first after thir humble praiers unto God for his direction & assistance, & a generall conferrence held hear aboute, they consulted what perticuler place to pitch upon, & prepare for. Some (& none of y^e^ meanest) had thoughts & were ernest for Guiana, or some of those fertill places in those hott climats; others were for some parts of Virginia, wher y^e^ English had all ready made enterance, & begining. Those for Guiana aledged y^t^ the cuntrie was rich, fruitfull, & blessed with a perpetuall spring, and a florishing greenes; where vigorous nature brought forth all things in abundance & plentie without any great labour or art of man. So as it must needs make y^e^ inhabitants rich, seing less provisions of cloth-ing and other things would serve, then in more coulder & less frutfull countries must be had. As also y^t^ the Spaniards (having much more then they could possess) had not yet planted there, nor any where very near y^e^ same. But to this it was answered, that out of question y^e^ countrie was both frutfull and pleasante, and might yeeld riches & maintenance to y^e^ possessors, more easily then y^e^ other; yet, other things con-sidered, it would not be so fitt for them. And first,

y^t^ such hott countries are subject to greevuos diseases, and many noysome impediments, which other more temperate places are freer from, and would not so well agree with our English bodys. Againe, if they should ther live, & doe well, the jealous Spaniard would never suffer them long, but would displante or overthrow them, as he did y^e^ French in Florida, who were seated furder from his richest countries; and the sooner because they should have none to protect them, & their owne strength would be too smale to resiste so potent an enemie, & so neare a neighbor.

On y^e^ other hand, for Virginia it was objected, that if they lived among y^e^ English w^ch^ wear ther planted, or so near them as to be under their goverment, they should be in as great danger to be troubled and persecuted for the cause of religion, as if they lived in England, and it might be worse. And if they lived too farr of, they should neither have succour, nor defence from them.

But at length y^e^ conclusion was, to live as a distincte body by them selves, under y^e^ generall Goverment of Virginia; and by their freinds to sue to his majestie that he would be pleased to grant them freedome of Religion; and y^t^ this might be obtained, they wear putt in good hope by some great persons, of good ranke & qualitie, that were made their freinds. Whereupon 2. were chosen [19] & sent in to England

(at y^e^ charge of y^e^ rest) to sollicite this matter, who found the Virginia Company very desirous to have them goe thither, and willing to grante them a patent, with as ample priviliges as they had, or could grant to any, and to give them the best furderance they could. And some of y^e^ cheefe of y^t^ company douted not to obtaine their suite of y^e^ king for liberty in Religion, and to have it confirmed under y^e^ kings broad seale, according to their desires. But it prooved a harder peece of worke then they tooke it for; for though many means were used to bring it aboute, yet it could not be effected; for ther were diverse of good worth laboured with the king to obtaine it, (amongst whom was one of his cheefe secretaries,*) and some other wrought with y^e^ archbishop to give way therunto; but it proved all in vaine. Yet thus farr they prevailed, in sounding his majesties mind, that he would connive at them, & not molest them, provided they carried them selves peacably. But to allow or tolerate them by his publick authoritie, under his seale, they found it would not be. And this was all the cheefe of y^e^ Virginia companie or any other of their best freinds could doe in y^e^ case. Yet they perswaded them to goe on, for they presumed they should not be troubled. And with this answer y^e^ messengers returned, and signified what diligence had bene used, and to what issue things were come.

* S^r^ Robert Nanton.

But this made a dampe in y^e^ busines, and caused some distraction, for many were afraid that if they should unsetle them selves, & put of their estates, and goe upon these hopes, it might prove dangerous, and but a sandie foundation. Yea, it was thought they might better have presumed hear upon without makeing any suite at all, then, haveing made it, to be thus rejected. But some of y^e^ cheefest thought other wise, and y^t^ they might well proceede hereupon, & that y^e^ kings majestie was willing enough to suffer them without molestation, though for other reasons he would not confirme it by any publick acte. And furdermore, if ther was no securitie in this promise intimated, ther would be no great certainty in a furder confirmation of y^e^ same; for if after wards ther should be a purpose or desire to wrong them, though they had a seale as broad as y^e^ house flore, it would not serve y^e^ turne; for ther would be means enew found to recall or reverse it. Seeing therfore the course was probable, they must rest herein on Gods providence, as they had done in other things.

Upon this resolution, other messengers were dispatched, to end with y^e^ Virginia Company as well as they could. And to procure [20] a patent with as good and ample conditions as they might by any good means obtaine. As also to treate and conclude with such merchants and other freinds as had manifested their forwardnes to provoke too and adventure in this

vioage. For which end they had instructions given them upon what conditions they should proceed with them, or els to conclude nothing without further advice. And here it will be requisite to inserte a letter or too that may give light to these proceedings.

A coppie of leter from S^r^: Edwin Sands, directed to M^r^. John Robinson & M^r^. William Brewster.

After my hartie salutations. The agents of your congregation, Robert Cushman & John Carver, have been in comunication with diverse selecte gentlemen of his Majesties Counsell for Virginia; and by y^e^ writing of 7. Articles subscribed with your names, have given them y^t^ good degree of satisfaction, which hath caried them on with a resolution to sett forward your desire in y^e^ best sorte y^t^ may be, for your owne & the publick good. Divers perticulers wherof we leave to their faithfull reporte; having carried them selves heere with that good discretion, as is both to their owne and their credite from whence they came. And wheras being to treate for a multitude of people, they have requested further time to conferr with them that are to be interessed in this action, aboute y^e^ severall particularities which in y^e^ prosecution therof will fall out considerable, it hath been very willingly assented too. And so they doe now returne unto you. If therfore it may please God so to directe your desires as that on your parts ther fall out no just impediments, I trust by y^e^ same direction it shall likewise appear, that on our parte, all forwardnes to set you forward shall be found in y^e^ best sorte which with reason may be expected. And so I betake you with this designe (w^ch^ I hope verily is y^e^ worke of God), to the gracious protection and blessing of y^e^ Highest.

London, Novb^r^: 12. Your very loving freind
An^o^: 1617. Edwin Sandys.

Their answer was as foloweth.

Righte Wor^{pl}:

Our humble duties remembred, in our owne, our messengers, and our churches name, with all thankfull acknowledgmente of your singuler love, expressing [21] itselfe, as otherwise, so more spetially in your great care and earnest endeavor of our good in this weightie bussines aboute Virginia, which y^{e} less able we are to requite, we shall thinke our selves the more bound to com̄end in our prayers unto God for recompence; whom, as for y^{e} presente you rightly behould in our indeavors, so shall we not be wanting on our parts (the same God assisting us) to returne all answerable fruite, and respecte unto y^{e} labour of your love bestowed upon us. We have with y^{e} best speed and consideration withall that we could, sett downe our requests in writing, subscribed, as you willed, wth the hands of y^{e} greatest parte of our congregation, and have sente y^{e} same unto y^{e} Counsell by our agente, & a deacon of our church, John Carver, unto whom we have also requested a gentleman of our company to adyone him selfe; to the care & discretion of which two, we doe referr y^{e} prosecuting of y^{e} bussines. Now we perswade our selves Right Wor^{pp}: that we need not provoke your godly & loving minde to any further or more tender care of us, since you have pleased so farr to interest us in your selfe, that, under God, above all persons and things in the world, we relye upon you, expecting the care of your love, counsell of your wisdome, & the help & countenance of your authority. Notwithstanding, for your encouragmente in y^{e} worke, so farr as probabilities may leade, we will not forbeare to mention these instances of indusmente.

1. We veryly beleeve & trust y^{e} Lord is with us, unto whom & whose service we have given our selves in many trialls; and that he will graciously prosper our indeavours according to y^{e} simplicitie of our harts therin.

2ly. We are well weaned from ye delicate milke of our mother countrie, and enured to ye difficulties of a strange and hard land, which yet in a great parte we have by patience overcome.

3ly. The people are for the body of them, industrious, & frugall, we thinke we may safly say, as any company of people in the world.

4ly. We are knite togeather as a body in a most stricte & sacred bond and covenante of the Lord, of the violation * wherof we make great conscience, and by vertue wherof we doe hould our selves straitly tied to all care of each others good, and of ye whole by every one and so mutually.

5. Lastly, it is not with us as with other men, whom small things can discourage, or small discontentments cause to wish them selves at home againe. We knowe our entertainmente in England, and in Holand; we shall much prejudice both our arts & means by removall; who, if we should be driven to returne, we should not hope to recover our present helps and comforts, neither indeed looke ever, for our selves, to attaine unto ye like in any other place during our lives, wch are now drawing towards their periods.

[22] These motives we have been bould to tender unto you,

* Note. — O sacred bond, whilst inviollably preserved! how sweete and precious were the fruits that flowed from ye same, but when this fidelity decayed, then their ruine approached. O that these anciente members had not dyed, or been dissipated, (if it had been the will of God) or els that this holy care and constante faithfullnes had still lived, and remained with those that survived, and were in times afterwards added unto them. But (alass) that subtill serpente hath slylie wound in himselfe under faire pretences of necessitie and ye like, to untwiste these sacred bonds and tyes, and as it were insensibly by degrees to dissolve, or in a great measure to weaken, ye same. I have been happy, in my first times, to see, and with much comforte to injoye, the blessed fruits of this sweete communion, but it is now a parte of my miserie in old age, to find and feele ye decay and wante therof (in a great measure), and with greefe and sorrow of hart to lamente & bewaile ye same. And for others warning and admonnition, and my owne humiliation, doe I hear note ye same.

[The above reflections of the author were penned at a later period, on the reverse pages of his History, at this place.]

which you in your wisdome may also imparte to any other our wor^{pp}: freinds of y^{e} Counsell with you; of all whose godly dispossition and loving towards our despised persons, we are most glad, & shall not faile by all good means to continue & increase y^{e} same. We will not be further troublesome, but doe, with y^{e} renewed remembrance of our humble duties to your Wor^{pp}: and (so farr as in modestie we may be bould) to any other of our wellwillers of the Counsell with you, we take our leaves, com̄iting your persons and counsels to y^{e} guidance and direction of the Almighty.

Yours much bounden in all duty,

Leyden, Desem: 15. An^{o}: 1617.

John Robinson,
William Brewster.

For further light in these proceedings see some other letters & notes as followeth.

The coppy of a letter sent to S^{r}. John Worssenham.

Right Wor^{pll}: with due acknowledgmente of our thankfullnse for your singular care & pains in the bussines of Virginia, for our, &, we hope, the com̄one good, we doe remember our humble dutys unto you, and have sent inclosed, as is required, a further explanation of our judgments in the 3. points specified by some of his majesties Hon^{bl} Privie Counsell; and though it be greevious unto us that such unjust insinuations are made against us, yet we are most glad of y^{e} occasion of making our just purgation unto so honourable personages. The declarations we have sent inclosed, the one more breefe & generall, which we thinke y^{e} fitter to be presented; the other something more large, and in which we express some smale accidentall differances, which if it seeme good unto you and other of our wor^{pl} freinds, you may send in stead of y^{e} former. Our prayers unto God is, y^{t} your Wor^{pp} may see the frute of your worthy

endeaours, which on our parts we shall not faile to furder by all good means in us. And so praing y^t^ you would please with y^e^ convenientest speed y^t^ may be, to give us knowledge of y^e^ success of y^e^ bussines with his majesties Privie Counsell, and accordingly what your further pleasure is, either for our direction or furtherance in y^e^ same, so we rest

Your Wor^pp^ in all duty,

Leyden, Jan: 27. An^o^: 1617. old stile.

John Robinson,
William Brewster.

The first breefe note was this.

Touching y^e^ Ecclesiasticall ministrie, namly of pastores for teaching, elders for ruling, & deacons for distributing y^e^ churches contribution, as allso for y^e^ too Sacrements, baptisme, and y^e^ Lords supper, we doe wholy and in all points agree [23] with y^e^ French reformed churches, according to their publick confession of faith.

The oath of Supremacie we shall willingly take if it be required of us, and that conveniente satisfaction be not given by our taking y^e^ oath of Alleagence.

John Rob:
William Brewster.

Y^e^ 2. was this.

Touching y^e^ Ecclesiasticall ministrie, &c. as in y^e^ former, we agree in all things with the French reformed churches, according to their publick confession of faith; though some small differences be to be found in our practises, not at all in y^e^ substance of the things, but only in some accidentall circumstances.

1. As first, their ministers doe pray with their heads covered; ours uncovered.

2. We chose none for Governing Elders but such as are able to teach; which abilitie they doe not require.

3. Their elders & deacons are anūall, or at most for 2. or 3. years; ours perpetuall.

4. Our elders doe administer their office in admonitions & excommunications for publick scandals, publickly & before y^e^ congregation; theirs more privately, & in their consistories.

5. We doe administer baptisme only to such infants as wherof y^e^ one parente, at y^e^ least, is of some church, which some of ther churches doe not observe; though in it our practice accords with their publick confession and y^e^ judgmente of y^e^ most larned amongst them.

Other differences, worthy mentioning, we know none in these points. Then aboute y^e^ oath, as in y^e^ former.

Subscribed, JOHN R.
W. B.

Part of another letter from him that delivered these.

London. Feb: 14.
1617.

Your letter to S^r^. John Worstenholme I delivered allmost as soone as I had it, to his owne hands, and staid with him y^e^ opening & reading. Ther were 2. papers inclosed, he read them to him selfe, as also y^e^ letter, and in y^e^ reading he spake to me & said, Who shall make them? viz. y^e^ ministers; I answered his Wor^pp^ that y^e^ power of making was in y^e^ church, to be ordained by y^e^ imposition of hands, by y^e^ fittest instruments they had. It must either be in y^e^ church or from y^e^ pope, & y^e^ pope is Antichrist. Ho! said S^r^. John, what y^e^ pope houlds good, (as in y^e^ Trinitie,) that we doe well to assente too; but, said he, we will not enter into dispute now. And as for your letters he would not show them at any hand, least he should spoyle all. He expected you should have been of y^e^ archbp̄ minde for y^e^ calling of ministers, but it seems you differed. I could have wished to have known y^e^ contents of your tow inclosed, at w^ch^ he stuck so much, espetially y^e^ larger.

I asked his Wor^p what good news he had for me to write to morrow. He tould me very good news, for both the kings majestie and y^e bishops have consented. He said he would goe to M^r. Chancelor, S^r. Fulk Grivell, as this day, & nexte weeke I should know more. I mett S^r. Edw: Sands on Wedensday night; he wished me to be at the Virginia Courte y^e nexte Wedensday, wher I purpose to be. Thus loath to be troublsome at present, I hope to have somewhate nexte week of certentie concerning you. I comitte you to y^e Lord. Yours,

S. B.

[24] These things being long in agitation, & messengers passing too and againe aboute them, after all their hopes they were long delayed by many rubs that fell in y^e way; for at y^e returne of these messengers into England they found things farr otherwise then they expected. For y^e Virginia Counsell was now so disturbed with factions and quarrels amongst them selves, as no bussines could well goe forward. The which may the better appear in one of ye messengers letters as followeth.

To his loving freinds, &c.

I had thought long since to have write unto you, but could not effecte y^t which I aimed at, neither can yet sett things as I wished; yet, notwithstanding, I doubt not but M^r. B. hath writen to M^r. Robinson. But I thinke my selfe bound also to doe something, least I be thought to neglecte you. The maine hinderance of our proseedings in y^e Virginia bussines, is y^e dissentions and factions, as they terme it, amongs y^e Counsell & Company of Virginia; which are such, as that

ever since we came up no busines could by them be dispatched. The occasion of this trouble amongst them is, for that a while since S^r^. Thomas Smith, repining at his many offices & troubls, wished y^e^ Company of Virginia to ease him of his office in being Treasurer & Gover^r^. of y^e^ Virginia Company. Wereupon y^e^ Company tooke occasion to dismisse him, and chose S^r^. Edwin Sands Treasure^r^ & Gover^r^ of y^e^ Company. He having 60. voyces, S^r^. John Worstenholme 16. voices, and Alderman Johnsone 24. But S^r^. Thomas Smith, when he saw some parte of his honour lost, was very angrie, & raised a faction to cavill & contend aboute y^e^ election, and sought to taxe S^r^. Edwin with many things that might both disgrace him, and allso put him by his office of Governour. In which contentions they yet stick, and are not fit nor readie to intermedle in any bussines; and what issue things will come to we are not yet certaine. It is most like S^r^. Edwin will carrie it away, and if he doe, things will goe well in Virginia; if otherwise, they will goe ill enough allways. We hope in some 2. or 3. Court days things will setle. Mean space I thinke to goe downe into Kente, & come up againe aboute 14. days, or 3. weeks hence; except either by these afforesaid contentions, or by y^e^ ille tidings from Virginia, we be wholy discouraged, of which tidings I am now to speake.

Captaine Argoll is come home this weeke (he upon notice of y^e^ intente of y^e^ Counsell, came away before S^r^. Georg Yeardley came ther, and so ther is no small dissention). But his tidings are ill, though his person be wellcome. He saith M^r^. Blackwells shipe came not ther till March, but going towards winter, they had still norwest winds, which carried them to the southward beyond their course. And y^e^ m^r^ of y^e^ ship & some 6. of y^e^ mariners dieing, it seemed they could not find y^e^ bay, till after long seeking & beating aboute. M^r^. Blackwell is dead, & M^r^. Maggner, y^e^ Captain; yea, ther are dead, he saith, 130. persons, one & other in y^t^ ship; it is said

ther was in all an 180. persons in y^e^ ship, so as they were packed togeather like herings. They had amongst them y^e^ fluxe, and allso wante of fresh water; so as it is hear rather wondred at y^t^ so many are alive, then that so many are dead. The marchants hear say it was M^r^. Blackwells faulte to pack so many in y^e^ ship; yea, & ther were great mutterings & repinings amongst them, and upbraiding of M^r^. Blackwell, for his dealing and dispossing of them, when they saw how he had dispossed of them, & how he insulted over them. Yea, y^e^ streets at Gravsend runge of their extreame quarrelings, crying out one of another, Thou hast brought me to this, and, I may thanke the for this. Heavie newes it is, and I would be glad to heare how farr it will discourage. I see none hear discouraged much, [25] but rather desire to larne to beware by other mens harmes, and to amend that wherin they have failed. As we desire to serve one another in love, so take heed of being inthraled by any imperious persone, espetially if they be discerned to have an eye to them selves. It doth often trouble me to thinke that in this bussines we are all to learne and none to teach; but better so, then to depend upon such teachers as M^r^. Blackwell was. Such a strategeme he once made for M^r^. Johnson & his people at Emden, w^ch^ was their subversion. But though he ther clenlily (yet unhonstly) plucked his neck out of y^e^ collar, yet at last his foote is caught. Hear are no letters come, y^e^ ship captain Argole came in is yet in y^e^ west parts; all y^t^ we hear is but his report; it seemeth he came away secretly. The ship y^t^ M^r^. Blackwell went in will be hear shortly. It is as M^r^. Robinson once said; he thought we should hear no good of them.

M^r^. B. is not well at this time; whether he will come back to you or goe into y^e^ north, I yet know not. For my selfe, I hope to see an end of this bussines ere I come, though I am sorie to be thus from you; if things had gone roundly forward, I should have been with you within these 14. days. I pray

God directe us, and give us that spirite which is fitting for such a bussines. Thus having sum̄arily pointed at things w^{ch} M^{r}. Brewster (I thinke) hath more largly write of to M^{r}. Robinson, I leave you to the Lords protection.

Yours in all readines, &c. London, May 8.
Robart Cushman. An^{o}: 1619.

A word or tow by way of digression touching this M^{r}. Blackwell; he was an elder of y^{e} church at Amsterdam, a man well known of most of them. He declined from y^{e} trueth wth M^{r}. Johnson & y^{e} rest, and went with him when y^{ey} parted assunder in y^{t} wofull maner, w^{ch} brought so great dishonour to God, scandall to y^{e} trueth, & outward ruine to them selves in this world. But I hope, notwithstanding, through y^{e} mercies of y^{e} Lord, their souls are now at rest with him in y^{e} heavens, and y^{t} they are arrived in y^{e} Haven of hapines; though some of their bodies were thus buried in y^{e} terrable seas, and others sunke under y^{e} burthen of bitter afflictions. He with some others had prepared for to goe to Virginia. And he, with sundrie godly citizens, being at a private me$\bar{e}$ing (I take it a fast) in London, being discovered, many of them were apprehended, wherof M^{r}. Blackwell was one; but he so glosed wth y^{e} b$\tilde{p}$s,* and either dissembled or flatly denyed y^{e} trueth which formerly he had maintained; and not only so, but very unworthily betrayed and accused another godly man who had escaped, that so

* Bishops.

he might slip his own neck out of y^e^ collar, & to obtaine his owne freedome brought others into bonds. Wherupon he so wone y^e^ bp̃s favour (but lost y^e^ Lord's) as he was not only dismiste, but in open courte y^e^ archbishop gave him great applause and his sollemne blessing to proseed in his vioage. But if such events follow y^e^ bp̃s blessing, happie are they y^t^ misse y^e^ same; it is much better to keepe a good conscience and have y^e^ Lords blessing, whether in life or death.

But see how y^e^ man thus apprehended by M^r^. Blackwells means, writs to a freind of his.

Right dear freind & christian brother, *M^r^. Carver*, I salute you & yours in y^e^ Lord, &c. As for my owne presente condition, I doubt not but you well understand it ere this by our brother Maistersone, who should have tasted of y^e^ same cupp, had his place of residence & his person been as well knowne as my selfe. Some what I have written to *M^r^. Cushman* how y^e^ matter *still continues.* I have petitioned *twise* to M^r^. Sherives, and *once* to my Lord Cooke, and have used such reasons to move them to pittie, that if they were not overruled by some others, I suppose I should soone gaine my libertie; as that I was a yonge man living by my [26] credite, indebted to diverse in our citie, living at more then ordinarie charges in a close & tedious prison; besids great rents abroad, all my bussines lying still, my only servante lying lame in y^e^ countrie, my wife being also great with child. And yet no answer till y^e^ lords of his majesties Counsell gave consente. Howbeit, M^r^. Blackwell, a man as deepe in this action as I, was delivered at a cheaper rate, with a great deale less adoe; yea, with an addition of y^e^ Archp̃: blessing. I am sorie for M^r^. Blackwels weaknes, I wish it may prove no worse. But yet he & some others of

them, *before their going*, were not sorie, but thought it was for y^e^ best that I was nominated, not because y^e^ Lord sanctifies evill to good, but that y^e^ action was good, yea for y^e^ best. One reason I well remember he used was, because this trouble would encrease y^e^ Virginia plantation, in that now people begane to be more generally inclined to goe; and if he had not nomminated some such as I, he had not bene free, being it was knowne that diverse citizens besids them selves were ther. I expecte an answer shortly what they intende conscerning me; I purpose to write to some others of you, by whom you shall know the certaintie. Thus not haveing further at present to acquaint you withall, com̄ending myselfe to your prairs, I cease, & com̄itte you and us all to y^e^ Lord.

From my chamber in Wodstreete Compter.

Your freind, & brother in bonds,

SABIN STARESMORE.

Sept^r^: 4. An^o^: 1618.

But thus much by y^e^ way, which may be of instruction & good use.

But at last, after all these things, and their long attendance, they had a patent granted them, and confirmed under y^e^ Companies seale; but these devissions and distractions had shaken of many of ther pretended freinds, and disappointed them of much of their hoped for & proffered means. By the advise of some freinds this pattente was not taken in y^e^ name of any of their owne, but in y^e^ name of M^r^. John Wincob (a religious gentleman then belonging to y^e^ Countess of Lincoline), who intended to goe with them. But God so disposed as he never went, nor they ever made use of this patente,

which had cost them so much labour and charge, as by y^e^ sequell will appeare. This patente being sente over for them to veiw & consider, as also the passages aboute y^e^ propossitions between them & such marchants & freinds as should either goe or adventure with them, and espetially with those* on whom y^ey^ did cheefly depend for shipping and means, whose proffers had been large, they were requested to fitt and prepare them selves with all speed. A right emblime, it may be, of y^e^ uncertine things of this world; y^t^ when men have toyld them selves for them, they vanish into smoke.

The 6. Chap.

Conscerning y^e^ agreements and artickles between them, and such marchants & others as adventured moneys; with other things falling out aboute making their provissions.

Upon y^e^ receite of these things by one of their messengers, they had a sollemne meeting and a day of humilliation to seeke y^e^ Lord for his direction; and their pastor tooke this texte, 1 *Sam.* 23. 3, 4. *And David's men said unto him, see, we be afraid hear in Judah, how much more if we come to Keilah against y^e^ host of the Phillistines? Then David asked counsell of y^e^ Lord againe, &c.* From which texte he taught many things very aptly, and befitting ther present

* M^r^. Tho: Weston, &c.

occasion and condition, strengthing them against their fears and perplexities, and incouraging them in their resolutions. [27] After which they concluded both what number and what persons should prepare them selves to goe with y^e^ first; for all y^t^ were willing to have gone could not gett ready for their other affairs in so shorte a time; neither if all could have been ready, had ther been means to have trāsported them alltogeather. Those that staied being y^e^ greater number required y^e^ pastor to stay with them; and indeede for other reasons he could not then well goe, and so it was y^e^ more easilie yeelded unto. The other then desired y^e^ elder, M^r^. Brewster, to goe with them, which was also condescended unto. It was also agreed on by mutuall consente and covenante, that those that went should be an absolute church of them selves, as well as those y^t^ staid; seing in such a dangrous vioage, and a removall to such a distance, it might come to pass they should (for y^e^ body of them) never meete againe in this world; yet with this proviso, that as any of y^e^ rest came over to them, or of y^e^ other returned upon occasion, they should be reputed as members without any further dismission or testimoniall. It was allso promised to those y^t^ wente first, by y^e^ body of y^e^ rest, that if y^e^ Lord gave them life, & meās, & opportunitie, they would come to them as soone as they could.

Aboute this time, whilst they were perplexed with

y^e^ proseedings of y^e^ Virginia Company, & y^e^ ill news from thence aboute M^r^. Blackwell & his company, and making inquirey about y^e^ hiring & buying of shiping for their vioage, some Dutchmen made them faire offers aboute goeing with them. Also one M^r^. Thomas Weston, a m^r^chant of London, came to Leyden aboute y^e^ same time, (who was well aquainted with some of them, and a furtherer of them in their former proseedings,) haveing much conferance w^th^ M^r^. Robinson & other of y^e^ cheefe of them, perswaded them to goe on (as it seems) & not to medle with y^e^ Dutch, or too much to depend on y^e^ Virginia Company; for if that failed, if they came to resolution, he and such marchants as were his freinds (togeather with their owne means) would sett them forth; and they should make ready, and neither feare wante of shipping nor money; for what they wanted should be provided. And, not so much for him selfe as for y^e^ satisfing of such frends as he should procure to adventure in this bussines, they were to draw such articls of agreemente, and make such propossitions, as might y^e^ better induce his freinds to venture. Upon which (after y^e^ formere conclusion) articles were drawne & agreed unto, and were showne unto him, and approved by him; and afterwards by their messenger (M^r^. John Carver) sent into England, who, togeather with Robart Cushman, were to receive y^e^ moneys & make provissione both for shiping & other things for y^e^ vïoage; with this charge, not to exseede their cō̄mission, but to proseed

according to y^e^ former articles. Also some were chossen to doe y^e^ like for such things as were to be prepared there; so those that weare to goe, prepared them selves with all speed, and sould of their estats and (such as were able) put in their moneys into y^e^ commone stock, which was disposed by those appointed, for y^e^ making of generall provissions. Aboute this time also they had heard, both by M^r^. Weston and others, y^t^ sundrie Hon^bl^: Lords had obtained a large grante from y^e^ king, for y^e^ more northerly parts of that countrie, derived out of y^e^ Virginia patente, and wholy secluded from their Govermente, and to be called by another name, viz. New-England. Unto which M^r^. Weston, and y^e^ cheefe of them, begane to incline it was [28] best for them to goe, as for other reasons, so cheefly for y^e^ hope of present profite to be made by y^e^ fishing that was found in y^t^ countrie.

But as in all bussineses y^e^ acting parte is most difficulte, espetially wher y^e^ worke of many agents must concurr, so it was found in this; for some of those y^t^ should have gone in England, fell of & would not goe; other marchants & freinds y^t^ had offered to adventure their moneys withdrew, and pretended many excuses. Some disliking they wente not to Guiana; others againe would adventure nothing excepte they wente to Virginia. Some againe (and those that were most relied on) fell in utter dislike with Virginia, and would doe nothing if they wente thither. In y^e^ midds

of these distractions, they of Leyden, who had put of their estats, and laid out their moneys, were brought into a greate streight, fearing what issue these things would come too; but at length y^e^ generalitie was swaid to this latter opinion.

But now another difficultie arose, for M^r^. Weston and some other that were for this course, either for their better advantage or rather for y^e^ drawing on of others, as they pretended, would have some of those conditions altered y^t^ were first agreed on at Leyden. To which y^e^ 2. agents sent from Leyden (or at least one of them who is most charged with it) did consente; seeing els y^t^ all was like to be dashte, & y^e^ opportunitie lost, and y^t^ they which had put of their estats and paid in their moneys were in hazard to be undon. They presumed to conclude with y^e^ marchants on those termes, in some things contrary to their order & com̄ission, and without giving them notice of y^e^ same; yea, it was conceled least it should make any furder delay; which was y^e^ cause afterward of much trouble & contention.

It will be meete I here inserte these conditions, which are as foloweth.

An^o^: 1620. July 1.

1. The adventurers & planters doe agree, that every person that goeth being aged 16. years & upward, be rated at 10^li^., and ten pounds to be accounted a single share.

2. That he that goeth in person, and furnisheth him selfe out with 10li. either in money or other provissions, be accounted as haveing 20li. in stock, and in ye devission shall receive a double share.

3. The persons transported & ye adventurers shall continue their joynt stock & partnership togeather, ye space of 7. years, (excepte some unexpected impedimente doe cause ye whole company to agree otherwise,) during which time, all profits & benifits that are gott by trade, traffick, trucking, working, fishing, or any other means of any person or persons, remaine still in ye comone stock untill ye division.

4. That at their coming ther, they chose out such a number of fitt persons, as may furnish their ships and boats for fishing upon ye sea; imploying the rest in their severall faculties upon ye land; as building houses, tilling, and planting ye ground, & makeing shuch comodities as shall be most usefull for ye collonie.

5. That at ye end of ye 7. years, ye capitall & profits, viz. the houses, lands, goods and chatles, be equally devided betwixte ye adventurers, and planters; wch done, every man shall be free from other of them of any debt or detrimente concerning this adventure.

[29] 6. Whosoever cometh to ye colonie herafter, or putteth any into ye stock, shall at the ende of ye 7. years be alowed proportionably to ye time of his so doing.

7. He that shall carie his wife & children, or servants, shall be alowed for everie person now aged 16. years & upward, a single share in ye devision, or if he provid them necessaries, a duble share, or if they be between 10. year old and 16., then 2. of them to be reconed for a person, both in trāsportation and devision.

8. That such children as now goe, & are under ye age of ten years, have noe other shar in ye devision, but 50. acers of unmanured land.

9. That such persons as die before y^e^ 7. years be expired, their executors to have their parte or sharr at y^e^ devision, proportionably to y^e^ time of their life in y^e^ collonie.

10. That all such persons as are of this collonie, are to have their meate, drink, apparell, and all provissions out of y^e^ com̄on stock & goods of y^e^ said collonie.

The cheefe & principall differences betwene these & the former conditions, stood in those 2. points; that y^e^ houses, & lands improved, espetialy gardens & home lotts should remaine undevided wholy to y^e^ planters at y^e^ 7. years end. 2^ly^, y^t^ they should have had 2. days in a weeke for their owne private imployemente, for y^e^ more comforte of them selves and their families, espetialy such as had families. But because letters are by some wise men counted y^e^ best parte of histories, I shall shew their greevances hereaboute by their owne letters, in which y^e^ passages of things will be more truly discerned.

A letter of M^r^. Robinsons to John Carver.

June 14. 1620. N. Stile.

My dear freind & brother, whom with yours I alwaise remember in my best affection, and whose wellfare I shall never cease to com̄end to God by my best & most earnest praires. You doe throwly understand by our generall letters y^e^ estate of things hear, which indeed is very pitifull; espetialy by wante of shiping, and not seeing means lickly, much less certaine, of having it provided; though withall ther be great want of money & means to doe needfull things. M^r^. Pickering, you know before this, will not defray a peny hear; though Robart Cush-

man presumed of I know not how many 100li. from him, & I know not whom. Yet it seems strange yt we should be put to him to receive both his & his partners adventer, and yet Mr. Weston write unto him, yt in regard of it, he hath drawne upon him a 100li. more. But ther is in this some misterie, as indeed it seems ther is in ye whole course. Besids, wheras diverse are to pay in some parts of their moneys yet behinde, they refuse to doe it, till they see shiping provided, or a course taken for it. Neither doe I thinke is ther a man hear would pay any thing, if he had againe his money in his purse. You know right well we depended on Mr. Weston alone, and upon such means as he would procure for this commone bussines; and when we had in hand another course with ye Dutchmen, broke it of at his motion, and upon ye conditions by him shortly after propounded. He did this in his love I know, but things appeare not answerable from him hitherto. That he should have first have put in his moneys, is thought by many to have been but fitt, but yt I can well excuse, he being a marchante and haveing use of it to his benefite; wheras others, if it had been in their hands, would have consumed it. [30] But yt he should not but have had either shipping ready before this time, or at least certaine means, and course, and ye same knowne to us for it, or have taken other order otherwise, cannot in my conscience be excused. I have heard yt when he hath been moved in the bussines, he hath put it of from him selfe, and referred it to ye others;* and would come to Georg Morton, & enquire news of him aboute things, as if he had scarce been some accessarie unto it. Wether he hath failed of some helps from others which he expected, and so be not well able to goe through with things, or whether he hath feared least you should be ready too soone & so encrease ye charge of shiping above yt is meete, or whether he have thought by withhoulding to put

* *Yowthers* in the manuscript, an illegibly written word, doubtless intended for "ye others."

us upon straits, thinking y^{t} therby M^{r}. Brewer and M^{r}. Pickering would be drawne by importunitie to doe more, or what other misterie is in it, we know not; but sure we are y^{t} things are not answerable to such an occasion. M^{r}. Weston maks himselfe mery with our endeavors about buying a ship, but we have done nothing in this but with good reason, as I am perswaded, nor yet that I know in any thing els, save in those tow; y^{e} one, that we imployed Robart Cushman, who is known (though a good man, & of spetiall abilities in his kind, yet) most unfitt to deale for other men, by reason of his singularitie, and too great indifferancie for any conditions, and for (to speak truly) that * we have had nothing from him but termes & presumptions. The other, y^{t} we have so much relyed, by implicite faith as it were, upon generalities, without seeing y^{e} perticuler course & means for so waghtie an affaire set down unto us. For shiping, M^{r}. Weston, it should seeme, is set upon hireing, which yet I wish he may presently effecte; but I see litle hope of help from hence if so it be. Of M^{r}. Brewer you know what to expecte. I doe not thinke M^{r}. Pickering will ingage, excepte in y^{e} course of buying, in former letters specified. Aboute y^{e} conditions, you have our reasons for our judgments of what is agreed. And let this spetially be borne in minde, y^{t} the greatest parte of y^{e} Collonie is like to be imployed constantly, not upon dressing ther perticuler land & building houses, but upon fishing, trading, &c. So as y^{e} land & house will be but a trifell for advantage to y^{e} adventurers, and yet the devission of it a great discouragmente to y^{e} planters, who would with singuler care make it comfortable with borowed houres from their sleep. The same consideration of com̄one imploymente constantly by the most is a good reason not to have y^{e} 2. daies in a weeke denyed y^{e} few planters for private use, which yet is subordinate to com̄one good. Consider also how much unfite that you & your liks must serve a new prentishipe of 7. years, and not a

* This word is enclosed in brackets in the manuscript.

daies freedome from taske. Send me word what persons are to goe, who of usefull faculties, & how many, & perticulerly of every thing. I know you wante not a minde. I am sorie you have not been at London all this while, but y^e^ provissions could not wante you. Time will suffer me to write no more; fare you & yours well allways in y^e^ Lord, in whom I rest.

Yours to use,

JOHN ROBINSON.

An other letter from sundrie of them at y^e^ same time.

[31] To their loving freinds John Carver and Robart Cushman, these, &c.

Good bretheren, after salutations, &c. We received diverse letters at y^e^ coming of M^r^. Nash & our pilott, which is a great incouragmente unto us, and for whom we hop after times will minister occasion of praising God; and indeed had you not sente him, many would have been ready to fainte and goe backe. Partly in respecte of y^e^ new conditions which have bene taken up by you, which all men are against, and partly in regard of our owne inabillitie to doe any one of those many waightie bussineses you referr to us here. For y^e^ former wherof, wheras Robart Cushman desirs reasons for our dislike, promising therupon to alter y^e^ same, or els saing we should thinke he hath no brains, we desire him to exercise them therin, refering him to our pastors former reasons, and them to y^e^ censure of y^e^ godly wise. But our desires are that you will not entangle your selvs and us in any such unreasonable courses as those are, viz. y^t^ the marchants should have y^e^ halfe of mens houses and lands at y^e^ dividente; and that persons should be deprived of y^e^ 2. days in a weeke agreed upon, yea every momente of time for their owne perticuler; by reason wherof we cannot conceive why any should carie servants for their own help and comfort; for that we can require no more of them then all men one of another. This we have only by

relation from M^r^. Nash, & not from any writing of your owne, & therfore hope you have not proceeded farr in so great a thing without us. But requiring you not to exseed the bounds of your comission, which was to proceed upon y^e^ things or conditions agred upon and expressed in writing (at your going over about it), we leave it, not without marveling, that you^r^ selfe, as you write, knowing how smale a thing troubleth our consultations, and how few, as you fear, understands the busnes aright, should trouble us with such matters as these are, &c.

Salute M^r^. Weston from us, in whom we hope we are not deceived; we pray you make known our estate unto him, and if you thinke good shew him our letters, at least tell him (y^t^ under God) we much relie upon him & put our confidence in him; and, as your selves well know, that if he had not been an adventurer with us, we had not taken it in hand; presuming that if he had not seene means to accomplish it, he would not have begune it; so we hope in our extremitie he will so farr help us as our expectation be no way made frustrate concerning him. Since therfore, good brethren, we have plainly opened y^e^ state of things with us in this matter, you will, &c. Thus beseeching y^e^ Allmightie, who is allsufficiente to raise us out of this depth of dificulties, to assiste us herein; raising such means by his providence and fatherly care for us, his pore children & servants, as we may with comforte behould y^e^ hand of our God for good towards us in this our bussines, which we undertake in his name & fear, we take leave & remaine

Your perplexed, yet hopfull
June 10. New Stille, bretheren,
An^o^: 1620. S. F. E. W. W. B. J. A.*

* In Governor Bradford's Collection of Letters, these subscribers are thus wrote out at length: Samuel Fuller, William Bradford, Isaac Allerton, Ed. Winslow. — *Prince.*

A letter of Robart Cushmans to them.

Brethern, I understand by letters & passagess y^t^ have come to me, that ther are great discontents, & dislike of my proceedings amongst you. Sorie I am to hear it, yet contente to beare it, as not doubting but y^t^ partly by writing, and more principally by word when we shall come togeather, I shall satisfie any reasonable man. I have been perswaded [32] by some, espetialy this bearer, to come and clear things unto you; but as things now stand I cañot be absente one day, excepte I should hazard all y^e^ viage. Neither conceive I any great good would come of it. Take then, brethern, this as a step to give you contente. First, for your dislike of y^e^ alteration of one clause in y^e^ conditions, if you conceive it right, ther can be no blame lye on me at all. For y^e^ articles first brought over by John Carver were never seene of any of y^e^ adventurers hear, excepte M^r^. Weston, neither did any of them like them because of that clause; nor M^r^. Weston him selfe, after he had well considered it. But as at y^e^ first ther was 500^li^. withdrawne by S^r^. Georg Farrer and his brother upon that dislike, so all y^e^ rest would have withdrawne (M^r^. Weston excepted) if we had not altered y^t^ clause. Now whilst we at Leyden conclude upon points, as we did, we reckoned without our host, which was not my falte. Besids, I shewed you by a letter y^e^ equitie of y^t^ condition, & our inconveniences, which might be sett against all M^r^. Rob: inconveniences, that without y^e^ alteration of y^t^ clause, we could neither have means to gett thither, nor supplie wherby to subsiste when we were ther. Yet notwithstanding all those reasons, which were not mine, but other mens wiser then my selfe, without answer to any one of them, here cometh over many quirimonies, and complaints against me, of lording it over my brethern, and making conditions fitter for theeves & bondslaves then honest men, and that of my owne head I did what I list. And at last a paper of reasons, framed against

y^t^ clause in y^e^ conditions, which as y^ey^ were delivered me open, so my answer is open to you all. And first, as they are no other but inconveniences, such as a man might frame 20. as great on y^e^ other side, and yet prove nor disprove nothing by them, so they misse & mistake both y^e^ very ground of y^e^ article and nature of y^e^ project. For, first, it is said, that if ther had been no divission of houses & lands, it had been better for y^e^ poore. True, and y^t^ showeth y^e^ inequalitie of y^e^ condition; we should more respecte him y^t^ ventureth both his money and his person, then him y^t^ ventureth but his person only.

2. Consider wheraboute we are, not giveing almes, but furnishing a store house; no one shall be porer then another for 7. years, and if any be rich, none can be pore. At y^e^ least, we must not in such bussines crie, Pore, pore, mercie, mercie. Charitie hath it life in wraks, not in venturs; you are by this most in a hopefull pitie of makeing, therfore complaine not before you have need.

3. This will hinder y^e^ building of good and faire houses, contrarie to y^e^ advise of pollitiks. A. So we would have it; our purpose is to build for y^e^ presente such houses as, if need be, we may with litle greefe set a fire, and rune away by the lighte; our riches shall not be in pompe, but in strenght; if God send us riches, we will imploye them to provid more men, ships, munition, &c. You may see it amongst the best pollitiks, that a com̄onwele is readier to ebe then to flow, when once fine houses and gay cloaths come up.

4. The Gove^t^ may prevente excess in building. A. But if it be on all men beforehand resolved on, to build mean houses, y^e^ Gove^r^ laboure is spared.

5. All men are not of one condition. A. If by condition you mean wealth, you are mistaken; if you mean by condition, qualities, then I say he that is not contente his neighbour shall have as good a house, fare, means, &c. as him selfe, is not of a good qualitie. 2^ly^. Such retired persons, as have an

eie only to them selves, are fitter to come wher catching is, then closing; and are fitter to live alone, then in any societie, either civill or religious.

6. It will be of litle value, scarce worth 5li. A. True, it may be not worth halfe 5li. [33] If then so smale a thing will content them, why strive we thus aboute it, and give them occasion to suspecte us to be worldly & covetous? I will not say what I have heard since these complaints came first over.

7. Our freinds with us yt adventure mind not their owne profite, as did ye old adventurers. A. Then they are better then we, who for a litle matter of profite are readie to draw back, and it is more apparente brethern looke too it, that make profite your maine end; repente of this, els goe not least you be like Jonas to Tarshis. 2ly. Though some of them mind not their profite, yet others doe mind it; and why not as well as we? venturs are made by all sorts of men, and we must labour to give them all contente, if we can.

8. It will break ye course of cōunitie, as may be showed by many reasons. A. That is but said, and I say againe, it will best foster comunion, as may be showed by many reasons.

9. Great profite is like to be made by trucking, fishing, &c. A. As it is better for them, so for us; for halfe is ours, besids our living still upon it, and if such profite in yt way come, our labour shall be ye less on ye land, and our houses and lands must & will be of less value.

10. Our hazard is greater then theirs. A. True, but doe they put us upon it? doe they urge or egg us? hath not ye motion & resolution been always in our selves? doe they any more then in seeing us resolute if we had means, help us to means upon equall termes & conditions? If we will not goe, they are content to keep their moneys. Thus I have pointed at a way to loose those knots, which I hope you will consider seriously, and let me have no more stirre about them.

Now furder, I hear a noise of slavish conditions by me made; but surly this is all that I have altered, and reasons I have sent you. If you mean it of y^e^ 2. days in a week for perticuler, as some insinuate, you are deceived; you may have 3. days in a week for me if you will. And when I have spoken to y^e^ adventurers of times of working, they have said they hope we are men of discretion & conscience, and so fitte to be trusted our selves with that. But indeed y^e^ ground of our proceedings at Leyden was mistaken, and so here is nothing but tottering every day, &c.

As for them of Amsterdam I had thought they would as soone have gone to Rome as with us; for our libertie is to them as ratts bane, and their riggour as bad to us as y^e^ Spanish Inquision. If any practise of mine discourage them, let them yet draw back; I will undertake they shall have their money againe presently paid hear. Or if the company thinke me to be y^e^ Jonas, let them cast me of before we goe; I shall be content to stay with good will, having but y^e^ cloaths on my back; only let us have quietnes, and no more of these clamors; full litle did I expecte these things which are now come to pass, &c.

Yours, R. CUSHMAN.

But whether this letter of his ever came to their hands at Leyden I well know not; I rather thinke it was staied by M^r^. Carver & kept by him, forgiving offence. But this which follows was ther received; both which I thought pertenent to recite.

Another of his to y^e^ aforesaid, June 11. 1620.*

Salutations, &c. I received your lẽr. yesterday, by John Turner, with another y^e^ same day from Amsterdam by M^r^.

* June 11. O. S. is Lord's day, and therefore 't is likely the date of this letter should be June 10, the same with the date of the letter following. — *Prince.*

W. savouring of y^e^ place whenc it came. And indeed the many discouragements I find her, togeather with y^e^ demurrs and retirings ther, had made me to say, I would give up my accounts to John Carver, & at his comeing aquainte him fully with all courses, and so leave it quite, with only y^e^ pore cloaths on my back. But gathering up my selfe by further consideration, [34] I resolved yet to make one triall more, and to aquainte M^r^. Weston with y^e^ fainted state of our bussines; and though he hath been much discontented at some thing amongst us of late, which hath made him often say, that save for his promise, he would not meadle at all with y^e^ bussines any more, yet considering how farr we were plunged into maters, & how it stood both on our credits & undoing, at y^e^ last he gathered up him selfe a litle more, & coming to me 2. hours after, he tould me he would not yet leave it. And so advising togeather we resolved to hire a ship, and have tooke liking of one till Monday, about 60. laste, for a greater we cannot gett, excepte it be tow great; but a fine ship it is. And seeing our neer freinds ther are so streite lased, we hope to assure her without troubling them any further; and if y^e^ ship fale too small, it fitteth well y^t^ such as stumble at strawes allready, may rest them ther a while, least worse blocks come in y^e^ way ere 7. years be ended. If you had beaten this bussines so throuly a month agoe, and write to us as now you doe, we could thus have done much more conveniently. But it is as it is; I hope our freinds ther, if they be quitted of y^e^ ship hire, will be indusced to venture y^e^ more. All y^t^ I now require is y^t^ salt and netts may ther be boughte, and for all y^e^ rest we will here provid it; yet if that will not be, let them but stand for it a month or tow, and we will take order to pay it all. Let M^r^. *Reinholds* tarie ther, and bring y^e^ ship to Southampton. We have hired another pilote here, one M^r^. *Clarke*, who went last year to Virginia with a ship of kine.

You shall here distinctly by John Turner, who I thinke shall

come hence on Tewsday night. I had thought to have come with him, to have answerd to my complaints; but I shal lerne to pass litle for their censurs; and if I had more minde to goe & dispute & expostulate with them, then I have care of this waightie bussines, I were like them who live by clamours & jangling. But neither my mind nor my body is at libertie to doe much, for I am fettered with bussines, and had rather study to be quiet, then to make answer to their exceptions. If men be set on it, let them beat y^e^ eair; I hope such as are my sinceire freinds will not thinke but I can give some reason of my actions. But of your mistaking aboute y^e^ mater, & other things tending to this bussines, I shall nexte informe you more distinctly. Mean space entreate our freinds not to be too bussie in answering matters, before they know them. If I doe such things as I cañot give reasons for, it is like you have sett a foole aboute your bussines, and so turne y^e^ reproofe to your selves, & send an other, and let me come againe to my Combes. But setting a side my naturall infirmities, I refuse not to have my cause judged, both of God, & all indifferent men; and when we come togeather I shall give accounte of my actions hear. The Lord, who judgeth justly without respect of persons, see into y^e^ equitie of my cause, and give us quiet, peacable, and patient minds, in all these turmoiles, and sanctifie unto us all crosses whatsoever. And so I take my leave of you all, in all love & affection.

I hope we shall gett all hear ready in 14. days.

Your pore brother,

June 11. 1620. ROBART CUSHMAN.

Besids these things, ther fell out a differance amongs those 3. that received [35] the moneys & made y^e^ provissions in England; for besids these tow formerly mentioned sent from Leyden for this end, viz. M^r^. Carver

& Robart Cushman, ther was one chosen in England to be joyned with them, to make y^e^ provisions for y^e^ vioage; his name was M^r^. Martin, he came from Billirike in Essexe, from which parts came sundrie others to goe with them, as also from London & other places; and therfore it was thought meete & conveniente by them in Holand that these strangers that were to goe with them, should apointe one thus to be joyned with them, not so much for any great need of their help, as to avoyd all susspition, or jelosie of any partiallitie. And indeed their care for giving offence, both in this & other things afterward, turned to great inconvenience unto them, as in y^e^ sequell will apeare; but however it shewed their equall & honest minds. The provissions were for y^e^ most parte made at Southhamton, contrarie to M^r^. Westons & Robert Cushmās mind (whose counsells did most concure in all things). A touch of which things I shall give in a letter of his to M^r^. Carver, and more will appear afterward.

To his loving freind M^r^. John Carver, these, &c.

Loving freind, I have received from you some letters, full of affection & complaints, and what it is you would have of me I know not; for your crieing out, Negligence, negligence, negligence, I marvell why so negligente a man was used in y^e^ bussines. Yet know you y^t^ all that I have power to doe hear, shall not be one hower behind, I warent you. You have reference to M^r^. Weston to help us with money, more then his adventure; wher he protesteth but for his promise, he would not have done any thing. He saith we take a heady course,

and is offended y^t^ our provissions are made so farr of; as also that he was not made aquainted with our quantitie of things; and saith y^t^ in now being in 3. places, so farr remote, we will, with going up & downe, and wrangling & expostulating, pass over y^e^ somer before we will goe. And to speake y^e^ trueth, ther is fallen already amongst us a flatt schisme; and we are redier to goe to dispute, then to sett forwarde a voiage. I have received from Leyden since you wente 3. or 4. letters directed to you, though they only conscerne me. I will not trouble you with them. I always feared y^e^ event of y^e^ Amsterdamers striking in with us. I trow you must excomunicate me, or els you must goe without their companie, or we shall wante no quareling; but let them pass. We have reckoned, it should seeme, without our host; and, counting upon a 150. persons, ther cannot be founde above 1200^li^. & odd moneys of all y^e^ venturs you can reckone, besids some cloath, stockings, & shoes, which are not counted; so we shall come shorte at least 3. or 400^li^. I would have had some thing shortened at first of beare & other provissions in hope of other adventurs, & now we could have, both in Amsterd: & Kente, beere inough to serve our turne, but now we cannot accept it without prejudice. You fear we have begune to build & shall not be able to make an end; indeed, our courses were never established by counsell, we may therfore justly fear their standing. Yea, ther was a [36] schisme amongst us 3. at y^e^ first. You wrote to M^r^. Martin, to prevente y^e^ making of y^e^ provissions in Kente, which he did, and sett downe his resolution how much he would have of every thing, without respecte to any counsell or exception. Surely he y^t^ is in a societie & yet regards not counsell, may better be a king then a consorte. To be short, if ther be not some other dispossition setled unto then yet is, we y^t^ should be partners of humilitie and peace, shall be examples of jangling & insulting. Yet your money which you ther must have, we will get provided for you instantly. 500^li^. you say

will serve; for y^e^ rest which hear & in Holand is to be used, we may goe scratch for it. For M^r^.* Crabe, of whom you write, he hath promised to goe with us, yet I tell you I shall not be without feare till I see him shipped, for he is much opposed, yet I hope he will not faile. Thinke y^e^ best of all, and bear with patience what is wanting, and y^e^ Lord guid us all.

Your loving freind,

London, June 10. ROBART CUSHMAN.

An^o^: 1620.

I have bene y^e^ larger in these things, and so shall crave leave in some like passages following, (thoug in other things I shal labour to be more contracte,) that their children may see with what difficulties their fathers wrastled in going throug these things in their first begiñings, and how God brought them along notwithstanding all their weaknesses & infirmities. As allso that some use may be made hereof in after times by others in such like waightie imployments; and herewith I will end this chapter.

The 7. Chap.

Of their departure from Leyden, and other things ther aboute, with their arivall at South hamton, were they all mete togeather, and tooke in ther provissions.

AT length, after much travell and these debats, all things were got ready and provided. A smale ship † was bought, & fitted in Holand, which was intended as

* He was a minister. † Of some 60 tune.

to serve to help to transport them, so to stay in y^e^ cuntrie and atend upon fishing and shuch other affairs as might be for y^e^ good & benefite of y^e^ colonie when they came ther. Another was hired at London, of burden about 9. score; and all other things gott in readines. So being ready to departe, they had a day of solleme humiliation, their pastor taking his texte from Ezra 8. 21. *And ther at y^e^ river, by Ahava, I proclaimed a fast, that we might humble ourselves before our God, and seeke of him a right way for us, and for our children, and for all our substance.* Upon which he spente a good parte of y^e^ day very profitably, and suitable to their presente occasion. The rest of the time was spente in powering out prairs to y^e^ Lord with great fervencie, mixed with abundance of tears. And y^e^ time being come that they must departe, they were accompanied with most of their brethren out of y^e^ citie, unto a towne sundrie miles of called Delfes-Haven, wher the ship lay ready to receive them. So they lefte y^t^ goodly & pleasante citie, which had been ther resting place near 12. years; but they knew they were pilgrimes,* & looked not much on those things, but lift up their eyes to y^e^ heavens, their dearest cuntrie, and quieted their spirits. When they [37] came to y^e^ place they found y^e^ ship and all things ready; and shuch of their freinds as could not come with them followed after them, and sundrie also came from Am-

* Heb. 11.

sterdame to see them shipte and to take their leave of them. That night was spent with litle sleepe by y^e^ most, but with freindly entertainmente & christian discourse and other reall expressions of true christian love. The next day, the wind being faire, they wente aborde, and their freinds with them, where truly dolfull was y^e^ sight of that sade and mournfull parting; to see what sighs and sobbs and praires did sound amongst them, what tears did gush from every eye, & pithy speeches peirst each harte; that sundry of y^e^ Dutch strangers y^t^ stood on y^e^ key as spectators, could not refraine from tears. Yet comfortable & sweete it was to see shuch lively and true expressions of dear & unfained love. But y^e^ tide (which stays for no man) caling them away y^t^ were thus loath to departe, their Reu̅ē^d^: pastor falling downe on his knees, (and they all with him,) with watrie cheeks co̅mended them with most fervente praiers to the Lord and his blessing. And then with mutuall imbrases and many tears, they tooke their leaves one of an other; which proved to be y^e^ last leave to many of them.

Thus hoysing saile,* with a prosperus winde they came in short time to Southhamton, wher they found the bigger ship come from London, lying ready, w^th^ all the rest of their company. After a joyfull wellcome, and mutuall congratulations, with othe^r^ frendly entertainements, they fell to parley aboute their bussi-

* This was about 22. of July.

nes, how to dispatch with y^e^ best expedition; as allso with their agents, aboute y^e^ alteration of y^e^ conditions. M^r^. Carver pleaded he was imployed hear at Hamton, and knew not well what y^e^ other had don at London. M^r^. Cushman answered, he had done nothing but what he was urged too, partly by y^e^ grounds of equity, and more espetialy by necessitie, other wise all had bene dasht and many undon. And in y^e^ begining he aquainted his felow agents here with, who consented unto him, and left it to him to execute, and to receive y^e^ money at London and send it downe to them at Hamton, wher they made y^e^ provissions; the which he accordingly did, though it was against his minde, & some of y^e^ marchants, y^t^ they were their made. And for giveing them notise at Leyden of this change, he could not well in regarde of y^e^ shortnes of y^e^ time; againe, he knew it would trouble them and hinder y^e^ bussines, which was already delayed overlong in regard of y^e^ season of y^e^ year, which he feared they would find to their cost. But these things gave not contente at presente. M^r^. Weston, likwise, came up from London to see them dispatcht and to have y^e^ conditions confirmed; but they refused, and answered him, that he knew right well that these were not according to y^e^ first agreemente, neither could they yeeld to them without y^e^ consente of the rest that were behind. And indeed they had spetiall charge when they came away, from the cheefe of those that

were behind, not to doe it. At which he was much offended, and tould them, they must then looke to stand on their owne leggs. So he returned in displeasure, and this was y^e^ first ground of discontent betweene them. And wheras ther wanted well near 100^li^. to clear things at their going away, he would not take order to disburse a penie, but let them shift as they could. [38] So they were forst to selle of some of their provissions to stop this gape, which was some 3. or 4. score firkins of butter, which comoditie they might best spare, haveing provided too large a quantitie of y^t^ kind. Then they write a leter to y^e^ marchants & adventures aboute y^e^ diferances concerning y^e^ conditions, as foloweth.

Aug. 3. An^o^: 1620.

Beloved freinds, sory we are that ther should be occasion of writing at all unto you, partly because we ever expected to see y^e^ most of you hear, but espetially because ther should any differance at all be conceived betweene us. But seing it faleth out that we cannot conferr togeather, we thinke it meete (though brefly) to show you y^e^ just cause & reason of our differing from those articles last made by Robart Cushman, without our comission or knowledg. And though he might propound good ends to himselfe, yet it no way justifies his doing it. Our maine diference is in y^e^ 5. & 9. article, concerning y^e^ deviding or holding of house and lands; the injoying wherof some of your selves well know, was one spetiall motive, amongst many other, to provoke us to goe. This was thought so reasonable, y^t^ when y^e^ greatest of you in adventure (whom we have much cause to respecte), when he

propounded conditions to us freely of his owne accorde, he set this downe for one; a coppy wherof we have sent unto you, with some additions then added by us; which being liked on both sids, and a day set for y^e^ paimente of moneys, those of Holland paid in theirs. After y^t^, Robart Cushman, M^r^. Peirce, & M^r^. Martine, brought them into a better forme, & write them in a booke now extante; and upon Robarts shewing them and delivering M^r^. Mullins a coppy therof under his hand (which we have), he payd in his money. And we of Holland had never seen other before our coming to Hamton, but only as one got for him selfe a private coppy of them; upon sight wherof we manyfested uter dislike, but had put of our estats & were ready to come, and therfore was too late to rejecte y^e^ vioage. Judge therfore we beseech you indiferently of things, and if a faulte have bene cōmited, lay it wher it is, & not upon us, who have more cause to stand for y^e^ one, then you have for y^e^ other. We never gave Robart Cushman comission to make any one article for us, but only sent him to receive moneys upon articles before agreed on, and to further y^e^ provissions till John Carver came, and to assiste him in it. Yet since you conceive your selves wronged as well as we, we thought meete to add a branch to y^e^ end of our 9. article, as will allmost heale that wound of it selfe, which you conceive to be in it. But that it may appeare to all men y^t^ we are not lovers of our selves only, but desire also y^e^ good & inriching of our freinds who have adventured your moneys with our persons, we have added our last article to y^e^ rest, promising you againe by leters in y^e^ behalfe of the whole company, that if large profits should not arise within y^e^ 7. years, y^t^ we will continue togeather longer with you, if y^e^ Lord give a blessing.* This we hope is sufficente to satisfie any in this case, espetialy freinds, since we are asured y^t^ if the whole charge was devided into 4. parts, 3. of them will

* It was well for them y^t^ this was not accepted.

not stand upon it, nether doe regarde it, &c. We are in shuch a streate at presente, as we are forced to sell away 60li. worth of our provissions to cleare ye Haven, & withall put our selves upon great extremities, scarce haveing any butter, no oyle, not a sole to mend a shoe, [39] nor every man a sword to his side, wanting many muskets, much armoure, &c. And yet we are willing to expose our selves to shuch eminente dangers as are like to insue, & trust to ye good providence of God, rather then his name & truth should be evill spoken of for us. Thus saluting all of you in love, and beseeching ye Lord to give a blesing to our endeavore, and keepe all our harts in ye bonds of peace & love, we take leave & rest,

Yours, &c.

Aug. 3. 1620.

It was subscribed with many names of ye cheefest of ye company.

At their parting Mr. Robinson write a leter to ye whole company, which though it hath already bene printed, yet I thought good here likwise to inserte it; as also a breefe leter writ at ye same time to Mr. Carver, in which ye tender love & godly care of a true pastor appears.

My dear Brother, — I received inclosed in your last leter ye note of information, wch I shall carefuly keepe & make use of as ther shall be occasion. I have a true feeling of your perplexitie of mind & toyle of body, but I hope that you who have allways been able so plentifully to administer comforte unto others in their trials, are so well furnished for your selfe as that farr greater difficulties then you have yet undergone (though I conceive them to have been great enough) cannot

oppresse you, though they press you, as y^e^ Aspostle speaks. The spirite of a man (sustained by y^e^ spirite of God) will sustaine his infirmitie, I dout not so will yours. And y^e^ beter much when you shall injoye y^e^ presence & help of so many godly & wise bretheren, for y^e^ bearing of part of your burthen, who also will not admitte into their harts y^e^ least thought of suspition of any y^e^ least negligence, at least presumption, to have been in you, what so ever they thinke in others. Now what shall I say or write unto you & your goodwife my loving sister? even only this, I desire (& allways shall) unto you from y^e^ Lord, as unto my owne soule; and assure your selfe y^t^ my harte is with you, and that I will not forslowe my bodily coming at y^e^ first oppertunitie. I have writen a large leter to y^e^ whole, and am sorie I shall not rather speak then write to them; & the more, considering y^e^ wante of a preacher, which I shall also make sume spurr to my hastening after you. I doe ever com̄end my best affection unto you, which if I thought you made any doubte of, I would express in more, & y^e^ same more ample & full words. And y^e^ Lord in whom you trust & whom you serve ever in this bussines & journey, guid you with his hand, protecte you with his winge, and shew you & us his salvation in y^e^ end, & bring us in y^e^ mean while togeather in y^e^ place desired, if shuch be his good will, for his Christs sake. Amen. Yours, &c.

July 27. 1620. Jo: R.

This was y^e^ last letter y^t^ M^r^. Carver lived to see from him. The other follows.

* Lovinge Christian friends, I doe hartily & in y^e^ Lord salute you all, as being they with whom I am presente in my best

* This letter is omitted in Governor Bradford's *Collection of Letters.*—*Prince.*

affection, and most ernest longings after you, though I be constrained for a while to be bodily absente from you. I say constrained, God knowing how willingly, & much rather then otherwise, I would have borne my part with you in this first brunt, were I not by strong necessitie held back for y^e^ present. Make accounte of me in y^e^ mean while, as of a man devided in my selfe with great paine, and as (naturall bonds set a side) having my beter parte with [40] you. And though I doubt not but in your godly wisdoms, you both foresee & resolve upon y^t^ which concerneth your presente state & condition, both severally & joyntly, yet have I thought it but my duty to add some furder spurr of provocation unto them, who rune allready, if not because you need it, yet because I owe it in love & dutie. And first, as we are daly to renew our repentance with our God, espetially for our sines known, and generally for our unknowne trespasses, so doth y^e^ Lord call us in a singuler maner upon occasions of shuch difficultie & danger as lieth upon you, to a both more narrow search & carefull reformation of your ways in his sight; least he, calling to remembrance our sines forgotten by us or unrepented of, take advantage against us, & in judgmente leave us for y^e^ same to be swalowed up in one danger or other; wheras, on the contrary, sine being taken away by ernest repentance & y^e^ pardon therof from y^e^ Lord sealed up unto a mans conscience by his spirite, great shall be his securitie and peace in all dangers, sweete his comforts in all distresses, with hapie deliverance from all evill, whether in life or in death.

Now next after this heavenly peace with God & our owne consciences, we are carefully to provide for peace with all men what in us lieth, espetially with our associats, & for y^t^ watchfullnes must be had, that we neither at all in our selves doe give, no nor easily take offence being given by others. Woe be unto y^e^ world for offences, for though it be necessarie (considering y^e^ malice of Satan & mans corruption) that offences

come, yet woe unto y^{e} man or woman either by whom y^{e} offence cometh, saith Christ, Mat. 18. 7. And if offences in y^{e} unseasonable use of things in them selves indifferent, be more to be feared then death itselfe, as y^{e} Apostle teacheth, 1. Cor. 9. 15. how much more in things simply evill, in which neither honour of God nor love of man is thought worthy to be regarded. Neither yet is it sufficiente y^{t} we keepe our selves by y^{e} grace of God from giveing offence, exepte withall we be armed against y^{e} taking of them when they be given by others. For how unperfect & lame is y^{e} work of grace in y^{t} person, who wants charritie to cover a multitude of offences, as y^{e} scriptures speake. Neither are you to be exhorted to this grace only upon y^{e} comone grounds of Christianitie, which are, that persons ready to take offence, either wante charitie, to cover offences, of wisdome duly to waigh humane frailtie; or lastly, are grosse, though close hipocrites, as Christ our Lord teacheth, Mat. 7. 1, 2, 3, as indeed in my owne experience, few or none have bene found which sooner give offence, then shuch as easily take it; neither have they ever proved sound & profitable members in societies, which have nurished this touchey humor. But besids these, ther are diverse motives provoking you above others to great care & conscience this way: As first, you are many of you strangers, as to y^{e} persons, so to y^{e} infirmities one of another, & so stand in neede of more watchfullnes this way, least when shuch things fall out in men & women as you suspected not, you be inordinatly affected with them; which doth require at your hands much wisdome & charitie for y^{e} covering & preventing of incident offences that way. And lastly, your intended course of civill comunitie will minister continuall occasion of offence, & will be as fuell for that fire, excepte you dilligently quench it with brotherly forbearance. And if taking of offence causlesly or easilie at mens doings be so carefuly to be avoyded, how much more heed is to be taken y^{t} we take not offence at God him

selfe, which yet we certainly doe so oftē as we doe murmure at his providence in our crosses, or beare impatiently shuch afflictions as wherwith he pleaseth to visite us. Store up therfore patience against y^e^ evill day, without which we take offence at y^e^ Lord him selfe in his holy & just works.

A 4. thing ther is carfully to be provided for, to witte, that with your comone imployments you joyne comone affections truly bente upon y^e^ generall good, avoyding as a deadly [41] plague of your both comone & spetiall comfort all retiredes of minde for proper advantage, and all singularly affected any maner of way; let every man represe in him selfe & y^e^ whol body in each person, as so many rebels against y^e^ comone good, all private respects of mens selves, not sorting with y^e^ generall conveniencie. And as men are carfull not to have a new house shaken with any violence before it be well setled & y^e^ parts firmly knite, so be you, I beseech you, brethren, much more carfull, y^t^ the house of God which you are, and are to be, be not shaken with unnecessarie novelties or other oppositions at y^e^ first setling therof.

Lastly, wheras you are become a body politik, using amongst your selves civill govermente, and are not furnished with any persons of spetiall eminencie above y^e^ rest, to be chosen by you into office of goverment, let your wisdome & godlines appeare, not only in chusing shuch persons as doe entirely love and will promote y^e^ comone good, but also in yeelding unto them all due honour & obedience in their lawfull administrations; not behoulding in them y^e^ ordinarinesse of their persons, but Gods ordinance for your good, not being like y^e^ foolish multitud who more honour y^e^ gay coate, then either y^e^ vertuous minde of y^e^ man, or glorious ordinance of y^e^ Lord. But you know better things, & that y^e^ image of y^e^ Lords power & authoritie which y^e^ magistrate beareth, is honourable, in how meane persons soever. And this dutie you both may y^e^ more willingly

and ought y^e^ more conscionably to performe, because you are at least for y^e^ present to have only them for your ordinarie governours, which your selves shall make choyse of for that worke.

Sundrie other things of importance I could put you in minde of, and of those before mentioned, in more words, but I will not so farr wrong your godly minds as to thinke you heedless of these things, ther being also diverce among you so well able to admonish both them selves & others of what concerneth them. These few things therfore, & y^e^ same in few words, I doe ernestly comend unto your care & conscience, joyning therwith my daily incessante prayers unto y^e^ Lord, y^t^ he who hath made y^e^ heavens & y^e^ earth, y^e^ sea and all rivers of waters, and whose providence is over all his workes, espetially over all his dear children for good, would so guide & gard you in your wayes, as inwardly by his Spirite, so outwardly by y^e^ hand of his power, as y^t^ both you & we also, for & with you, may have after matter of praising his name all y^e^ days of your and our lives. Fare you well in him in whom you trust, and in whom I rest.

An unfained wellwiller of your hapie
success in this hopefull voyage,

JOHN ROBINSON.

This letter, though large, yet being so frutfull in it selfe, and suitable to their occation, I thought meete to inserte in this place.

All things being now ready, & every bussines dispatched, the company was caled togeather, and this letter read amongst them, which had good acceptation with all, and after fruit with many. Then they ordered & distributed their company for either shipe, as they

conceived for y^e^ best. And chose a Gov^r^ & 2. or 3. assistants for each shipe, to order y^e^ people by y^e^ way, and see to y^e^ dispossing of there provissions, and shuch like affairs. All which was not only with y^e^ liking of y^e^ maisters of y^e^ ships, but according to their desires. Which being done, they sett sayle from thence aboute y^e^ 5. of August; but what befell them further upon y^e^ coast of England will appeare in y^e^ nexte chapter.

The 8. Chap.

Off the troubls that befell them on the coaste, and at sea being forced, after much trouble, to leave one of ther ships & some of their companie behind them.

[42] Being thus put to sea they had not gone farr, but M^r^. Reinolds y^e^ m^r^. of y^e^ leser ship complained that he found his ship so leak as he durst not put further to sea till she was mended. So y^e^ m^r^. of y^e^ biger ship (caled M^r^. Jonas) being consulted with, they both resolved to put into Dartmouth & have her ther searched & mended, which accordingly was done, to their great charg & losse of time and a faire winde. She was hear thorowly searcht from steme to sterne, some leaks were found & mended, and now it was conceived by the workmen & all, that she was sufficiente, & they might proceede without either fear or danger. So with good hopes from hence, they put to sea againe, conceiving they should goe comfortably

on, not looking for any more lets of this kind; but it fell out otherwise, for after they were gone to sea againe above 100. leagues without the Lands End, houlding company togeather all this while, the m^{r}. of y^{e} small ship complained his ship was so leake as he must beare up or sinke at sea, for they could scarce free her with much pumping. So they came to consultation againe, and resolved both ships to bear up backe againe & put into Plim̄oth, which accordingly was done. But no spetiall leake could be founde, but it was judged to be y^{e} generall weaknes of y^{e} shipe, and that shee would not prove sufficiente for the voiage. Upon which it was resolved to dismise her & parte of y^{e} companie, and proceede with y^{e} other shipe. The which (though it was greevous, & caused great discouragmente) was put in execution. So after they had tooke out such provission as y^{e} other ship could well stow, and concluded both what number and what persons to send bak, they made another sad parting, y^{e} one ship going backe for London, and y^{e} other was to proceede on her viage. Those that went bak were for the most parte such as were willing so to doe, either out of some discontente, or feare they conceived of y^{e} ill success of y^{e} vioage, seeing so many croses befale, & the year time so farr spente; but others, in regarde of their owne weaknes, and charge of many yonge children, were thought least usefull, and most unfite to bear y^{e} brunte of this hard adventure; unto

which worke of God, and judgmente of their brethern, they were contented to submite. And thus, like Gedions armie, this small number was devided, as if y^e^ Lord by this worke of his providence thought these few to many for y^e^ great worke he had to doe. But here by the way let me show, how afterward it was found y^t^ the leaknes of this ship was partly by being over masted, and too much pressed with sayles; for after she was sould & put into her old trime, she made many viages & performed her service very sufficiently, to y^e^ great profite of her owners. But more espetially, by the cuning & deceite of y^e^ m^r^. & his company, who were hired to stay a whole year in y^e^ cuntrie, and now fancying dislike & fearing wante of victeles, they ploted this strategem to free them selves; as afterwards was knowne, & by some of them confessed. For they apprehended y^t^ the greater ship, being of force, & in whom most of y^e^ provissions were stowed, she would retayne enough for her selfe, what soever became of them or y^e^ passengers; & indeed shuch speeches had bene cast out by some of them; and yet, besids other incouragments, y^e^ cheefe of them that came from Leyden wente in this shipe to give y^e^ m^r^. contente. But so strong was self love & his fears, as he forgott all duty and [43] former kindnesses, & delt thus falsly with them, though he pretended otherwise. Amongest those that returned was M^r^. Cushman & his familie, whose hart & courage was gone from them before, as it seems,

though his body was with them till now he departed; as may appear by a passionate letter he write to a freind in London from Dartmouth, whilst y^e^ ship lay ther a mending; the which, besids y^e^ expressions of his owne fears, it shows much of y^e^ providence of God working for their good beyonde man's expectation, & other things concerning their condition in these streats. I will hear relate it. And though it discover some infirmities in him (as who under temtation is free), yet after this he continued to be a spetiall instrumente for their good, and to doe y^e^ offices of a loving freind & faithfull brother unto them, and pertaker of much cómforte with them.

The letter is as followth.

To his loving friend Ed: S.* at Henige House in y^e^ Duks Place, these, &c.

Dartmouth, Aug. 17.

Loving friend, my most kind remembrance to you & your wife, with loving E. M. &c. whom in this world I never looke to see againe. For besids y^e^ eminente dangers of this viage, which are no less then deadly, an infirmitie of body hath ceased me, which will not in all lic^e^lyhoode leave me till death. What to call it I know not, but it is a bundle of lead, as it were, crushing my harte more & more these 14. days, as that allthough I doe y^e^ acctions of a liveing man, yet I am but as dead; but y^e^ will of God be done. Our pinass will not cease leaking, els I thinke we had been halfe way at Virginia, our viage hither hath been as full of crosses, as our selves have been of crokednes. We put in hear to trim̄e her, & I

* In Governor Bradford's *Collection of Letters*, this is Edward Southworth.—*Prince.*

thinke, as others also, if we had stayed at sea but 3. or 4. howers more, shee would have sunke right downe. And though she was twise trimmed at Hamton, yet now shee is open and leakie as a seive; and ther was a borde, a man might have puld of with his fingers, 2 foote longe, wher y^e^ water came in as at a mole hole. We lay at Hamton 7. days, in fair weather, waiting for her, and now we lye hear waiting for her in as faire a wind as can blowe, and so have done these 4. days, and are like to lye 4. more, and by y^t^ time y^e^ wind will happily turne as it did at Hampton. Our victualls will be halfe eaten up, I thinke, before we goe from the coaste of England, and if our viage last longe, we shall not have a months victialls when we come in y^e^ countrie. Neare 700^li^. hath bene bestowed at Hampton, upon what I know not. M^r^. Martin saith he neither can nor will give any accounte of it, and if he be called upon for accounts he crieth out of unthankfullnes for his paines & care, that we are susspitious of him, and flings away, & will end nothing. Also he so insultēh over our poore people, with shuch scorne & contempte, as if they were not good enough to wipe his shoes. It would break your hart to see his dealing,* and y^e^ mourning of our people. They complaine to me, & alass! I can doe nothing for them; if I speake to him, he flies in my face, as mutinous, and saith no complaints shall be heard or received but by him selfe, and saith they are forwarde, & waspish, discontented people, & I doe ill to hear them. Ther are others y^t^ would lose all they have put in, or make satisfaction for what they have had, that they might departe; but he will not hear them, nor suffer them to goe ashore, least they should rune away. The sailors also are so offended at his ignorante bouldnes, in medling & controuling in things he knows not what belongs too, as y^t^ some threaten to misscheefe him, others say they will leave y^e^ shipe

* He was governour in y^e^ biger ship, & M^r^. Cushman assistante.

& goe their way. But at y^e^ best this cometh of it, y^t^ he maks him selfe a scorne & laughing stock unto them. As for M^r^. Weston, excepte grace doe greatly swaye with him, he will hate us ten times more then ever he loved us, for not confirming y^e^ conditions. But now, since some pinches have taken them, they begine to reveile y^e^ trueth, & say M^r^. Robinson was in y^e^ falte who charged them never to consente to those conditions, nor chuse me into office, but indeede apointed them to chose them they did chose.* But he & they will rue too late, they may [44] now see, & all be ashamed when it is too late, that they were so ignorante, yea, & so inordinate in their courses. I am sure as they were resolved not to seale those conditions, I was not so resolute at Hampton to have left y^e^ whole bussines, excepte they would seale them, & better y^e^ vioage to have bene broken of then, then to have brought such miserie to our selves, dishonour to God, & detrimente to our loving freinds, as now it is like to doe. 4. or 5. of y^e^ cheefe of them which came from Leyden, came resolved never to goe on those conditions. And M^r^. Martine, he said he never received no money on those conditions, he was not beholden to y^e^ marchants for a pine, they were bloudsuckers, & I know not what. Simple man, he indeed never made any conditions w^th^ the marchants, nor ever spake with them. But did all that money flie to Hampton, or was it his owne? Who will goe & lay out money so rashly & lavishly as he did, and never know how he comes by it, or on what conditions? 2^ly^. I tould him of y^e^ alteration longe agoe, & he was contente; but now he dominires, & said I had betrayed them into y^e^ hands of slaves; he is not beholden to them, he can set out 2. ships him selfe to a viage. When, good man? He hath but 50^li^. in, & if he should give up his accounts he would not have a penie left him, as I am persuaded,† &c. Freind, if ever we make a

* I thinke he was deceived in these things.

† This was found true afterward.

plantation, God works a mirakle; especially considering how scante we shall be of victualls, and most of all ununited amongst our selves, & devoyd of good tutors & regimente. Violence will break all. Wher is y^e^ meek & humble spirite of Moyses? & of Nehemiah who reedified y^e^ wals of Jerusalem, & y^e^ state of Israell? Is not y^e^ sound of Rehoboams braggs daly hear amongst us? Have not y^e^ philosophers and all wise men observed y^t^, even in setled co̅mone welths, violente governours bring either them selves, or people, or boath, to ruine; how much more in y^e^ raising of co̅mone wealths, when y^e^ morter is yet scarce tempered y^t^ should bind y^e^ wales. If I should write to you of all things which promiscuously forerune our ruine, I should over charge my weake head and greeve your tender hart; only this, I pray you prepare for evill tidings of us every day. But pray for us instantly, it may be y^e^ Lord will be yet entreated one way or other to make for us. I see not in reason how we shall escape even y^e^ gasping of hunger starved persons; but God can doe much, & his will be done. It is better for me to dye, then now for me to bear it, which I doe daly, & expecte it howerly; haveing received y^e^ sentance of death, both within me & without me. Poore William King & my selfe doe strive * who shall be meate first for y^e^ fishes; but we looke for a glorious resurrection, knowing Christ Jesus after y^e^ flesh no more, but looking unto y^e^ joye y^t^ is before us, we will endure all these things and accounte them light in comparison of y^t^ joye we hope for. Remember me in all love to our freinds as if I named them, whose praiers I desire ernestly, & wish againe to see, but not till I can with more comforte looke them in y^e^ face. The Lord give us that true comforte which none can take from us. I had a desire to make a breefe relation of our estate to some freind.

* In the manuscript it is "strive dayly," but a pen has been drawn through the latter word.

I doubte not but your wisdome will teach you seasonably to utter things as here after you shall be called to it. That which I have writen is treue, & many things more which I have forborne. I write it as upon my life, and last confession in England. What is of use to be spoken [45] of presently, you may speake of it, and what is fitt to conceile, conceall. Pass by my weake maner, for my head is weake, & my body feeble, y^e^ Lord make me strong in him, & keepe both you & yours.

Your loving freind,

ROBART CUSHMAN.

Dartmouth, Aug. 17. 1620.

These being his conceptions & fears at Dartmouth, they must needs be much stronger now at Plimoth.

The 9. Chap.

Of their vioage, & how they passed y^e^ sea, and of their safe arrivall at Cape Codd.

SEPT^R^: 6. These troubls being blowne over, and now all being compacte togeather in one shipe,* they put to sea againe with a prosperus winde, which continued diverce days togeather, which was some incouragmente unto them; yet according to y^e^ usuall maner many were afflicted with sea-sicknes. And I may not omite hear a spetiall worke of Gods providence. Ther was a proud & very profane yonge man, one of y^e^ sea-men, of a lustie, able body, which made him the

* For Governor Bradford's list of passengers in the Mayflower, see Appendix, No. I.

more hauty; he would allway be contemning y^e^ poore people in their sicknes, & cursing them dayly with greēous execrations, and did not let to tell them, that he hoped to help to cast halfe of them over board before they came to their jurneys end, and to make mery with what they had; and if he were by any gently reproved, he would curse and swear most bitterly. But it plased God before they came halfe seas over, to smite this yong man with a greeveous disease, of which he dyed in a desperate maner, and so was him selfe y^e^ first y^t^ was throwne overbord. Thus his curses light on his owne head; and it was an astonishmente to all his fellows, for they noted it to be y^e^ just hand of God upon him.

After they had injoyed faire winds and weather for a season, they were incountred many times with crosse winds, and mette with many feirce stormes, with which y^e^ shipe was shroudly shaken, and her upper works made very leakie; and one of the maine beames in y^e^ midd ships was bowed & craked, which put them in some fear that y^e^ shipe could not be able to performe y^e^ vioage. So some of y^e^ cheefe of y^e^ company, perceiveing y^e^ mariners to feare y^e^ suffisiencie of y^e^ shipe, as appeared by their mutterings, they entred into serious consulltation with y^e^ m^r^. & other officers of y^e^ ship, to consider in time of y^e^ danger; and rather to returne then to cast them selves into a desperate & inevitable perill. And truly ther was

great distraction & differance of opinion amongst y^e^ mariners them selves; faine would they doe what could be done for their wages sake, (being now halfe the seas over,) and on y^e^ other hand they were loath to hazard their lives too desperatly. But in examening of all opinions, the m^r^. & others affirmed they knew y^e^ ship to be stronge & firme under water; and for the buckling of y^e^ maine beame, ther was a great iron scrue y^e^ passengers brought out of Holland, which would raise y^e^ beame into his place; y^e^ which being done, the carpenter & m^r^. affirmed that with a post put under it, set firme in y^e^ lower deck, & otherways bounde, he would make it sufficiente. And as for y^e^ decks & uper workes they would calke them as well as they could, and though with y^e^ workeing of y^e^ ship they [46] would not longe keepe stanch, yet ther would otherwise be no great danger, if they did not overpress her with sails. So they comited them selves to y^e^ will of God, & resolved to proseede. In sundrie of these stormes the winds were so feirce, & y^e^ seas so high, as they could not beare a knote of saile, but were forced to hull, for diverce days togither. And in one of them, as they thus lay at hull, in a mighty storme, a lustie yonge man (called John Howland) coming upon some occasion above y^e^ grattings, was, with a seele of y^e^ shipe throwne into [y^e^] sea; but it pleased God y^t^ he caught hould of y^e^ top-saile halliards, which hunge over board, & rane out at

length; yet he held his hould (though he was sundrie fadomes under water) till he was hald up by y^e^ same rope to y^e^ brime of y^e^ water, and then with a boat hooke & other means got into y^e^ shipe againe, & his life saved; and though he was something ill with it, yet he lived many years after, and became a profitable member both in church & co̅mone wealthe. In all this viage ther died but one of y^e^ passengers, which was William Butten, a youth, servant to Samuell Fuller, when they drew near y^e^ coast. But to omite other things, (that I may be breefe,) after longe beating at sea they fell with that land which is called Cape Cod; the which being made & certainly knowne to be it, they were not a litle joyfull. After some deliberation had amongst them selves & with y^e^ m^r^. of y^e^ ship, they tacked aboute and resolved to stande for y^e^ southward (y^e^ wind & weather being faire) to finde some place aboute Hudsons river for their habitation. But after they had sailed y^t^ course aboute halfe y^e^ day, they fell amongst deangerous shoulds and roring breakers, and they were so farr intangled ther with as they conceived them selves in great danger; & y^e^ wind shrinking upon them withall, they resolved to bear up againe for the Cape, and thought them selves hapy to gett out of those dangers before night overtooke them, as by Gods providence they did. And y^e^ next day they gott into y^e^ Cape-harbor wher they ridd in saftie. A word or too by y^e^ way of this cape; it was

thus first named by Capten Gosnole & his company,* An°: 1602, and after by Capten Smith was caled Cape James; but it retains y^e^ former name amongst seamen. Also y^t^ pointe which first shewed those dangerous shoulds unto them, they called Pointe Care, & Tuckers Terrour; but y^e^ French & Dutch to this day call it Malabarr, by reason of those perilous shoulds, and y^e^ losses they have suffered their.

Being thus arived in a good harbor and brought safe to land, they fell upon their knees & blessed y^e^ God of heaven, who had brought them over y^e^ vast & furious ocean, and delivered them from all y^e^ periles & miseries therof, againe to set their feete on y^e^ firme and stable earth, their proper elemente. And no marvell if they were thus joyefull, seeing wise Seneca was so affected with sailing a few miles on y^e^ coast of his owne Italy; as he affirmed,† that he had rather remaine twentie years on his way by land, then pass by sea to any place in a short time; so tedious & dreadfull was y^e^ same unto him.

But hear I cannot but stay and make a pause, and stand half amased at this poore peoples presente condition; and so I thinke will the reader too, when he well considers [47] y^e^ same. Being thus passed y^e^ vast ocean, and a sea of troubles before in their preparation (as may be remembred by y^t^ which wente before), they had now no freinds to wellcome them,

* Because y^ey^ tooke much of y^t^ fishe ther.

† Epist: 53.

nor inns to entertaine or refresh their weatherbeaten bodys, no houses or much less townes to repaire too, to seeke for succoure. It is recorded in scripture * as a mercie to y^e^ apostle & his shipwraked company, y^t^ the barbarians shewed them no smale kindnes in refreshing them, but these savage barbarians, when they mette with them (as after will appeare) were readier to fill their sids full of arrows then otherwise. And for y^e^ season it was winter, and they that know y^e^ winters of y^t^ cuntrie know them to be sharp & violent, & subjecte to cruell & feirce stormes, deangerous to travill to known places, much more to serch an unknown coast. Besids, what could they see but a hidious & desolate wildernes, full of wild beasts & willd men? and what multituds ther might be of them they knew not. Nether could they, as it were, goe up to y^e^ 'tope of Pisgah, to vew from this willdernes a more goodly cuntrie to feed their hops; for which way soever they turnd their eys (save upward to y^e^ heavens) they could have litle solace or content in respecte of any outward objects. For sum̄er being done, all things stand upon them with a wetherbeaten face; and y^e^ whole countrie, full of woods & thickets, represented a wild & savage heiw. If they looked behind them, ther was y^e^ mighty ocean which they had passed, and was now as a maine barr & goulfe to seperate them from all y^e^

* Act. 28.

civill parts of y^e^ world. If it be said they had a ship to sucour them, it is trew; but what heard they daly from y^e^ m^r^. & company? but y^t^ with speede they should looke out a place with their shallop, wher they would be at some near distance; for y^e^ season was shuch as he would not stirr from thence till a safe harbor was discovered by them wher they would be, and he might goe without danger; and that victells consumed apace, but he must & would keepe sufficient for them selves & their returne. Yea, it was muttered by some, that if they gott not a place in time, they would turne them & their goods ashore & leave them. Let it also be considred what weake hopes of supply & succoure they left behinde them, y^t^ might bear up their minds in this sade condition and trialls they were under; and they could not but be very smale. It is true, indeed, y^e^ affections & love of their brethren at Leyden was cordiall & entire towards them, but they had litle power to help them, or them selves; and how y^e^ case stode betweene them & y^e^ marchants at their coming away, hath allready been declared. What could now sustaine them but y^e^ spirite of God & his grace? May not & ought not the children of these fathers rightly say: *Our faithers were Englishmen which came over this great ocean, and were ready to perish in this willdernes;**

* Deu: 26, 5, 7.

*but they cried unto y^e^ Lord, and he heard their voyce, and looked on their adversitie, &c. Let them therfore praise y^e^ Lord, because he is good, & his mercies endure for ever.** *Yea, let them which have been redeemed of y^e^ Lord, shew how he hath delivered them from y^e^ hand of y^e^ oppressour. When they wandered in y^e^ deserte willdernes out of y^e^ way, and found no citie to dwell in, both hungrie, & thirstie, their sowle was overwhelmed in them. Let them confess before y^e^ Lord his loving kindnes, and his wonderfull works before y^e^ sons of men.*

The 10. Chap.

Showing how they sought out a place of habitation, and what befell them theraboute.

[48] Being thus arrived at Cap-Cod y^e^ 11. of November, and necessitie calling them to looke out a place for habitation, (as well as the maisters & mariners importunitie,) they having brought a large shalop with them out of England, stowed in quarters in y^e^ ship, they now gott her out & sett their carpenters to worke to trime her up; but being much brused & shatered in y^e^ shipe w^th^ foule weather, they saw she would be longe in mending. Wherupon a few of them tendered them selves to goe by land and discovere those nearest places, whilst y^e^ shallop was in mending; and y^e^ rather because as they wente into

* 107 Psa: v. 1, 2, 4, 5, 8.

y^t^ harbor ther seemed to be an opening some 2. or 3 leagues of, which y^e^ maister judged to be a river. It was conceived ther might be some danger in y^e^ attempte, yet seeing them resolute, they were permited to goe, being 16. of them well armed, under y^e^ conduct of Captain Standish, having shuch instructions given them as was thought meete. They sett forth y^e^ 15. of Nove^br^: and when they had marched aboute y^e^ space of a mile by y^e^ sea side, they espied 5. or 6. persons with a dogg coming towards them, who were salvages; but they fled from them, & rañe up into y^e^ woods, and y^e^ English followed them, partly to see if they could speake with them, and partly to discover if ther might not be more of them lying in ambush. But y^e^ Indeans seeing them selves thus followed, they againe forsooke the woods, & rane away on y^e^ sands as hard as they could, so as they could not come near them, but followed them by y^e^ tracte of their feet sundrie miles, and saw that they had come the same way. So, night coming on, they made their randevous & set out their sentinels, and rested in quiete *y^t^ night*, and the next morning followed their tracte till they had headed a great creake, & so left the sands, & turned an other way into y^e^ woods. But they still followed them by geuss, hopeing to find their dwellings; but they soone lost both them & them selves, falling into shuch thickets as were ready to tear their cloaths & armore in peeces,

but were most distresed for wante of drinke. But at length they found water & refreshed them selves, being y^e^ first New-England water they drunke of, and was now in thir great thirste as pleasante unto them as wine or bear had been in for-times. Afterwards they directed their course to come to y^e^ other [49] shore, for they knew it was a necke of land they were to crosse over, and so at length gott to y^e^ sea-side, and marched to this supposed river, & by y^e^ way found a pond of clear fresh water, and shortly after a good quantitie of clear ground wher y^e^ Indeans had formerly set corne, and some of their graves. And proceeding furder they saw new-stuble wher corne had been set y^e^ same year, also they found wher latly a house had been, wher some planks and a great ketle was remaining, and heaps of sand newly padled with their hands, which they, digging up, found in them diverce faire Indean baskets filled with corne, and some in eares, faire and good, of diverce collours, which seemed to them a very goodly sight, (haveing never seen any shuch before). This was near y^e^ place of that supposed river they came to seeck; unto which they wente and found it to open it selfe into 2. armes with a high cliffe of sand in y^e^ enterance, but more like to be crikes of salte water then any fresh, for ought they saw; and that ther was good harborige for their shalope; leaving it further to be discovered by their shalop when she was ready. So their time

limeted them being expired, they returned to y^e^ ship, least they should be in fear of their saftie; and tooke with them parte of y^e^ corne, and buried up y^e^ rest, and so like y^e^ men from Eshcoll carried with them of y^e^ fruits of y^e^ land, & showed their breethren; of which, & their returne, they were marvelusly glad, and their harts incouraged.

After this, y^e^ shalop being got ready, they set out againe for y^e^ better discovery of this place, & y^e^ m^r^. of y^e^ ship desired to goe him selfe, so ther went some 30. men, but found it to be no harbor for ships but only for boats; ther was allso found 2. of their houses covered with matts, & sundrie of their implements in them, but y^e^ people were rune away & could not be seen; also ther was found more of their corne, & of their beans of various collours. The corne & beans they brought away, purposing to give them full satisfaction when they should meete with any of them (as about some 6. months afterward they did, to their good contente). And here is to be noted a spetiall providence of God, and a great mercie to this poore people, that hear they gott seed to plant them corne y^e^ next year, or els they might have starved, for they had none, nor any liklyhood to get any [50] till y^e^ season had beene past (as y^e^ sequell did manyfest). Neither is it lickly they had had this, if y^e^ first viage had not been made, for the ground was now all covered

with snow, & hard frozen. But the Lord is never wanting unto his in their greatest needs; let his holy name have all y^e^ praise.

The month of November being spente in these affairs, & much foule weather falling in, the 6. *of Desem^r^:* they sente out their shallop againe with 10. of their principall men, & some sea men, upon further discovery, intending to circulate that deepe bay of Cap-codd. The weather was very could, & it frose so hard as y^e^ sprea of y^e^ sea lighting on their coats, they were as if they had been glased; yet *that night* betimes they gott downe into y^e^ botome of y^e^ bay, and as they drue nere y^e^ shore they saw some 10. or 12. Indeans very busie aboute some thing. They landed aboute a league or 2. from them, and had much a doe to put a shore any wher, it lay so full of flats. Being landed, it grew late, and they made them selves a barricade with loggs & bowes as well as they could in y^e^ time, & set out their sentenill & betooke them to rest, and saw y^e^ smoake of y^e^ fire y^e^ savages made y^t^ night. When *morning* was come they devided their company, some to coaste along y^e^ shore in y^e^ boate, and the rest marched throw y^e^ woods to see y^e^ land, if any fit place might be for their dwelling. They came allso to y^e^ place wher they saw the Indans y^e^ night before, & found they had been cuting up a great fish like a grampus, being some 2. inches thike of fate like a hogg, some peeces wher of they had left

by y^e^ way; and y^e^ shallop found 2. more of these fishes dead on y^e^ sands, a thing usuall after storms in y^t^ place, by reason of y^e^ great flats of sand that lye of. So they ranged up and doune all y^t^ day, but found no people, nor any place they liked. When y^e^ sune grue low, they hasted out of y^e^ woods to meete with their shallop, to whom they made signes to come to them into a *creeke* hardby, the which they did at highwater; of which they were very glad, for they had not seen each other all y^t^ day, since y^e^ morning. So they made them a barricado (as usually they did every night) with loggs, staks, & thike pine bowes, y^e^ height of a man, leaving it open to leeward, partly to shelter them from y^e^ could & wind (making their fire in y^e^ midle, & lying round aboute it), and partly to defend them from any sudden assaults of y^e^ savags, if they should surround them. So being very weary, they betooke them to rest. But aboute *midnight*, [51] they heard a hideous & great crie, and their sentinell caled, "Arme, arme"; so they bestired them & stood to their armes, & shote of a cupple of moskets, and then the noys seased. They concluded it was a companie of wolves, or such like willd beasts; for one of y^e^ sea men tould them he had often heard shuch a noyse in New-found land. So they rested till about 5. of y^e^ clock in the *morning;* for y^e^ tide, & ther purposs to goe from thence, made them be stiring betimes. So after praier they prepared for breakfast, and it being

day dawning, it was thought best to be carring things downe to y^e^ boate. But some said it was not best to carrie y^e^ armes downe, others said they would be the readier, for they had laped them up in their coats from y^e^ dew. But some 3. or 4. would not cary theirs till they wente them selves, yet as it fell out, y^e^ water being not high enough, they layed them downe on y^e^ banke side, & came up to breakfast. But presently, all on y^e^ sudain, they heard a great & strange crie, which they knew to be the same voyces they heard in y^e^ night, though they varied their notes, & one of their company being abroad came runing in, & cried, "Men, Indeans, Indeans"; and w^th^all, their arowes came flying amongst them. Their men rane with all speed to recover their armes, as by y^e^ good providence of God they did. In y^e^ mean time, of those that were ther ready, tow muskets were discharged at them, & 2. more stood ready in y^e^ enterance of ther randevoue, but were comanded not to shoote till they could take full aime at them; & y^e^ other 2. charged againe with all speed, for ther were only 4. had armes ther, & defended y^e^ baricado which was first assalted. The crie of y^e^ Indeans was dreadfull, espetially when they saw ther men rune out of y^e^ randevoue towourds y^e^ shallop, to recover their armes, the Indeans wheeling aboute upon them. But some ruñing out with coats of malle on, & cutlasses in their hands, they soone got their armes, & let flye

amongs them, and quickly stopped their violence. Yet ther was a lustie man, and no less valiante, stood behind a tree within halfe a musket shot, and let his arrows flie at them. He was seen shoot 3. arrowes, which were all avoyded. He stood 3. shot of a musket, till one taking full aime at him, and made y^e^ barke or splinters of y^e^ tree fly about his ears, after which he gave an extraordinary shrike, and away they wente all of them. They left some to keep y^e^ shalop, and followed them aboute a quarter of a mille, and shouted once or twise, and shot of 2. or 3. peces, & so returned. This they did, that they might conceive that they were not [52] affrade of them or any way discouraged. Thus it pleased God to vanquish their enimies, and give them deliverance; and by his spetiall providence so to dispose that not any one of them were either hurte, or hitt, though their arrows came close by them, & on every side them, and sundry of their coats, which hunge up in y^e^ barricado, were shot throw & throw. Aterwards they gave God sollamne thanks & praise for their deliverance, & gathered up a bundle of their arrows, & sente them into England afterward by y^e^ m^r^. of y^e^ ship, and called that place y^e^ first encounter. From hence they departed, & costed all along, but discerned no place likly for harbor; & therfore hasted to a place that their pillote, (one M^r^. Coppin who had bine in y^e^ cuntrie before) did assure them was a good

harbor, which he had been in, and they might fetch it before night; of which they were glad, for it begane to be foule weather. After some houres sailing, it begane to snow & raine, & about y^e^ midle of y^e^ afternoone, y^e^ wind increased, & y^e^ sea became very rough, and they broake their rudder, & it was as much as 2. men could doe to steere her with a cupple of oares. But their pillott bad them be of good cheere, for he saw y^e^ harbor; but y^e^ storme increasing, & night drawing on, they bore what saile they could to gett in, while they could see. But herwith they broake their mast in 3. peeces, & their saill fell over bord, in a very grown sea, so as they had like to have been cast away; yet by Gods mercie they recovered them selves, & having y^e^ floud with them, struck into y^e^ harbore. But when it came too, y^e^ pillott was deceived in y^e^ place, and said, y^e^ Lord be mercifull unto them, for his eys never saw y^t^ place before; & he & the m^r^. mate would have rune her ashore, in a cove full of breakers, before y^e^ winde. But a lusty seaman which steered, bad those which rowed, if they were men, about with her, or ells they were all cast away; the which they did with speed. So he bid them be of good cheere & row lustly, for ther was a faire sound before them, & he doubted not but they should find one place or other wher they might ride in saftie. And though it was *very darke*, and rained sore, yet in y^e^ end they gott under y^e^ lee

of a smalle iland, and remained ther all y^t^ night in saftie. But they knew not this to be an iland till morning, but were devided in their minds; some would keepe y^e^ boate for fear they might be amongst y^e^ Indians; others were so weake and could, they could not endure, but got a shore, & with much adoe got fire, (all things being so wett,) and y^e^ rest were glad to come to them; for after midnight y^e^ wind shifted to the [53] north-west, & it frose hard. But though this had been a day & night of much trouble & danger unto them, yet God gave them a *morning* of comforte & refreshing (as usually he doth to his children), for y^e^ next day was a faire sunshinīg day, and they found them sellvs to be on an iland secure from y^e^ Indeans, wher they might drie their stufe, fixe their peeces, & rest them selves, and gave God thanks for his mercies, in their manifould deliverances. And this being the *last day of y^e^ weeke*, they prepared ther to keepe y^e^ *Sabath*. On *Munday* they sounded y^e^ harbor, and founde it fitt for shipping; and marched into y^e^ land, & found diverse cornfeilds, & litle runing brooks, a place (as they supposed) fitt for situation; at least it was y^e^ best they could find, and y^e^ season, & their presente necessitie, made them glad to accepte of it. So they returned to their shipp againe with this news to y^e^ rest of their people, which did much comforte their harts.

On y^e^ 15. *of Desem^r^:* they wayed anchor to goe to y^e^ place they had discovered, & came within 2. leagues of it, but were faine to bear up againe; but y^e^ 16. *day* y^e^ winde came faire, and they arrived safe in this harbor. And after wards tooke better view of y^e^ place, and resolved wher to pitch their dwelling; and y^e^ 25. *day* began to erecte y^e^ first house for c̄mone use to receive them and their goods.

The 2. Booke.

THE rest of this History (if God give me life, & opportunitie) I shall, for brevitis sake, handle by way of *annalls*, noteing only the heads of principall things, and passages as they fell in order of time, and may seeme to be profitable to know, or to make use of. And this may be as y^e^ 2. Booke.

The remainder of An°: 1620.

I SHALL a litle returne backe and begine with a combination made by them before they came ashore, being y^e^ first foundation of their govermente in this place; occasioned partly by y^e^ discontented & mutinous speeches that some of the strangers amongst them had let fall from them in y^e^ ship — That when they came a shore they would use their owne libertie; for none had power to comand them, the patente they had being for Virginia, and not for New-england, which belonged to an other Goverment, with which y^e^ Virginia Company had nothing to doe. And partly that shuch an [54] acte by them done (this their condition considered) might be as firme as any patent, and in some respects more sure.

The forme was as followeth.

In y^e^ name of God, Amen. We whose names are underwriten, the loyall subjects of our dread soveraigne Lord, King James, by y^e^ grace of God, of Great Britaine, Franc, & Ireland king, defender of y^e^ faith, &c., haveing undertaken, for y^e^ glorie of God, and advancemente of y^e^ Christian faith, and honour of our king & countrie, a voyage to plant y^e^ first colonie in y^e^ Northerne parts of Virginia, doe by these presents solemnly & mutualy in y^e^ presence of God, and one of another, covenant & combine our selves togeather into a civill body politick, for our better ordering & preservation & furtherance of y^e^ ends aforesaid; and by vertue hearof to enacte, constitute, and frame such just & equall lawes, ordinances, acts, constitutions, & offices, from time to time, as shall be thought most meete & convenient for y^e^ generall good of y^e^ Colonie, unto which we promise all due submission and obedience. In witnes wherof we have hereunder subscribed our names at Cap-Codd y^e^ 11. of November, in y^e^ year of y^e^ raigne of our soveraigne lord, King James, of England, France, & Ireland y^e^ eighteenth, and of Scotland y^e^ fiftie fourth. An^o^: Dom. 1620.

After this they chose, or rather confirmed, M^r^. John Carver (a man godly & well approved amongst them) their Governour for that year. And after they had provided a place for their goods, or comone store, (which were long in unlading for want of boats, foulnes of winter weather, and sicknes of diverce,) and begune some small cottages for their habitation, as time would admitte, they mette and consulted of lawes & orders, both for their civill & military Govermente, as y^e^ necessitie of their condition did require, still adding therunto as urgent occasion in severall times, and as cases did require.

fecte by them done (this their condition considered) might be as firme as any patent; and in some respects more sure. The forme was as followeth.

In ye name of god Amen. We whose names are underwriten the loyall subiects of our dread soueraigne Lord King Iames, by ye grace of god, of great Britaine, franc, & Ireland king, defendor of ye faith, &t

Haueing undertaken, for ye glorie of god, and aduancemente of ye christian faith and honour of our king & countrie, a voyage to plant ye first Colonie in ye Northerne parts of Virginia. Doe by these presents solemnly & mutualy in ye presence of god, and one of another, Couenant, & Combine our selues togeather into a Ciuill body politick, for our better ordering, & preseruation & furtherance of ye ends aforsaid; and by vertue hearof to enacte, constitute, and frame such just & equall lawes, ordinances, Acts, constitutions, & offices, from time to time, as shall be thought most meete & conuenient for ye generall good of ye Colonie: Unto which we promise all due submission and obedience. In witnes wher of we haue hereunder subscribed our names at Cap= Codd ye .11. of Nouember, in ye year of ye raigne of our soueraigne Lord king Iames of England, france, & Ireland ye eighteen, and of Scotland ye fifti fourth An: Dom. 1620.

After this they chose, or rather confirmed mr John caruer (a man godly & well approued amongst them) their gouernour for that yeare. And after they had prouided a place for their goods, or comone store, (which were long in unlading for want of boats, foulnes of ye winter weather, and sickines of diuers) and begune some small cottages for their habitation; as time would admitt they met and consulted of lawes, & ordors, both for their ciuill & military gouerment, as ye necessitie of their condition did require, still adding thereunto as vrgent occasion in seuerall times, and as cases did require.

In these hard & difficulte beginings they found some discontents & murmurings arise amongst some, and mutinous speeches & carriags in other; but they were soone quelled, & ouercome, by ye wisdome, patience, and iust & equall carrage of things, by ye gou: and better part with claue faithfully togeather in ye maine. But that which was most sadd, & lamentable, was, that in 2. or 3. monthe time halfe of their company died, especially in Jan: & february, being ye depth of winter, and wanting houses & other comforts; being vnfitted with ye scorvie &

In these hard & difficulte beginings they found some discontents & murmurings arise amongst some, and mutinous speeches & carriags in other; but they were soone quelled & overcome by y^e^ wisdome, patience, and just & equall carrage of things by y^e^ Gov^r^ and better part, w^ch^ clave faithfully togeather in y^e^ maine. But that which was most sadd & lamentable was, that in 2. or 3. moneths time halfe of their company dyed, espetialy in Jan: & February, being y^e^ depth of winter, and wanting houses & other comforts; being infected with y^e^ scurvie & [55] other diseases, which this long vioage & their inacomodate condition had brought upon them; so as ther dyed some times 2. or 3. of a day, in y^e^ foresaid time; that of 100. & odd persons, scarce 50. remained. And of these in y^e^ time of most distres, ther was but 6. or 7. sound persons, who, to their great comendations be it spoken, spared no pains, night nor day, but with abundance of toyle and hazard of their owne health, fetched them woode, made them fires, drest them meat, made their beads, washed their lothsome cloaths, cloathed & uncloathed them; in a word, did all y^e^ homly & necessarie offices for them w^ch^ dainty & quesie stomacks cannot endure to hear named; and all this willingly & cherfully, without any grudging in y^e^ least, shewing herein their true love unto their freinds & bretheren. A rare example & worthy to be remembred. Tow of these 7. were M^r^. William

Brewster, ther reverend Elder, & Myles Standish, ther Captein & military comander, unto whom my selfe, & many others, were much beholden in our low & sicke condition. And yet the Lord so upheld these persons, as in this generall calamity they were not at all infected either with sicknes, or lamnes. And what I have said of these, I may say of many others who dyed in this generall vissitation, & others yet living, that whilst they had health, yea, or any strength continuing, they were not wanting to any that had need of them. And I doute not but their recompence is with y^e^ Lord.

But I may not hear pass by an other remarkable passage not to be forgotten. As this calamitie fell among y^e^ passengers that were to be left here to plant, and were hasted a shore and made to drinke water, that y^e^ sea-men might have y^e^ more bear, and one * in his sicknes desiring but a small cann of beere, it was answered, that if he were their owne father he should have none; the disease begane to fall amongst them also, so as allmost halfe of their company dyed before they went away, and many of their officers and lustyest men, as y^e^ boatson, gunner, 3. quarter-maisters, the cooke, & others. At w^ch^ y^e^ m^r^. was something strucken and sent to y^e^ sick a shore and tould y^e^ Gov^r^ he should send for beer for them that had need of it, though he drunke water

* Which was this author him selfe.

homward bound. But now amongst his company [56] ther was farr another kind of carriage in this miserie then amongst y^e^ passengers; for they that before had been boone companions in drinking & joyllity in y^e^ time of their health & wellfare, begane now to deserte one another in this calamitie, saing they would not hasard ther lives for them, they should be infected by coming to help them in their cabins, and so, after they came to dye by it, would doe litle or nothing for them, but if they dyed let them dye. But shuch of y^e^ passengers as were yet abord shewed them what mercy they could, w^ch^ made some of their harts relente, as y^e^ boatson (& some others), who was a prowd yonge man, and would often curse & scofe at y^e^ passengers; but when he grew weak, they had compassion on him and helped him; then he confessed he did not deserve it at their hands, he had abused them in word & deed. O! saith he, you, I now see, shew your love like Christians indeed one to another, but we let one another lye & dye like doggs. Another lay cursing his wife, saing if it had not ben for her he had never come this unlucky viage, and anone cursing his felows, saing he had done this & that, for some of them, he had spente so much, & so much, amongst them, and they were now weary of him, and did not help him, having need. Another gave his companion all he had, if he died, to help him in his weaknes; he went and got a litle spise

& made him a mess of meat once or twise, and because he dyed not so soone as he expected, he went amongst his fellows, & swore y^e^ rogue would cousen him, he would see him choaked before he made him any more meate; and yet y^e^ pore fellow dyed before morning.

All this while y^e^ Indians came skulking about them, and would sometimes show them selves aloofe of, but when any aproached near them, they would rune away. And once they stoale away their tools wher they had been at worke, & were gone to diner. But about y^e^ 16. *of March* a certaine Indian came bouldly amongst them, and spoke to them in broken English, which they could well understand, but marvelled at it. At length they understood by discourse with him, that he was not of these parts, but belonged to y^e^ eastrene parts, wher some English-ships came to fhish, with whom he was aquainted, & could name sundrie of them by their names, amongst whom he had gott his language. He became proftable to them [57] in aquainting them with many things concerning y^e^ state of y^e^ cuntry in y^e^ east-parts wher he lived, which was afterwards profitable unto them; as also of y^e^ people hear, of their names, number, & strength; of their situation & distance from this place, and who was cheefe amongst them. His name was *Samaset;* he tould them also of another Indian whos name was *Squanto*, a native of this place, who had been in Eng-

land & could speake better English then him selfe. Being, after some time of entertainmente & gifts, dismist, a while after he came againe, & 5. more with him, & they brought againe all y^e^ tooles that were stolen away before, and made way for y^e^ coming of their great Sachem, called *Massasoyt;* who, about 4. *or* 5. *days after*, came with the cheefe of his freinds & other attendance, with the aforesaid *Squanto*. With whom, after frendly entertainment, & some gifts given him, they made a peace with him (which hath now continued this 24. years) in these terms.

1. That neither he nor any of his, should injurie or doe hurte to any of their peopl.

2. That if any of his did any hurte to any of theirs, he should send y^e^ offender, that they might punish him.

3. That if any thing were taken away from any of theirs, he should cause it to be restored; and they should doe y^e^ like to his.

4. If any did unjustly warr against him, they would aide him; if any did warr against them, he should aide them.

5. He should send to his neighbours confederats, to certifie them of this, that they might not wrong them, but might be likewise comprised in y^e^ conditions of peace.

6. That when ther men came to them, they should leave their bows & arrows behind them.

After these things he returned to his place caled *Sowams*, some 40. mile from this place, but *Squanto* contiũed with them, and was their interpreter, and was a spetiall instrument sent of God for their good beyond their expectation. He directed them how to set their corne, wher to take fish, and to procure other comodities, and was also their pilott to bring them to unknowne places for their profitt, and never left them till he dyed. He was a *native* [58] *of this place*, & scarce any left alive besids him selfe. He was caried away with diverce others by one *Hunt*, a m^r^. of a ship, who thought to sell them for slaves in Spaine; but he got away for England, and was entertained by a marchante in London, & imployed to New-found-land & other parts, & lastly brought hither into these parts by one M^r^. *Dermer*, a gentle-man imployed by S^r^. Ferdinando Gorges & others, for discovery, & other designes in these parts. Of whom I shall say some thing, because it is mentioned in a booke set forth An^o^: 1622. by y^e^ Presidente & Counsell for New-England,* that he made y^e^ peace betweene y^e^ salvages of these parts & y^e^ English; of which this plantation, as it is intimated, had y^e^ benefite. But what a peace it was, may apeare by what befell him & his men.

This M^r^. Dermer was hear the same year that these people came, as apears by a relation written by him,

* Page 17.

& given me by a freind, bearing date June 30. An°: 1620. And they came in Novemb^{r}: following, so ther was but 4. months differance. In which relation to his honored freind, he hath these passages of this very place.

I will first begine (saith he) wth that place from whence *Squanto*, or *Tisquantem*, was taken away; w^{ch} in Cap: *Smiths mape* is called *Plimoth:* and I would that Plimoth had y^{e} like comodities. I would that the first plantation might hear be seated, if ther come to the number of 50. persons, or upward. Otherwise at Charlton, because ther y^{e} savages are lese to be feared. The *Pocanawkits*, which live to y^{e} *west* of *Plimoth*, bear an inveterate malice to y^{e} English, and are of more streingth then all y^{e} savags from thence to Penobscote. Their desire of revenge was occasioned by an English man, who having many of them on bord, made a great slaughter with their murderers & smale shot, when as (they say) they offered no injurie on their parts. Whether they were English or no, it may be douted; yet they beleeve they were, for y^{e} Frenche have so possest them; for which cause *Squanto* can̄ot deney but they would have kiled me when I was at *Namasket*, had he not entreated hard for me. The soyle of y^{e} borders of [59] this great bay, may be compared to most of y^{e} plantations which I have seene in Virginia. The land is of diverce sorts; for *Patuxite* is a hardy but strong soyle, *Nawsel* & *Saughtughtett* are for y^{e} most part a blakish & deep mould, much like that wher groweth y^{e} best Tobaco in Virginia. In y^{e} botume of y^{t} great bay is store of Codd & basse, or mulett, &c.

But above all he comends *Pacanawkite* for y^{e} richest soyle, and much open ground fitt for English graine, &c.

Massachussets is about 9. leagues from *Plimoth*, & situate in y^e^ mids betweene both, is full of ilands & peninsules very fertill for y^e^ most parte.

With sundrie shuch relations which I forbear to transcribe, being now better knowne then they were to him.

He was taken prisoner by y^e^ Indeans at *Manamoiak* (a place not farr from hence, now well knowne). He gave them what they demanded for his liberty, but when they had gott what they desired, they kept him still & indevored to kill his men; but he was freed by seasing on some of them, and kept them bound till they gave him a cannows load of corne. Of which, see Purch: lib. 9. fol. 1778. But this was An^o^: 1619.

After y^e^ writing of y^e^ former relation he came to y^e^ Ile of *Capawack* (which lyes south of this place in y^e^ way to Virginia), and y^e^ foresaid *Squanto* w^th^ him, wher he going a shore amongst y^e^ Indans to trad, as he used to doe, was betrayed & assaulted by them, & *all his men slaine, but one that kept the boat;* but him selfe gott abord very sore wounded, & they had cut of his head upon y^e^ cudy of his boat, had not y^e^ man reskued him with a sword. And so they got away, & made shift to gett into Virginia, wher he dyed; whether of his wounds or y^e^ diseases of y^e^ cuntrie, or both togeather, is uncertaine. [60] By all which it may appeare how farr these people were from peace, and with what danger this plantation was

begune, save as y^e^ powerfull hand of the Lord did protect them. These things * were partly the reason why they kept aloofe & were so long before they came to the English. An other reason (as after them selvs made know̄) was how aboute 3. *years before*, a French-ship was cast away at *Cap-Codd*, but y^e^ men gott ashore, & saved their lives, and much of their victails, & other goods; but after y^e^ Indeans heard of it, they geathered togeather from these parts, and never left watching & dogging them till they got advantage, and *kild them all but* 3. *or* 4. which they kept, & sent from one Sachem to another, to make sporte with, and used them worse then slaves; (of which y^e^ foresaid M^r^. Dermer redeemed 2. of them;) and they conceived this ship was now come to revenge it.

Also, (as after was made knowne,) before they came to y^e^ English to make freindship, they gott all the *Powachs* of y^e^ cuntrie, for 3. days togeather, in a horid and divellish maner to curse & execrate them with their cunjurations, which asembly & service they held in a darke & dismale swampe.

But to returne. The spring now approaching, it pleased God the mortalitie begane to cease amongst them, and y^e^ sick and lame recovered apace, which put as it were new life into them; though they had borne their sadd affliction with much patience & con-

* *Thing* in the manuscript.

tentednes, as I thinke any people could doe. But it was y^e^ Lord which upheld them, and had beforehand prepared them; many having long borne y^e^ yoake, yea from their youth. Many other smaler maters I omite, sundrie of them having been allready published in a Jurnall made by one of y^e^ company; and some other passages of jurneys and relations allredy published, to which I referr those that are willing to know them more perticulerly. And being now come to y^e^ 25. of March I shall begine y^e^ year 1621.

[61] *Anno.* 1621.

THEY now begane to dispatch y^e^ ship away which brought them over, which lay tille aboute this time, or y^e^ begining of Aprill. The reason on their parts why she stayed so long, was y^e^ necessitie and danger that lay upon them, for it was well towards y^e^ ende of Desember before she could land any thing hear, or they able to receive any thing ashore. Afterwards, y^e^ 14. of Jan: the house which they had made for a generall randevoze by casulty fell afire, and some were faine to retire abord for shilter. Then the sicknes begane to fall sore amongst them, and y^e^ weather so bad as they could not make much sooner any dispatch. Againe, the Gov^r^ & cheefe of them, seeing so many dye, and fall downe sick dayly, thought it no wisdom to send away the ship, their condition considered, and y^e^ danger they stood in from y^e^ Indeans, till they

could procure some shelter; and therfore thought it better to draw some more charge upon them selves & freinds, then hazard all. The m^r^. and sea-men likewise, though before they hasted y^e^ passengers a shore to be goone, now many of their men being dead, & of y^e^ ablest of them, (as is before noted,) and of y^e^ rest many lay sick & weake, y^e^ m^r^. durst not put to sea, till he saw his men begine to recover, and y^e^ hart of winter over.

Afterwards they (as many as were able) began to plant ther corne, in which servise Squanto stood them in great stead, showing them both y^e^ maner how to set it, and after how to dress & tend it. Also he tould them excepte they gott fish & set with it (in these old grounds) it would come to nothing, and he showed them y^t^ in y^e^ midle of Aprill they should have store enough come up y^e^ brooke, by which they begane to build, and taught them how to take it, and wher to get other provissions necessary for them; all which they found true by triall & experience. Some English seed they sew, as wheat & pease, but it came not to good, eather by y^e^ badnes of y^e^ seed, or latenes of y^e^ season, or both, or some other defecte.

[62] In this month of *Aprill* whilst they were bussie about their seed, their Gov^r^ (M^r^. John Carver) came out of y^e^ feild very sick, it being a hott day; he complained greatly of his head, and lay downe, and within a few howers his sences failed, so as he never

spake more till he dyed, which was within a few days after. Whoss death was much lamented, and caused great heavines amongst them, as ther was cause. He was buried in y^e^ best maner they could, with some vollies of shott by all that bore armes; and his wife, being a weak woman, dyed within 5. or 6. weeks after him.

Shortly after William Bradford was chosen Gove^r^ in his stead, and being not yet recoverd of his ilnes, in which he had been near y^e^ point of death, Isaak Allerton was chosen to be an Asistante unto him, who, by renewed election every year, continued sundry years togeather, which I hear note once for all.

May 12. was y^e^ first mariage in this place, which, according to y^e^ laudable custome of y^e^ Low-Cuntries, in which they had lived, was thought most requisite to be performed by the magistrate, as being a civill thing, upon which many questions aboute inheritances doe depende, with other things most proper to their cognizans, and most consonante to y^e^ scripturs, Ruth 4. and no wher found in y^e^ gospell to be layed on y^e^ ministers as a part of their office. "This decree or law about mariage was published by y^e^ Stats of y^e^ Low-Cuntries An^o^: 1590. That those of any religion, after lawfull and open publication, coming before y^e^ magistrats, in y^e^ Town or Stat-house, were to be orderly (by them) maried one to another." Petets Hist. fol: 1029. And this practiss hath continued

amongst, not only them, but hath been followed by all y^e^ famous churches of Christ in these parts to this time, — An^o^: 1646.

Haveing in some sorte ordered their bussines at home, it was thought meete to send some abroad to see their new freind Massasoyet, and to bestow upon him some gratuitie to bind him y^e^ faster unto them; as also that hearby they might veiw y^e^ countrie, and see in what maner he lived, what strength he had aboute him, and how y^e^ ways were to his place, if at any time they should have occasion. So y^e^ 2. *of July* they sente M^r^. Edward Winslow & M^r^. Hopkins, with y^e^ foresaid Squanto for ther guid, who gave him a suite of cloaths, and a horsemans coate, with some other small things, which were kindly accepted; but they found but short comons, and came both weary & hungrie home. For y^e^ Indeans used then to have nothing [63] so much corne as they have since y^e^ English have stored them with their hows, and seene their industrie in breaking up new grounds therwith. *They found his place to be* 40. *miles from hence*, y^e^ soyle good, & y^e^ people not many, being dead & abundantly wasted in y^e^ late great mortalitie which fell in all these parts aboute *three years* before y^e^ coming of y^e^ English, wherin thousands of them dyed, they not being able to burie one another; ther sculs and bones were found in many places lying still above ground, where their houses & dwellings had been; a

very sad spectackle to behould. But they brought word that y^e^ Narighansets lived but on y^e^ other side of that great bay, & were a strong people, & many in number, living compacte togeather, & had not been at all touched with this wasting plague.

Aboute y^e^ *later end of this month*, one John Billington lost him selfe in y^e^ woods, & wandered up & downe some 5. days, living on beries & what he could find. At length he light on an Indean plantation, 20. mils south of this place, called *Manamet*, they conveid him furder of, to *Nawsett*, among those peopl that had before set upon y^e^ English when they were costing, whilest y^e^ ship lay at y^e^ Cape, as is before noted. But y^e^ Gove^r^ caused him to be enquired for among y^e^ Indeans, and at length Massassoyt sent word wher he was, and y^e^ Gove^r^ sent a shalop for him, & had him delivered. Those people also came and made their peace; and they gave full satisfaction to those whose corne they had found & taken when they were at Cap-Codd.

Thus ther peace & aquaintance was prety well establisht w^th^ the natives aboute them; and ther was an other Indean called *Hobamack* come to live amongst them, a proper lustie man, and a man of accounte for his vallour & parts amongst y^e^ Indeans, and continued very faithfull and constant to y^e^ English till he dyed. He & Squanto being gone upon bussines amonge y^e^ Indeans, at their returne (whether it was

out of envie to them or malice to the English) ther was a Sachem called Corbitant, alyed to Massassoyte, but never any good freind to y^e^ English to this day, mett with them at an Indean towne caled Namassakett 14. miles to y^e^ west of this place, and begane to quarell w^th^ [64] them, and offered to stabe Hobamack; but being a lusty man, he cleared him selfe of him, and came runing away all sweating and tould y^e^ Gov^r^ what had befalne him, and he feared they had killed Squanto, for they threatened them both, and for no other cause but because they were freinds to y^e^ English, and servisable unto them. Upon this y^e^ Gove^r^ taking counsell, it was conceivd not fitt to be borne; for if they should suffer their freinds & messengers thus to be wronged, they should have none would cleave unto them, or give them any inteligence, or doe them serviss afterwards; but nexte they would fall upon them selves. Whereupon it was resolved to send y^e^ Captaine & 14. men well armed, and to goe & fall upon them in y^e^ night; and if they found that Squanto was kild, to cut of Corbitants head, but not to hurt any but those that had a hand in it. Hobamack was asked if he would goe & be their guid, & bring them ther before day. He said he would, & bring them to y^e^ house wher the man lay, and show them which was he. So they set forth y^e^ 14. *of August*, and beset y^e^ house round; the Captin giving charg to let none pass out, entred y^e^ house to search

for him. But he was goone away that day, so they mist him; but understood y^t^ Squanto was alive, & that he had only threatened to kill him, & made an offer to stabe him but did not. So they withheld and did no more hurte, & y^e^ people came trembling, & brought them the best provissions they had, after they were aquainted by Hobamack what was only intended. Ther was 3. sore wounded which broak out of y^e^ house, and asaid to pass through y^e^ garde. These they brought home with them, & they had their wounds drest & cured, and sente home. After this they had many gratulations from diverce sachims, and much firmer peace; yea, those of y^e^ Iles of Capawack sent to make frendship; and this Corbitant him selfe used y^e^ mediation of Massassoyte to make his peace, but was shie to come neare them a longe while after.

After this, y^e^ 18. of Sepemb^r^: they sente out ther shalop to the Massachusets, with 10. men, and Squanto for their guid and [65] interpreter, to discover and veiw that bay, and trade with y^e^ natives; the which they performed, and found kind entertainement. The people were much affraid of y^e^ Tarentins, a people to y^e^ eastward which used to come in harvest time and take away their corne, & many times kill their persons. They returned in saftie, and brought home a good quanty of beaver, and made reporte of y^e^ place, wishing they had been ther seated; (but it seems y^e^ Lord,

who assignes to all men y^e^ bounds of their habitations, had apoynted it for an other use). And thus they found y^e^ Lord to be with them in all their ways, and to blesse their outgoings & incom̄ings, for which let his holy name have y^e^ praise for ever, to all posteritie.

They began now to gather in y^e^ small harvest they had, and to fitte up their houses and dwellings against winter, being all well recovered in health & strenght, and had all things in good plenty; for as some were thus imployed in affairs abroad, others were excersised in fishing, aboute codd, & bass, & other fish, of which y^ey^ tooke good store, of which every family had their portion. All y^e^ som̄er ther was no wante. And now began to come in store of foule, as winter aproached, of which this place did abound when they came first (but afterward decreased by degrees). And besids water foule, ther was great store of wild Turkies, of which they tooke many, besids venison, &c. Besids they had aboute a peck a meale a weeke to a person, or now since harvest, Indean corne to y^t^ proportion. Which made many afterwards write so largly of their plenty hear to their freinds in England, which were not fained, but true reports.

In Novemb^r^, about y^t^ time twelfe month that them selves came, ther came in a small ship to them unexpected or loked for,* in which came M^r^. Cushman (so much spoken of before) and with him 35. persons to

* She came y^e^ 9. to y^e^ Cap.

remaine & live in y^e^ plantation; which did not a litle rejoyce them. And they when they came a shore and found all well, and saw plenty of vitails in every house, were no less glade. For most of them were lusty yonge men, and many of them wild enough, who litle considered whither or aboute what they wente, till they came into y^e^ harbore at Cap-Codd, and ther saw nothing but a naked and barren place. They then begane to thinke what should become of them, if the people here were dead or cut of by y^e^ Indeans. They begane to consulte (upon some speeches that some of y^e^ sea-men had cast out) to take y^e^ sayls from y^e^ yeard least y^e^ ship [66] should gett away and leave them ther. But y^e^ m^r^. hereing of it, gave them good words, and tould them if any thing but well should have befallne y^e^ people hear, he hoped he had vitails enough to cary them to Virginia, and whilst he had a bitt they should have their parte; which gave them good satisfaction. So they were all landed; but ther was not so much as bisket-cake or any other victialls * for them, neither had they any beding, but some sory things they had in their cabins, nor pot, nor pan, to drese any meate in; nor overmany cloaths, for many of them had brusht away their coats & cloaks at Plimoth as they came. But ther was sent over some burching-lane suits in y^e^ ship, out of which they were supplied. The plantation was glad of this addition

* Nay, they were faine to spare y^e^ shipe some to carry her home.

of strenght, but could have wished that many of them had been of beter condition, and all of them beter furnished with provissions; but y^t^ could not now be helpte.

In this ship M^r^. Weston sent a large leter to M^r^. Carver, y^e^ late Gove^r^, now deseased, full of complaints & expostulations aboute former passagess at Hampton; and y^e^ keeping y^e^ shipe so long in y^e^ country, and returning her without lading, &c., which for brevitie I omite. The rest is as followeth.

Part of Mr. Westons letter.

I durst never aquainte y^e^ adventurers with y^e^ alteration of y^e^ conditions first agreed on betweene us, which I have since been very glad of, for I am well assured had they knowne as much as I doe, they would not have adventured a halfe-peny of what was necesary for this ship. That you sent no lading in the ship is wonderfull, and worthily distasted. I know you^r^ weaknes was the cause of it, and I beleeve more weaknes of judgmente, then weaknes of hands. A quarter of y^e^ time you spente in discoursing, arguing, & consulting, would have done much more; but that is past, &c. If you mean, bona fide, to performe the conditions agreed upon, doe us y^e^ favore to coppy them out faire, and subscribe them with y^e^ principall of your names. And likwise give us accounte as perticulerly as you can how our moneys were laid out. And then I shall be able to give them some satisfaction, whom I am now forsed with good words to shift of. And consider that y^e^ life of the bussines depends on y^e^ lading of this ship, which, if you doe to any good purpose, that I may be freed from y^e^ great sums I have disbursed for y^e^ former, and must doe for the later, *I promise*

you I will never quit y^e bussines, though all the other adventurers should.

[67] We have procured you a Charter, the best we could, which is beter then your former, and with less limitation. For any thing y^t is els worth writting, M^r. Cushman can informe you. I pray write instantly for M^r. Robinson to come to you. And so praying God to blesse you with all graces nessessary both for this life & that to come, I rest

Your very loving frend,

THO. WESTON.

London, July 6. 1621.

This ship (caled y^e Fortune) was speedily dispatcht away, being laden with good clapbord as full as she could stowe, and 2. hoggsheads of beaver and otter skins, which they gott with a few trifling comodities brought with them at first, being alltogeather unprovided for trade; neither was ther any amongst them that ever saw a beaver skin till they came hear, and were informed by Squanto. The fraight was estimated to be worth near 500^li. M^r. Cushman returned backe also with this ship, for so Mr. Weston & y^e rest had apoynted him, for their better information. And he doubted not, nor them selves neither, but they should have a speedy supply; considering allso how by M^r. Cushmans perswation, and letters received from Leyden, wherin they willed them so to doe, they yeelded * to y^e afforesaid conditions, and subscribed them with their hands. But it proved other wise, for M^r. Wes-

* *Yeeled* in the manuscript.

ton, who had made y^t large promise in his leter, (as is before noted,) that if all y^e rest should fall of, yet he would never quit y^e bussines, but stick to them, if they yeelded to y^e conditions, and sente some lading in y^e ship; and of this M^r. Cushman was confident, and confirmed y^e same from his mouth, & serious protestations to him selfe before he came. But all proved but wind, for he was y^e first and only man that forsooke them, and that before he so much as heard of y^e returne of this ship, or knew what was done; (so vaine is y^e confidence in man.) But of this more in its place.

A leter in answer to his write to M^r. Carver, was sente to him from y^e Gov^r, of which so much as is pertenente to y^e thing in hand I shall hear inserte.

S^r: Your large letter writen to M^r. Carver, and dated y^e 6. of July, 1621, I have received y^e 10. of Novemb^r, wherin (after y^e apologie made for your selfe) you lay many heavie imputations upon him and us all. Touching him, he is departed this life, and now is at rest [68] in y^e Lord from all those troubls and incoumbrances with which we are yet to strive. He needs not my appologie; for his care and pains was so great for y^e commone good, both ours and yours, as that therwith (it is thought) he oppressed him selfe and shortened his days; of whose loss we cannot sufficiently complaine. At great charges in this adventure, I confess you have beene, and many losses may sustaine; but y^e loss of his and many other honest and industrious mens lives, cannot be vallewed at any prise. Of y^e one, ther may be hope of recovery, but y^e other no recompence can make good. But I will not in-

siste in generalls, but come more perticulerly to y^e^ things them selves. You greatly blame us for keping y^e^ ship so long in y^e^ countrie, and then to send her away emptie. She lay 5. weks at Cap-Codd, whilst with many a weary step (after a long journey) and the indurance of many a hard brunte, we sought out in the foule winter a place of habitation. Then we went in so tedious a time to make provission to sheelter us and our goods, aboute w^ch^ labour, many of our armes & leggs can tell us to this day we were not necligent. But it pleased God to vissite us then, with death dayly, and with so generall a disease, that the living were scarce able to burie the dead; and y^e^ well not in any measure sufficiente to tend y^e^ sick. And now to be so greatly blamed, for not fraighting y^e^ ship, doth indeed goe near us, and much discourage us. But you say you know we will pretend weaknes; and doe you think we had not cause? Yes, you tell us you beleeve it, but it was more weaknes of judgmente, then of hands. Our weaknes herin is great we confess, therfore we will bear this check patiently amongst y^e^ rest, till God send us wiser men. But they which tould you we spent so much time in discoursing & consulting, &c., their harts can tell their toungs, they lye. They cared not, so they might salve their owne sores, how they wounded others. Indeed, it is our callamitie that we are (beyound expectation) yoked with some ill conditioned people, who will never doe good, but corrupte and abuse others, &c.

The rest of y^e^ letter declared how they had subscribed those conditions according to his desire, and sente him y^e^ former accounts very perticulerly; also how y^e^ ship was laden, and in what condition their affairs stood; that y^e^ coming of these [69] people would bring famine upon them unavoydably, if they had not supply in time (as M^r^. Cushman could more

fully informe him & y^e^ rest of y^e^ adventurers). Also that seeing he was now satisfied in all his demands, that offences would be forgoten, and he remember his promise, &c.

After y^e^ departure of this ship, (which stayed not above 14. days,) the Gove^r^ & his assistante haveing disposed these late comers into severall families, as y^ey^ best could, tooke an exacte accounte of all their provissions in store, and proportioned y^e^ same to y^e^ number of persons, and found that it would not hould out above 6. months at halfe alowance, and hardly that. And they could not well give less this winter time till fish came in againe. So they were presently put to half alowance, one as well as an other, which begane to be hard, but they bore it patiently under hope of supply.

Sone after this ships departure, y^e^ great people of y^e^ Narigansets, in a braving maner, sente a messenger unto them with a bundl of arrows tyed aboute with a great sneak-skine; which their interpretours tould them was a threatening & a chaleng. Upon which y^e^ Gov^r^, with y^e^ advice of others, sente them a round answere, that if they had rather have warre then peace, they might begine when they would; they had done them no wrong, neither did y^ey^ fear them, or should they find them unprovided. And by another messenger sente y^e^ sneake-skine back with bulits in it; but they would not receive it, but sent it back againe. But

these things I doe but mention, because they are more at large allready put forth in printe, by Mr. Winslow, at ye requeste of some freinds. And it is like ye reason was their owne ambition, who, (since ye death of so many of ye Indeans,) thought to dominire & lord it over ye rest, & conceived ye English would be a barr in their way, and saw that Massasoyt took sheilter allready under their wings.

But this made them ye more carefully to looke to them selves, so as they agreed to inclose their dwellings with a good strong pale, and make flankers in convenient places, with gates to shute, which were every night locked, and a watch kept, and when neede required ther was also warding in ye day time. And ye company was by ye Captaine and ye Govr [70] advise, devided into 4. squadrons, and every one had ther quarter apoynted them, unto which they were to repaire upon any suddane alarme. And if ther should be any crie of fire, a company were appointed for a gard, with muskets, whilst others quenchet ye same, to prevent Indean treachery. This was accomplished very cherfully, and ye towne impayled round by ye beginning of March, in which evry family had a prety garden plote secured. And herewith I shall end this year. Only I shall remember one passage more, rather of mirth then of waight. One ye day called Chrismas-day, ye Govr caled them out to worke, (as was used,) but ye most of this new-company excused them selves

and said it wente against their consciences to work on y^t^ day. So y^e^ Gov^r^ tould them that if they made it mater of conscience, he would spare them till they were better informed. So he led-away y^e^ rest and left them; but when they came home at noone from their worke, he found them in y^e^ streete at play, openly; some pitching y^e^ barr, & some at stoole-ball, and shuch like sports. So he went to them, and tooke away their implements, and tould them that was against his conscience, that they should play & others worke. If they made y^e^ keeping of it mater of devotion, let them kepe their houses, but ther should be no gameing or revelling in y^e^ streets. Since which time nothing hath been atempted that way, at least openly.

Anno 1622.

At y^e^ spring of y^e^ year they had apointed y^e^ Massachusets to come againe and trade with them, and began now to prepare for that vioag about y^e^ later end of March. But upon some rumors heard, Hobamak, their Indean, tould them upon some jealocies he had, he feared they were joyned w^th^ y^e^ Narighansets and might betray them if they were not carefull. He intimated also some jealocie of Squanto, by what he gathered from some private whisperings betweene him and other Indeans. But [71] they resolved to proseede, and sente out their shalop with 10. of their cheefe men aboute y^e^ begining of Aprill, and both Squanto

& Hobamake with them, in regarde of y^e^ jelocie betweene them. But they had not bene gone longe, but an Indean belonging to Squantos family came runing in seeming great fear, and tould them that many of y^e^ Narihgansets, with Corbytant, and he thought also Massasoyte, were coming against them; and he gott away to tell them, not without danger. And being examined by y^e^ Gov^r^, he made as if they were at hand, and would still be looking back, as if they were at his heels. At which the Gov^r^ caused them to take armes & stand on their garde, and supposing y^e^ boat to be still within hearing (by reason it was calme) caused a warning peece or 2. to be shote of, the which y^ey^ heard and came in. But no Indeans apeared; watch was kepte all night, but nothing was seene. Hobamak was confidente for Massasoyt, and thought all was false; yet y^e^ Gov^r^ caused him to send his wife privatly, to see what she could observe (pretening other occasions), but ther was nothing found, but all was quiet. After this they proseeded on their vioge to y^e^ Massachusets, and had good trade, and returned in saftie, blessed be God.

But by the former passages, and other things of like nature, they begane to see y^t^ Squanto sought his owne ends, and plaid his owne game, by putting y^e^ Indeans in fear, and drawing gifts from them to enrich him selfe; making them beleeve he could stur up warr against whom he would, & make peece for whom

he would. Yea, he made them beleeve they kept y^e^ plague buried in y^e^ ground, and could send it amongs whom they would, which did much terrifie the Indeans, and made them depend more on him, and seeke more to him then to Massasoyte, which proucured him envie, and had like to have cost him his life. For after y^e^ discovery of his practises, Massasoyt sought it both privatly and openly; which caused him to stick close to y^e^ English, & never durst goe from them till he dyed. They also made good use of y^e^ emulation y^t^ grue betweene Hobamack and him, which made them cary more squarely. And y^e^ Gov^r^ seemed to countenance y^e^ one, and y^e^ Captaine y^e^ other, by which they had better intelligence, and made them both more diligente.

[72] Now in a maner their provissions were wholy spent, and they looked hard for supply, but none came. But about y^e^ *later end of May*, they spied *a boat* at sea, which at first they thought had beene some Frenchman; but it proved a shalop which came from a ship which M^r^. Weston & an other had set out a fishing, at a place called Damarins-cove, 40. leagues to y^e^ eastward of them, wher were y^t^ year many more ships come a fishing. This boat brought 7. passengers and some letters, but no vitails, nor any hope of any. Some part of which I shall set downe.

M^r^. Carver, in my last leters by y^e^ Fortune, in whom M^r^. Cushman wente, and who I hope is with you, for we daly

expecte y^e^ shipe back againe. She departed hence, y^e^ beginning of July, with 35. persons, though not over well provided with necesaries, by reason of y^e^ parsemonie of y^e^ adventurers.* I have solisited them to send you a supply of men and provissions before shee come. They all answer they will doe great maters, when they hear good news. Nothing before; so faithfull, constant, & carefull of your good, are your olde & honest freinds, that if they hear not from you, they are like to send you no supplie, &c. I am now to relate y^e^ occasion of sending *this ship*, hoping if you give credite to my words, you will have a more favourable opinion of it, then some hear, wherof Pickering is one, who taxed me to mind my owne ends, which is in part true, &c. *M^r^. Beachamp and my selfe* bought *this litle ship*, and have set her out, partly, if it may be, to uphold † y^e^ plantation, as well to doe others good as our selves; and partly to gett up what we are formerly out; though we are otherwise censured, &c. This is y^e^ occasion we have sent *this ship* and these passengers, on our owne accounte; whom we desire you will frendly entertaine & supply with shuch necesaries as you cane spare, and they wante, &c. And among other things we pray you lend or sell them some seed corne, and if you have y^e^ salt remaining of y^e^ last year, that y^u^ will let them have it for their presente use, and we will either pay you for it, or give you more when we have set our salt-pan to worke, which we desire may be set up in one of y^e^ litle ilands in your bay, &c. And because we intende, if God plase, [73] (and y^e^ generallitie doe it not,) *to send within a month another shipe*, who, having discharged her passengers, *shal goe to Virginia*, &c. And it may be we shall send a *small ship to abide with you* on y^e^ coast, which I conceive may be a great help to y^e^ plantation. To y^e^ end our desire may be effected, which, I assure my selfe, will be also for your good, we pray you give them entertainmente in your houses y^e^ time they shall be with

* *Adventures* in the manuscript.

† I know not w^ch^ way.

you, that they may lose no time, but may presently goe in hand to fell trees & cleave them, to y^e^ end lading may be ready and our ship stay not.

Some of y^e^ adventurers have sent you hearwith all some directions for your furtherance in y^e^ comone bussines, who are like those S^t^. James speaks of, y^t^ bid their brother eat, and warme him, but give him nothing; so they bid you make salt, and uphold y^e^ plantation, but send you no means wherwithall to doe it, &c. By *y^e^ next* we purpose *to send more people on our owne accounte*, and *to take a patente;* that if your peopl should be as unhumane as some of y^e^ adventurers, not to admite us to dwell with them, which were extreme barbarisme, and which will never enter into my head to thinke you have any shuch Pickerings amongst you. Yet to satisfie our passengers I must of force doe it; and for some other reasons not necessary to be writen, &c. I find y^e^ generall so backward, and your freinds at Leyden so could, that I fear you must stand on your leggs, and trust (as they say) to God and your selves.

Subscribed,

your loving freind,

Jan: 12. 1621. THO: WESTON.

Sundry other things I pass over, being tedious & impertinent.

All this was but could comfort to fill their hungrie bellies, and a slender performance of his former late promiss; and as litle did it either fill or warme them, as those y^e^ Apostle James spake of, by him before mentioned. And well might it make them remember what y^e^ psalmist saith, Psa. 118. 8. *It is better to trust in the Lord, then to have confidence in man.* And Psa. 146. *Put not you trust in princes* (much less in y^e^

marchants) *nor in y^e sone of man, for ther is no help in them.* v. 5. *Blesed is he that hath y^e God of Jacob for his help, whose hope is in y^e Lord his God.* And as they were now fayled of suply by him and others in this their greatest neede and wants, which was caused by him and y^e rest, who put so great a company of men upon them, as y^e former company were, without any food, and came at shuch a time as they must live almost a whole year before any could [74] be raised, excepte they had sente some; so, upon y^e pointe they never had any supply of vitales more afterwards (but what the Lord gave them otherwise); for all y^e company sent at any time was allways too short for those people y^t came with it.

Ther came allso *by y^e same ship* other leters, but of later date, one from M^r. Weston, an other from a parte of y^e adventurers, as foloweth.

M^r. Carver, since my last, to y^e end we might y^e more readily proceed to help y^e generall, at a meeting of some of y^e principall adventurers, a proposition was put forth, & alowed by all presente (save Pickering), to adventure each man y^e third parte of what he formerly had done. And ther are some other y^t folow his example, and will adventure no furder. In regard wherof y^e greater part of y^e adventurers being willing to uphold y^e bussines, finding it no reason that those y^t are willing should uphold y^e bussines of those that are unwilling, whose backwardnes doth discourage those that are forward, and hinder other new-adventurers from coming in, we having well considered therof, have resolved, according to an article in y^e

agreemente, (*that it may be lawfull by a generall consente of y^e^ adventurers & planters, upon just occasion, to breake of their joynte stock,*) to breake it of; and doe pray you to ratifie, and confirme y^e^ same on your parts. Which being done, we shall y^e^ more willingly goe forward for y^e^ upholding of you with all things necesarie. But in any case you must agree to y^e^ artickls, and send it by y^e^ first under your hands & seals. So I end

Your loving freind,

THO: WESTON.

Jan: 17. 1621.

Another leter was write from part of y^e^ company of y^e^ adventurers to the same purpose, and subscribed with 9. of their names, wherof M^r^. Westons & M^r^. Beachamphs were tow. Thes things seemed strang unto them, seeing this unconstancie & shufling; it made them to thinke ther was some misterie in y^e^ matter. And therfore y^e^ Gov^r^ concealed these letters from y^e^ publick, only imparted them to some trustie freinds for advice, who concluded with him, that this tended to disband & scater them (in regard of their straits); and if M^r^. Weston & others, who seemed to rune in a perticuler way, should come over with shiping so provided as his letters did intimate, they most would fall to him, to y^e^ prejudice of them selves & y^e^ rest of the adventurers,* their freinds, from whom as yet they heard nothing. And it was doubted whether he had not sente [75] over shuch a company in y^e^ former

* *Adventures* in the manuscript.

ship, for shuch an end. Yet they tooke compassion of those 7. men which *this ship, which fished to y^e^ eastward, had kept till planting time was over,* and so could set no corne; and allso wanting vitals, (for y^ey^ turned them off w^th^out any, and indeed wanted for them selves,) neither was their salt-pan come, so as y^ey^ could not performe any of those things which M^r^. Weston had apointed, and might have starved if y^e^ plantation had not succoured them; who, in their wants, gave them as good as any of their owne. *The ship wente to Virginia,* wher they sould both ship & fish, of which (it was conceived) M^r^. Weston had a very slender accounte.

After this came another of his ships, and brought letters dated y^e^ 10. of Aprill, from M^r^. Weston, as followeth.

M^r^. Bradford, these, &c. *The Fortune* is arived, of whose good news touching your estate & proceëings, I am very glad to hear. And how soever he was robed on y^e^ way by y^e^ Frenchmen, yet I hope your loss will not be great, for y^e^ conceite of so great a returne doth much animate y^e^ adventurers, so y^t^ I hope some matter of importance will be done by them, &c. As for my selfe, I have sould my adventure & debts unto them, so as I am quit* of you, & you of me, for that matter, &c. Now though I have nothing to pretend as an adventurer amongst you, yet I will advise you a litle for your good, if you can apprehend it. I perceive & know as well as another, y^e^ dispositions of *your adventurers*, whom y^e^ hope of gaine hath

* See how his promiss is fulfild.

drawne on to this they have done; and yet I fear y^t^ hope will not draw them much furder. Besids, *most of them are against y^e^ sending of them of Leyden, for whose cause this bussines was first begune*, and some of y^e^ most religious (as M^r^. Greene by name) excepts against them. So y^t^ my advice is (you may follow it if you please) that you forthwith break of your joynte stock, which you have warente to doe, both in law & conscience, for y^e^ most parte of y^e^ adventurers have given way unto it by a former letter. And y^e^ means you have ther, which I hope will be to some purpose by y^e^ trade of this spring, may, with y^e^ help of some freinds hear, bear y^e^ charge of trāsporting those of Leyden; and when they are with you I make no question but by Gods help you will be able to subsist of your selves. But I shall leave you to your discretion.

I desired diverce of y^e^ adventurers, as M^r^. Peirce, M^r^. Greene, & others, if they had any thing to send you, either vitails or leters, to send them *by these ships;* and marvelling they sent not so much as a letter, I asked our passengers what leters they had, and with some dificultie one of them tould me he had one, which was delivered him with [76] great charge of secrecie; and for more securitie, to buy a paire of new-shoes, & sow it betweene y^e^ soles for fear of intercepting. I, taking y^e^ leter, wondering what mistrie might be in it, broke it open, and found this treacherous letter subscribed by y^e^ hands of M^r^. Pickering & M^r^. Greene. Wich leter had it come to you^r^ hands without answer, might have caused y^e^ hurt, if not y^e^ ruine, of us all. For assuredly if you had followed their instructions, and shewed us that unkindness which they advise you unto, to hold us in distruste as enimise, &c., it might have been an occasion to have set us togeather by y^e^ eares, to y^e^ distruction of us all. For I doe beleeve that in shuch a case, they knowing what bussines hath been betweene us, not only my brother, but others also, would have been violent, and heady against you, &c. I mente to have setled y^e^ people I before and now send,

with or near you, as well for their as your more securitie and defence, as help on all occasions. But I find y^e^ adventurers so jealous & suspitious, that I have altered my resolution, & given order to my brother & those with him, to doe as they and him selfe shall find fitte. Thus, &c.

Your loving freind,

Aprill 10. 1621. THO: WESTON.

Some part of M^r^ Pickerings letter before mentioned.

To M^r^. Bradford & M^r^. Brewster, &c.

My dear love remembred unto you all, &c. The company hath bought out M^r^. Weston, and are very glad they are freed of him, he being judged a man y^t^ thought him selfe above y^e^ generall, and not expresing so much y^e^ fear of God as was meete in a man to whom shuch trust should have been reposed in a matter of so great importance. I am sparing to be so plaine as indeed is clear against him; but a few words to y^e^ wise.

M^r^. Weston will not permitte leters to be sent in *his ships*, nor any thing for your good or ours, of which ther is some reason in respecte of him selfe, &c. His brother Andrew, whom he doth send as principall *in one of these ships*, is a heady yong man, & violente, and set against you ther, & y^e^ company hear; ploting with M^r^. Weston their owne ends, which tend to your & our undooing in respecte of our estates ther, and prevention of our good ends. For by credible testimoney we are informed his purpose is to come to your colonie, pretending he comes for and from y^e^ adventurers, and will seeke to gett what you have in readynes [77] into *his ships*, as if they came from y^e^ company, & possessing all, will be so much profite to him selfe. And further to informe them selves what spetiall places or things you have discovered, to y^e^ end that they may supres & deprive you, &c.

The Lord, who is y^e^ watchman of Israll & slepeth not, preserve you & deliver you from unreasonable men. I am sorie that ther is cause to admonish you of these things concerning this man; so I leave you to God, who bless and multiply you into thousands, to the advancemente of y^e^ glorious gospell of our Lord Jesus. Amen. Fare well.

Your loving freinds,

EDWARD PICKERING.

WILLIAM GREENE.

I pray conceale both y^e^ writing & deliverie of this leter, but make the best use of it. *We hope to sete forth a ship our selves with in this month.*

The heads of his answer.

M^r^. Bradford, this is y^e^ leter y^t^ I wrote unto you of, which to answer in every perticuler is needles & tedious. My owne conscience & all our people can and I thinke will testifie, y^t^ my end in sending *y^e^ ship Sparrow* was your good, &c. Now I will not deney but ther are many of our people rude fellows, as these men terme them; yet I presume they will be governed by such as I set over them. And I hope not only to be able to reclaime them from y^t^ profanenes that may scandalise y^e^ vioage, but by degrees to draw them to God, &c. I am so farr from sending rude fellows to deprive you either by fraude or violence of what is yours, as I have charged y^e^ m^r^. of y^e^ *ship Sparrow*, not only to leave with you 2000. of bread, but also a good quantitie of fish,* &c. But I will leave it to you to consider what evill this leter would or might have done, had it come to your hands & taken y^e^ effecte y^e^ other desired.

Now if you be of y^e^ mind y^t^ these men are, deale plainly with us, & we will seeke our residence els-wher. If you

* *But y^e^* [he] *left not his own men a bite of bread.*

are as freindly as we have thought you to be, give us y^e^ entertainment of freinds, and we will take nothing from you, neither meat, drinke, nor lodging, but what we will, in one kind or other, pay you for, &c. I shall leave in y^e^ countrie *a litle ship* (if God send her safe thither) with mariners & fisher-men to stay ther, who shall coast, & trad with y^e^ savages, & y^e^ old plantation. It may be we shall be as helpfull to you, as you will be to us. I thinke I shall see you y^e^ next spring; and so I comend you to y^e^ protection of God, who ever keep you.

Your loving freind,

THO: WESTON.

[78] Thus all ther hops in regard of M^r^. Weston were layed in y^e^ dust, and all his promised helpe turned into an empttie advice, which they apprehended was nether lawfull nor profitable for them to follow. And they were not only thus left destitute of help in their extreme wants, haveing neither vitails, nor any thing to trade with, but others prepared & ready to glean up what y^e^ cuntrie might have afforded for their relcefe. As for those harsh censures & susspitions intimated in y^e^ former and following leters, they desired to judg as charitably and wisly of them as they could, waighing them in y^e^ ballance of love and reason; and though they (in parte) came from godly & loveing freinds, yet they conceived many things might arise from over deepe jealocie and fear, togeather with unmeete provocations, though they well saw M^r^. Weston pursued his owne ends, and was imbittered in spirite.

For after the receit of y^e^ former leters, the Gov^r^ received one from M^r^. Cushman, who went home in y^e^ ship, and was allway intimate with M^r^. Weston, (as former passages declare), and it was much marveled that nothing was heard from him, all this while. But it should seeme it was y^e^ difficulty of sending, for this leter was directed as y^e^ leter of a wife to her husband, who was here, and brought by him to y^e^ Gov^r^. It was as followeth.

Beloved S^r^: I hartily salute you, with trust of your health, and many thanks for your love. By Gods providence we got well home y^e^ 17. *of Feb.* Being robbed by y^e^ Frenchmen by y^e^ way, and carried by them into France, and were kepte ther 15. days, and lost all y^t^ we had that was worth taking; but thanks be to God, we escaped with our lives & ship. I see not y^t^ it worketh any discouragment hear. I purpose by Gods grace *to see you* shortly, *I hope in June nexte, or before.* In y^e^ mean space know these things, and I pray you be advertised a litle. M^r^. Weston hath quite broken of from our company, through some discontents y^t^ arose betwext him and some of our adventurers, & hath sould all his adventurs, & *hath now sent* 3. *smale ships for his perticuler plantation.* The *greatest* wherof, *being* 100. *tune*, M^r^. Reynolds goeth m^r^. and he with y^e^ rest purposeth to come him selfe; for what end I know not.

The people which they cary are no men for us, wherfore I pray you entertaine them not, neither exchainge man for man with them, excepte it be some of your worst. He hath taken a patente for him selfe. If they offerr to buy any thing of you, let it be shuch as you can spare, and let them give y^e^ worth of it. If they borrow any thing of you,

let them leave a good pawne, &c. It is like he [78*] will plant to y^e^ southward of y^e^ Cape, for William Trevore hath lavishly tould but what he knew or imagined of Capewack, Mohiggen, & y^e^ Narigansets. I fear these people will hardly deale so well with y^e^ savages as they should. I pray you therfore signifie to Squanto, that they are a distincte body from us, and we have nothing to doe with them, neither must be blamed for their falts, much less can warrente their fidelitie. We are aboute to recover our losses in France. Our freinds at Leyden are well, and will come to you as many as can *this time*. I hope all will turne to y^e^ best, wherfore I pray you be not discouraged, but gather up your selfe to goe thorow these dificulties cherfully & with courage in y^t^ place wherin God hath sett you, untill y^e^ day of refreshing come. And y^e^ Lord God of sea & land bring us comfortably togeather againe, if it may stand with his glorie.

Yours, ROBART CUSHMAN.

On y^e^ other sid of y^e^ leafe, in y^e^ same leter, came these few lines from M^r^. John Peirce, in whose name the patente was taken, and of whom more will follow, to be spoken in its place.

Worthy S^r^: I desire you to take into consideration that which is writen on y^e^ other side, and not any way to damnifie your owne collony, whos strength is but weaknes, and may therby be more infeebled. And for y^e^ leters of association, by y^e^ next ship we send, I hope you shall receive satisfaction; in y^e^ mean time whom you admite I will approve. But as for M^r^. Weston's company, I thinke them so base in condition (for y^e^ most parte) as in all apearance

* The number is repeated in the Ms.

not fitt for an honest mans company. I wish they prove other wise. My purpose is not to enlarge my selfe, but cease in these few lins, and so rest

Your loving freind,

JOHN PEIRCE.

All these things they pondred and well considered, yet concluded to give his men frendly entertainmente; partly in regard of M^r^. Weston him selfe, considering what he had been unto them, & done for them, & to some, more espetially; and partly in compassion to y^e^ people, who were now come into a willdernes, (as them selves were,) and were by *y^e^ ship* to be presently put a shore, (for she was *to cary other passengers to Virginia*, who lay at great charge,) and they were alltogeather unacquainted & knew not what to doe. So as they had received his former company of 7. men, and vitailed them as their owne hitherto, so they also received *these* (being aboute 60. lusty men), and gave [79] housing for them selves and their goods; and many being sicke, they had y^e^ best means y^e^ place could aford them. They stayed hear y^e^ most parte of y^e^ somer till *y^e^ ship came back againe from Virginia*. Then, by his direction, or those whom he set over them, they removed into y^e^ Massachusset Bay, he having got a patente for some part ther, (by light of ther former discovery in leters sent home). Yet they left all ther sicke folke hear till they were setled and housed. But of ther victails they had not

any, though they were in great wante, nor any thing els in recompence of any courtecie done them; neither did they desire it, for they saw they were an unruly company, and had no good govermente over them, and by disorder would soone fall into wants if Mr. Weston came not ye sooner amongst them; and therfore, to prevente all after occasion, would have nothing of them.

Amids these streigths, and ye desertion of those from whom they had hoped for supply, and when famine begane now to pinch them sore, they not knowing what to doe, the Lord, (who never fails his,) presents them with an occasion, beyond all expectation. This boat which came from ye eastward brought them a letter from a stranger, of whose name they had never heard before, being a captaine of a ship come ther a fishing. This leter was as followeth. Being thus inscribed.

To all his good freinds at Plimoth, these, &c.

Freinds, cuntrimen, & neighbours: I salute you, and wish you all health and hapines in ye Lord. I make bould with these few lines to trouble you, because unless I were unhumane, I can doe no less. Bad news doth spread it selfe too farr; yet I will so farr informe you that my selfe, with many good freinds in ye south-collonie of Virginia, have received shuch a blow, that 400. persons large will not make good our losses. Therfore I doe intreat you (allthough not knowing you) that ye old rule which I learned when I went to schoole, may be sufficente. That is, Hapie is he whom

other mens harmes doth make to beware. And now againe and againe, wishing all those y^t^ willingly would serve y^e^ Lord, all health and happines in this world, and everlasting peace in y^e^ world to come. And so I rest,

Yours,

JOHN HUDLSTON.

By this boat y^e^ Gov^r^ returned a thankfull answer, as was meete, and sent a boate of their owne with them, which was piloted by them, in which M^r^. Winslow was sente to procure what provissions he could of y^e^ ships, who was kindly received by y^e^ foresaid gentill-man, who not only spared what he [90 *] could, but writ to others to doe y^e^ like. By which means he gott some good quantitie and returned in saftie, by which y^e^ plantation had a duble benefite, first, a present refreshing by y^e^ food brought, and secondly, they knew y^e^ way to those parts for their benifite hearafter. But what was gott, & this small boat brought, being devided among so many, came but to a litle, yet by Gods blesing it upheld them till harvest. It arose but to a quarter of a pound of bread a day to each person; and y^e^ Gov^r^ caused it to be dayly given them, otherwise, had it been in their owne custody, they would have eate it up & then starved. But thus, with what els they could get, they made pretie shift till corne was ripe.

* Mr. Hunter writes: "Here is an error in Bradford's pagination. He passes from 79 to 90. No part of the manuscript is here lost." 79 is repeated in the paging.

This somer they builte a fort with good timber, both strong & comly, which was of good defence, made with a flate rofe & batllments, on which their ordnance were mounted, and wher they kepte constante watch, espetially in time of danger. It served them allso for a meeting house, and was fitted accordingly for that use. It was a great worke for them in this weaknes and time of wants; but ye deanger of ye time required it, and both ye continuall rumors of ye fears from ye Indeans hear, espetially ye Narigansets, and also ye hearing of that great massacre in Virginia, made all hands willing to despatch ye same.

Now ye wellcome time of harvest aproached, in which all had their hungrie bellies filled. But it arose but to a litle, in comparison of a full years supplie; partly by reason they were not yet well aquainted with ye maner of Indean corne, (and they had no other,) allso their many other imployments, but cheefly their weaknes for wante of food, to tend it as they should have done. Also much was stolne both by night & day, before it became scarce eatable, & much more afterward. And though many were well whipt (when they were taken) for a few ears of corne, yet hunger made others (whom conscience did not restraine) to venture. So as it well appeared yt famine must still insue ye next year allso, if not some way prevented, or supplie should faile, to which they durst not trust. Markets there was none to goe too, but

only y^e^ Indeans, and they had no trading comodities. Behold now another providence of God; a ship comes into y^e^ [91] harbor, one Captain Jons being cheefe therin. They were set out by some marchants to discovere all y^e^ harbors betweene this & Virginia, and y^e^ shoulds of Cap-Cod, and to trade along y^e^ coast wher they could. This ship had store of English-beads (which were then good trade) and some knives, but would sell none but at dear rates, and also a good quantie togeather. Yet they weere glad of y^e^ occasion, and faine to buy at any rate; they were faine to give after y^e^ rate of cento per cento, if not more, and yet pay away coat-beaver at 3^s^. per^tt^, which in a few years after yeelded 20^s^. By this means they were fitted againe to trade for beaver & other things, and intended to buy what corne they could.

But I will hear take liberty to make a litle digression. Ther was in *this ship* a gentle-man by name M^r^. John Poory; he had been secretarie in Virginia, and was now going home passenger *in this ship*. After his departure he write a leter to y^e^ Gov^r^ in y^e^ postscrite wherof he hath these lines.

To your selfe and M^r^. Brewster, I must acknowledg my selfe many ways indebted, whose books I would have you thinke very well bestowed on him, who esteemeth them shuch juells. My hast would not suffer me to remember (much less to begg) M^r^. Ainsworths elaborate worke upon y^e^ 5. books of Moyses. Both his & M^r^. Robinsons doe highly

comend the authors, as being most conversante in y^e^ scripturs of all others. And what good (who knows) it may please God to worke by them, through my hands, (though most unworthy,) who finds shuch high contente in them. God have you all in his keeping.

Your unfained and firme freind,

Aug. 28. 1622. JOHN PORY.

These things I hear inserte for honour sake of y^e^ authors memorie, which this gentle-man doth thus ingeniusly acknowledg; and him selfe after his returne did this poore-plantation much credite amongst those of no mean ranck. But to returne.

[92] *Shortly after harvest* M^r^. Westons people who were now seated at y^e^ Massachusets, and by disorder (as it seems) had made havock of their provissions, begane now to perceive that want would come upon them. And hearing that they hear had bought trading comodities & intended to trade for corne, they write to y^e^ Gov^r^ and desired they might joyne with them, and they would imploy their small ship in y^e^ servise; and furder requested either to lend or sell them so much of their trading comodities as their part might come to, and they would undertake to make paymente when M^r^. Weston, or their supply, should come. The Gov^r^ condesended upon equall terms of agreemente, thinkeing to goe aboute y^e^ Cap to y^e^ southward with y^e^ ship, wher some store of corne might be got. Althings being provided, Captaint Standish was

apointed to goe with them, and Squanto for a guid & interpreter, about y^e^ *latter end of September;* but y^e^ winds put them in againe, & putting out y^e^ 2. time, he fell sick of a feavor, so y^e^ Gov^r^ wente him selfe. But they could not get aboute y^e^ should of Cap-Cod, for flats & breakers, neither could Squanto directe them better, nor y^e^ m^r^. durst venture any further, so they put into Manamoyack Bay and got w^t^ * they could ther. In this place Squanto fell sick of an Indean feavor, bleeding much at y^e^ nose (which y^e^ Indeans take for a simptome of death), and within a few days dyed ther; desiring y^e^ Gov^r^ to pray for him, that he might goe to y^e^ Englishmens God in heaven, and bequeathed sundrie of his things to sundry of his English freinds, as remembrances of his love; of whom they had a great loss. They got in this vioage, in one place & other, about 26. or 28. hogsheads of corne & beans, which was more then y^e^ Indeans could well spare in these parts, for y^e^ set but a litle till they got English hows. And so were faine to returne, being sory they could not gett about the Cap, to have been better laden. After ward y^e^ Gov^r^ tooke a few men & wente to y^e^ inland places, to get what he could, and to fetch it home at y^e^ spring, which did help them something.

[93] After these things, in *Feb:* a messenger came from John Sanders, who was left cheefe over M^r^. Weston's men in y^e^ bay of Massachusets, who brought a

* *W^ch^* in the manuscript.

letter shewing the great wants they were falen into; and he would have borrowed a ℔ of corne of y^e^ Indeans, but they would lend him none. He desired advice whether he might not take it from them by force to succore his men till he came from y^e^ eastward, whither he was going. The Gov^r^ & rest deswaded him by all means from it, for it might so exasperate the Indeans as might endanger their saftie, and all of us might smart for it; for they had already heard how they had so wronged y^e^ Indeans by stealing their corne, &c. as they were much incensed against them. Yea, so base were some of their own company, as they wente & tould y^e^ Indeans y^t^ their Gov^r^ was purposed to come and take their corne by force. The which with other things made them enter into a conspiracie against y^e^ Englïsh, of which more in y^e^ nexte. Hear with I end this year.

Anno Dom: 1623.

It may be thought strang that these people should fall to these extremities in so short a time, being left competently provided when y^e^ ship left them, and had an addition by that moyetie of corn that was got by trade, besids much they gott of y^e^ Indans wher they lived, by one means & other. It must needs be their great disorder, for they spent excesseivly whilst they had, or could get it; and, it may be, wasted parte away among y^e^ Indeans (for he y^t^ was their cheef

was taxed by some amongst them for keeping Indean women, how truly I know not). And after they begane to come into wants, many sould away their cloathes and bed coverings; others (so base were they) became servants to y^e^ Indeans, and would cutt them woode & fetch them water, for a cap full of corne; others fell to plaine stealing, both night & day, from y^e^ Indeans, of which they greevosly complained. In y^e^ end, they came to that misery, that some starved & dyed with could & hunger. One in geathering shell-fish was so weake as he stuck fast in y^e^ mudd, and was found dead in y^e^ place. At last most of them left their dwellings & scatered up & downe in y^e^ [94] woods, & by y^e^ water sids, wher they could find ground nuts & clames, hear 6. and ther ten. By which their cariages they became contemned & scorned of y^e^ Indeans, and they begane greatly to insulte over them in a most insolente maner; insomuch, many times as they lay thus scatered abrod, and had set on a pot with ground nuts or shell-fish, when it was ready the Indeans would come and eate it up; and when night came, wheras some of them had a sorie blanket, or such like, to lappe them selves in, the Indeans would take it and let y^e^ other lye all nighte in the could; so as their condition was very lamentable. Yea, in y^e^ end they were faine to hange one of their men, whom they could not reclaime from stealing, to give y^e^ Indeans contente.

Whilst things wente in this maner with them, y^e^ Gov^r^ & people hear had notice y^t^ Massasoyte ther freind was sick & near unto death. They sent to vissete him, and withall sente him such comfortable things as gave him great contente, and was a means of his recovery; upon which occasion he discovers y^e^ conspiracie of these Indeans, how they were resolved to cutt of M^r^. Westons people, for the continuall injuries they did them, & would now take opportunitie of their weaknes to doe it; and for that end had conspired with other Indeans their neighbours their aboute. And thinking the people hear would revenge their death, they therfore thought to doe y^e^ like by them, & had solisited him to joyne with them. He advised them therfore to prevent it, and that speedly by taking of some of y^e^ cheefe of them, before it was to late, for he asured them of y^e^ truth hereof.

This did much trouble them, and they tooke it into serious delibration, and found upon examenation other evidence to give light hear unto, to longe hear to relate. In y^e^ mean time, came one of them from y^e^ Massachucts, with a small pack at his back; and though he knew not a foote of y^e^ way, yet he got safe hither, but lost his way, which was well for him, for he was pursued, and so was mist. He tould them hear how all things stood amongst them, and that he durst stay no longer, he apprehended they (by what he observed) would be all knokt in y^e^ head shortly.

This made them make y^e^ more hast, & dispatched a boate away w^th^ Capten Standish & some men, who found them in a miserable condition, out of which he rescued them, and helped them to some releef, cut of some few of y^e^ cheefe conspirators, and, according to his order, offered to bring them all hither if they thought good; and they should fare no worse then them selves, till M^r^. Weston or some supplie came to them. Or, if any other course liked them better, he was to doe them any helpfullnes he could. They thanked him & y^e^ rest. But most of them desired he would help them with some corne, and they would goe with their smale ship to y^e^ eastward, wher hapily they might here of M^r^. Weston, or some supply from him, seing y^e^ time of y^e^ year was for fishing ships to [95] be in y^e^ land. If not, they would worke among y^e^ fishermen for their liveing, and get ther passage into England, if they heard nothing from M^r^. Weston in time. So they shipped what they had of any worth, and he got them all y^e^ corne he could (scarce leaving to bring him home), and saw them well out of y^e^ bay, under saile at sea, and so came home, not takeing y^e^ worth of a peny of any thing that was theirs. I have but touched these things breefly, because they have allready been published in printe more at large.

This was y^e^ end of these that some time bosted of their strength, (being all able lustie men,) and what

they would doe & bring to pass, in comparison of y^e^ people hear, who had many women & children and weak ons amongst them; and said at their first arivall, when they saw the wants hear, that they would take an other course, and not to fall into shuch a condition, as this simple people were come too. But a mans way is not in his owne power; God can make y^e^ weake to stand; let him also that standeth take heed least he fall.

Shortly after, M^r^. Weston came over with some of y^e^ fishermen, under another name, and y^e^ disguise of a blacke-smith, were he heard of y^e^ ruine and disolution of his colony. He got a boat and with a man or 2. came to see how things were. But by y^e^ way, for wante of skill, in a storme, he cast away his shalop in y^e^ botome of y^e^ bay between Meremek river & Pascataquack, & hardly escaped with life, and afterwards fell into the hands of y^e^ Indeans, who pillaged him of all he saved from the sea, & striped him out of all his cloaths to his shirte. At last he got to Pascataquack, & borrowed a suite of cloaths, and got means to come to Plimoth. A strang alteration ther was in him to such as had seen & known him in his former florishing condition; so uncertaine are y^e^ mutable things of this unstable world. And yet men set their harts upon them, though they dayly see y^e^ vanity therof.

After many passages, and much discourse, (former

things boyling in his mind, but bit in as was discernd,) he desired to borrow some beaver of them; and tould them he had hope of a ship & good supply to come to him, and then they should have any thing for it they stood in neede of. They gave litle credite to his supplie, but pitied his case, and remembered former curtesies. They tould him he saw their wants, and they knew not when they should have any supply; also how y^e^ case stood betweene them & their adventurers, he well knew; they had not much bever, & if they should let him have it, it were enoughe to make a mutinie among y^e^ people, seeing ther was no other means to procure them foode which they so much wanted, & cloaths allso. Yet they tould him they would help him, considering his necessitie, but must doe it secretly for y^e^ former reasons. So they let him have 100. beaver-skins, which waighed 170^li^. odd pounds. Thus they helpt him when all y^e^ world faild him, and with this means he went againe to y^e^ ships, and stayed his small ship & some of his men, & bought provissions and fited him selfe; and it was y^e^ only foundation [96] of his after course. But he requited them ill, for he proved after a bitter enimie unto them upon all occasions, and never repayed them any thing for it, to this day, but reproches and evill words. Yea, he divolged it to some that were none of their best freinds, whilst he yet had y^e^ beaver in his boat; that he could now set them all togeather by

y^e^ ears, because they had done more then they could answer, in letting him have this beaver, and he did not spare to doe what he could. But his malice could not prevaile.

All this whille no supply was heard of, neither knew they when they might expecte any. So they begane to thinke how they might raise as much corne as they could, and obtaine a beter crope then they had done, that they might not still thus languish in miserie. At length, after much debate of things, the Gov^r^ (with y^e^ advise of y^e^ cheefest amongest them) gave way that they should set corne every man for his owne perticuler, and in that regard trust to them selves; in all other things to goe on in y^e^ generall way as before. And so assigned to every family a parcell of land, according to the proportion of their number for that end, only for present use (but made no devission for inheritance), and ranged all boys & youth under some familie. This had very good success; for it made all hands very industrious, so as much more corne was planted then other waise would have bene by any means y^e^ Gov^r^ or any other could use, and saved him a great deall of trouble, and gave farr better contente. The women now wente willingly into y^e^ feild, and tooke their litle-ons with them to set corne, which before would aledg weaknes, and inabilitie; whom to have compelled would have bene thought great tiranie and oppression.

The experience that was had in this com̄one course and condition, tried sundrie years, and that amongst godly and sober men, may well evince the vanitie of that conceite of Platos & other ancients, applauded by some of later times; — that y^e^ taking away of propertie, and bringing in com̄unitie into a comone wealth, would make them happy and florishing; as if they were wiser then God. For this comunitie (so farr as it was) was found to breed much confusion & discontent, and retard much imploymēt that would have been to their benefite and comforte. For y^e^ yong-men that were most able and fitte for labour & service did repine that they should spend their time & streingth to worke for other mens wives and children, with out any recompence. The strong, or man of parts, had no more in devission of victails & cloaths, then he that was weake and not able to doe a quarter y^e^ other could; this was thought injuestice. The aged and graver men to be ranked and [97] equalised in labours, and victails, cloaths, &c., with y^e^ meaner & yonger sorte, thought it some indignite & disrespect unto them. And for mens wives to be commanded to doe servise for other men, as dresing their meate, washing their cloaths, &c., they deemd it a kind of slaverie, neither could many husbands well brooke it. Upon y^e^ poynte all being to have alike, and all to doe alike, they thought them selves in y^e^ like condition, and one as good as another; and so, if it did not cut of those

relations that God hath set amongest men, yet it did at least much diminish and take of y^e^ mutuall respects that should be preserved amongst them. And would have bene worse if they had been men of another condition. Let none objecte this is men's corruption, and nothing to y^e^ course it selfe. I answer, seeing all men have this corruption in them, God in his wisdome saw another course fiter for them.

But to returne. After this course setled, and by that their cor̄e was planted, all ther victails were spente, and they were only to rest on Gods providence; at night not many times knowing wher to have a bitt of any thing y^e^ next day. And so, as one well observed, had need to pray that God would give them their dayly brade, above all people in y^e^ world. Yet they bore these wants with great patience & allacritie of spirite, and that for so long a time as for y^e^ most parte of 2. years; which makes me remember what Peter Martire writs, (in magnifying y^e^ Spaniards) in his 5. Decade, pag. 208. *They* (saith he) *led a miserable life for* 5. *days togeather, with y^e^ parched graine of maize only, and that not to saturitie;* and then concluds, *that shuch pains, shuch labours, and shuch hunger, he thought none living which is not a Spaniard could have endured.* But alass! these, when they had maize (y^t^ is, Indean corne) they thought it as good as a feast, and wanted not only for 5. days togeather, but some time 2. or 3. months togeather, and neither had

bread nor any kind of corne. Indeed, in an other place, in his 2. Decade, page 94. he mentions how others of them were worse put to it, wher they were faine to eate doggs, toads, and dead men, and so dyed almost all. From these extremities the * Lord in his goodnes kept these his people, and in their great wants preserved both their lives and healthes; let his name have y^e^ praise. Yet let me hear make use of his conclusion, which in some sorte may be applied to this people: *That with their miseries they opened a way to these new-lands; and after these stormes, with what ease other men came to inhabite in them, in respecte of y^e^ calamities these men suffered; so as they seeme to goe to a bride feaste wher all things are provided for them.*

They haveing but one boat left and she not over well fitted, they were devided into severall companies, 6. or 7. to a gangg or company, and so wente out with a nett they had bought, to take bass & such like fish, by course, every company knowing their turne. No sooner was y^e^ boate discharged [98] of what she brought, but y^e^ next company tooke her and wente out with her. Neither did they returne till they had cauight something, though it were 5. or 6. days before, for they knew ther was nothing at home, and to goe home emptie would be a great discouragemente to y^e^ rest. Yea, they strive who should doe best.

* *They* in the MS.

If she stayed longe or got litle, then all went to seeking of shel-fish, which at low-water they digged out of y^e^ sands. And this was their living in y^e^ somer time, till God sente y^m^ beter; & in winter they were helped with ground-nuts and foule. Also in y^e^ somer they gott now & then a dear; for one or 2. of y^e^ fitest was apoynted to range y^e^ woods for y^t^ end, & what was gott that way was devided amongst them.

At length they received some leters from y^e^ adventurers, too long and tedious hear to record, by which they heard of their furder crosses and frustrations; begining in this maner.

Loving freinds, as your sorrows & afflictions have bin great, so our croses & interceptions in our proceedings hear, have not been small. For after we had with much trouble & charge sente y^e^ *Parragon* away to sea, and thought all y^e^ paine past, within 14. days after she came againe hither, being dangerously leaked, and brused with tempestious stormes, so as shee was faine to be had into y^e^ docke, and an 100^li^. bestowed upon her. All y^e^ passengers lying upon our charg for 6. or 7. weeks, and much discontent and distemper was occasioned hereby, so as some dangerous evente had like to insewed. But we trust all shall be well and worke for y^e^ best and your benefite, if yet with patience you can waite, and but have strength to hold in life. Whilst these things were doing, M^r^. Westons ship came and brought diverce leters from you, &c. It rejoyseth us much to hear of those good reports y^t^ diverce have brought home from you, &c.

These letters were dated Des. 21: 1622.

So farr of this leter.

This ship was brought by M^r^. John Peirce, and set out at his owne charge, upon hope of great maters. These passengers, & y^e^ goods the company sent in her, he tooke in for fraught, for which they agreed with him to be delivered hear. This was he in whose name their *first patente* was taken, by reason of aquaintance, and some aliance that some of their freinds had with him. But his name was only used in trust. But when he saw they were hear hopfully thus seated, and by y^e^ success God gave them had obtained y^e^ favour of y^e^ Counsell of New-England, he goes and sues to them for *another patent* of much larger extente (in their names), which was easily obtained. But he mente to keep it to him selfe and alow them what he pleased, to hold of him as tenants, and sue to his courts as cheefe Lord, as will appear by that which follows. But y^e^ Lord marvelously crost him; for after this first returne, and y^e^ charge above mentioned, when shee was againe fitted, he pesters him selfe and taks in more passengers, and those not very good to help to bear his losses, and sets out y^e^ 2. time. But [99] what y^e^ event was will appear from another leter from one of y^e^ cheefe of y^e^ company, dated y^e^ 9. of Aprill, 1623. writ to y^e^ Gov^r^ hear, as followeth.

Loving freind, when I write my last leter, I hope to have received one from you well-nigh by this time. But when I write in Des: I litle thought to have seen M^r^. John

Peirce till he had brought some good tidings from you. But it pleased God, he brought us y^e^ wofull tidings of his returne when he was half-way over, by extraime tempest, werin y^e^ goodnes & mercie of God appeared in sparing their lives, being 109. souls. The loss is so great to M^r^. Peirce, &c., and y^e^ companie put upon so great charge, as veryly, &c.

Now with great trouble & loss, we have got M^r^. John Peirce to assigne over y^e^ grand patente to y^e^ companie, which he had taken in his owne name, and made quite voyd our former grante. I am sorie to writ how many hear thinke y^t^ the hand of God was justly against him, both y^e^ first and 2. time of his returne; in regard he, whom you and we so confidently trusted, but only to use his name for y^e^ company, should aspire to be lord over us all, and so make you & us tenants at his will and pleasure, our assurance or patente being quite voyd & disanuled by his means. I desire to judg charitably of him. But his unwillingnes to part with his royall Lordship, and y^e^ high-rate he set it at, which was 500^li^. which cost him but 50^li^., maks many speake and judg hardly of him. The company are out for goods in his ship, with charge aboute y^e^ passengers, 640^li^., &c.

We have agreed with 2. marchants for a ship of 140. tunes, caled y^e^ *Anne*, which is to be ready y^e^ last of this month, to bring 60. passengers & 60. tune of goods, &c.

This was dated Aprill 9. 1623.

These were ther owne words and judgmente of this mans dealing & proceedings; for I thought it more meete to render them in theirs then my owne words. And yet though ther was never got other recompence then the resignation of this patente, and y^e^ shares he had in adventure, for all y^e^ former great sumes, he was never quiet, but sued them in most of y^e^ cheefe

courts in England, and when he was still cast, brought it to y^e^ Parlemente. But he is now dead, and I will leave him to y^e^ Lord.

This ship suffered y^e^ greatest extreemitie at sea at her 2. returne, that one shall lightly hear of, to be saved; as I have been informed by M^r^. William Peirce who was then m^r^. of her, and many others that were passengers in her. It was aboute y^e^ *midle of Feb:* The storme was for y^e^ most parte of 14. days, but for 2. or 3. days & nights togeather in most violent extremitie. After they had cut downe their mast, y^e^ storme beat of their round house and all their uper works; 3. men had worke enough at y^e^ helme, and he that cund y^e^ ship before y^e^ sea, was faine [100] to be bound fast for washing away; the seas did so over-rake them, as many times those upon y^e^ decke knew not whether they were within bord or withoute; and once she was so foundered in y^e^ sea as they all thought she would never rise againe. But yet y^e^ Lord preserved them, and brought them at last safe to *Ports-mouth*, to y^e^ wonder of all men y^t^ saw in what a case she was in, and heard what they had endured.

About y^e^ later end of *June* came in a ship, with Captaine Francis West, who had a comission to be admirall of New-England, to restraine interlopers, and shuch fishing ships as came to fish & trade without a licence from y^e^ Counsell of New-England, for which

they should pay a round sume of money. But he could doe no good of them, for they were to stronge for him, and he found ye fisher men to be stuberne fellows. And their owners, upon complainte made to ye Parlemente, procured an order yt fishing should be free. He tould ye Govr they spooke with a ship at sea, and were abord her, yt was coming for this plantation, in which were sundrie passengers, and they marvelled she was not arrived, fearing some miscariage; for they lost her in a storme that fell shortly after they had been abord. Which relation filled them full of fear, yet mixed with hope. The mr. of this ship had some 2. ħħ of pease to sell, but seeing their wants, held them at 9li. sterling a hoggshead, & under 8li. he would not take, and yet would have beaver at an under rate. But they tould him they had lived so long with out, and would doe still, rather then give so unreasonably. So they went from hence to Virginia.*

* I may not here omite how, notwithstand all their great paines & industrie, and ye great hops of a large cropp, the Lord seemed to blast, & take away the same, and to threaten further & more sore famine unto them, by a great drought which continued from ye 3. weeke in May, till about ye midle of July, without any raine, and with great heat (for ye most parte), insomuch as ye corne begane to wither away, though it was set with fishe, the moysture wherof helped it much. Yet at length it begane to languish sore, and some of ye drier grounds were partched like withered hay, part wherof was never recovered. Upon which they sett a parte a solemne day of humilliation, to seek ye Lord by humble & fervente prayer, in this great distrese. And he was pleased to give them a gracious & speedy answer, both to their owne, & the Indeans admiration, that lived amongest them. For all ye morning, and greatest part of the day, it was clear weather & very hotte,

About 14. days after came in this ship, caled y^e^ *Anne*, wherof M^r^. William Peirce was m^r^., and aboute a weeke or 10. days after came in y^e^ pinass which in foule weather they lost at sea, a fine new vessell of about 44. tune, which y^e^ company had builte to stay in the cuntrie. They brought about 60. persons for y^e^ generall, some of them being very usefull persons, and became good members to y^e^ body, and some were y^e^ wives and children of shuch as were hear allready. And some were so bad, as they were faine to be at charge to send them home againe y^e^ next year. Also, besids these ther came a company, that did not belong to y^e^ generall body, but came one * their perticuler, and were to have lands assigned them, and be for them selves, yet to be subjecte to y^e^ generall Gov-

and not a cloud or any signe of raine to be seen, yet toward evening it begane to overcast, and shortly after to raine, with shuch sweete and gentle showers, as gave them cause of rejoyceing, & blesing God. It came, without either wind, or thunder, or any violence, and by degreese in y^t^ abundance, as that y^e^ earth was thorowly wete and soked therwith. Which did so apparently revive & quicken y^e^ decayed corne & other fruits, as was wonderfull to see, and made y^e^ Indeans astonished to behold; and afterwards the Lord sent them shuch seasonable showers, with enterchange of faire warme weather, as, through his blessing, caused a fruitfull & liberall harvest, to their no small comforte and rejoycing. For which mercie (in time conveniente) they also sett aparte a day of thanksgiveing. This being overslipt in its place, I thought meet here to inserte y^e^ same.

[The above is written on the reverse of page 103 of the original, and should properly be inserted here. This passage, "being overslipt in its place," the author at first wrote it, or the most of it, under the preceding year; but, discovering his error before completing it, drew his pen across it, and wrote beneath, "This is to be here rased out, and is to be placed on page 103, wher it is inserted."]

* *On.*

erment; which caused some diferance and disturbance [101] amongst them, as will after appeare. I shall hear againe take libertie to inserte a few things out of shuch leters as came in this shipe, desiring rather to manefest things in ther words and apprehentions, then in my owne, as much as may be, without tediousness.

Beloved freinds, I kindly salute you all, with trust of your healths & wellfare, being right sorie y^t^ no supplie hath been made to you all this while; for defence wher of, I must referr you to our generall leters. Naitheir indeed have we now sent you many things, which we should & would, for want of money. But persons, more then inough, (though not all we should,) for people come flying in upon us, but monys come creeping in to us. Some few of your old freinds are come, as, &c. So they come droping to you, and by degrees, I hope ere long you shall enjoye them all. And because people press so hard upon us to goe, and often shuch as are none of y^e^ fitest, I pray you write ernestly to y^e^ Treasurer and directe what persons should be sente. It greeveth me to see so weake a company sent you, and yet had I not been hear they had been weaker. You must still call upon the company hear to see y^t^ honest men be sente you, and threaten to send them back if any other come, &c. We are not any way so much in danger, as by corrupte an noughty persons. Shuch, and shuch, came without my consente; but y^e^ importunitie of their freinds got promise of our Treasurer in my absence. Neither is ther need we should take any lewd men, for we may have honest men enew, &c.

Your assured freind,

R. C.

The following was from y^e^ genrall.

Loving freinds, we most hartily salute you in all love and harty affection; being yet in hope y^t^ the same God which hath hithertoo preserved you in a marvelous maner, doth yet continue your lives and health, to his owne praise and all our comforts. Being right sory that you have not been sent unto all this time, &c. We have in this ship sent shuch women, as were willing and ready to goe to their husbands and freinds, with their children, &c. We would not have you discontente, because we have not sent you more of your old freinds, and in spetiall, him * on whom you most depend. Farr be it from us to neclecte you, or contemne him. But as y^e^ intente was at first, so y^e^ evente at last shall shew it, that we will deal fairly, and squarly answer your expectations to the full. Ther are also come unto you, some honest men to plant upon their particulers besids you. A thing which if we should not give way unto, we should wrong both them and you. Them, by puting them on things more inconveniente, and you, for that being honest men, they will be a strengthening to y^e^ place, and good neighbours [102] unto you. Tow things we would advise you of, which we have likwise signified them hear. First, y^e^ trade for skins to be retained for the generall till y^e^ devidente; 2^ly^. y^t^ their setling by you, be with shuch distance of place as is neither inconvenient for y^e^ lying of your lands, nor hurtfull to your speedy & easie assembling togeather.

We have sente you diverse fisher men, with salte, &c. Diverse other provissions we have sente you, as will appear in your bill of lading, and though we have not sent all we would (because our cash is small), yet it is y^t^ we could, &c.

And allthough it seemeth you have discovered many more rivers and fertill grounds then y^t^ wher you are, yet seeing by

* I. R.

Gods providence y^t^ place fell to your lote, let it be accounted as your portion; and rather fixe your eyes upon that which may be done ther, then languish in hops after things els-wher. If your place be not y^e^ best, it is better, you shall be y^e^ less envied and encroached upon; and shuch as are earthly minded, will not setle too near your border.* If y^e^ land afford you bread, and y^e^ sea yeeld you fish, rest you a while contented, God will one day afford you better fare. And all men shall know you are neither fugetives nor discontents. But can, if God so order it, take y^e^ worst to your selves, with content,† & leave y^e^ best to your neighbours, with cherfullnes.

Let it not be greeveous unto you y^t^ you have been instruments to breake y^e^ ise for others who come after with less dificulty, the honour shall be yours to y^e^ worlds end, &c.

We bear you always in our brests, and our harty affection is towards you all, as are y^e^ harts of hundreds more which never saw your faces, who doubtles pray for your saftie as their owne, as we our selves both doe & ever shall, that y^e^ same God which hath so marvelously preserved you from seas, foes, and famine, will still preserve you from all future dangers, and make you honourable amongst men, and glorious in blise at y^e^ last day. And so y^e^ Lord be with you all & send us joyfull news from you, and inable us with one shoulder so to accomplish & perfecte this worke, as much glorie may come to Him y^t^ confoundeth y^e^ mighty by the weak, and maketh small thinges great. To whose greatnes, be all glorie for ever & ever.

This leter was subscribed with 13. of their names.

These passengers, when they saw their low & poore condition a shore, were much danted and dismayed,

* This proved rather, a propheti, then advice.

† *Contend* in the manuscript.

and according to their diverse humores were diversly affected; some wished them selves in England againe; others fell a weeping, fancying their own miserie in what y^ey^ saw now in others; other some pitying the distress they saw their freinds had been long in, and still were under; in a word, all were full of sadnes. Only some of their old freinds rejoysed to see them, and y^t^ it was no worse with them, for they could not expecte it should be better, and now hoped they should injoye better days togeather. And truly it was [103] no marvell they should be thus affected, for they were in a very low condition, many were ragged in aparell, & some litle beter then halfe naked; though some y^t^ were well stord before, were well enough in this regard. But for food they were all alike, save some y^t^ had got a few pease of y^e^ ship y^t^ was last hear. The best dish they could presente their freinds with was a lobster, or a peece of fish, without bread or any thing els but a cupp of fair spring water. And y^e^ long continuance of this diate, and their labours abroad, had something abated y^e^ freshnes of their former complexion. But God gave them health and strength in a good measure; and shewed them by experience y^e^ truth of y^t^ word, Deut. 8. 3. *Y^t^ man liveth not by bread only, but by every word y^t^ proceedeth out of y^e^ mouth of y^e^ Lord doth a man live.*

When I think how sadly y^e^ scripture speaks of the famine in Jaakobs time, when he said to his sonns,

Goe buy us food, that we may live and not dye. Gen. 42. 2. and 43. 1, that the famine was great, or heavie in the land; and yet they had such great herds, and store of catle of sundrie kinds, which, besids flesh, must needs produse other food, as milke, butter & cheese, &c., and yet it was counted a sore affliction; theirs hear must needs be very great, therfore, who not only wanted the staffe of bread, but all these things, and had no Egipte to goe too. But God fedd them out of y^e^ sea for y^e^ most parte, so wonderfull is his providence over his in all ages; for his mercie endureth for ever.

On y^e^ other hand the old planters were affraid that their corne, when it was ripe, should be imparted to y^e^ new-com̄ers, whose provissions w^ch^ they brought with them they feared would fall short before y^e^ year wente aboute (as indeed it did). They came to y^e^ Gov^r^ and besought him that as it was before agreed that they should set corne for their perticuler, and accordingly they had taken extraordinary pains ther aboute, that they might freely injoye the same, and they would not have a bitte of y^e^ victails now come, but waite till harvest for their owne, and let y^e^ new-com̄ers injoye what they had brought; they would have none of it, excepte they could purchase any of it of them by bargaine or exchainge. Their requeste was granted them, for it gave both sides good contente; for y^e^ new-com̄ers were as much afraid that y^e^ hungrie

planters would have eat up y^e^ provissions brought, and they should have fallen into y^e^ like condition.

This ship was in a shorte time laden with clapbord, by y^e^ help of many hands. Also they sente in her all y^e^ beaver and other furrs they had, & M^r^. Winslow was sent over with her, to informe of all things, and procure such things as were thought needfull for their presente condition. By this time harvest was come, and in stead of famine, now God gave them plentie, and y^e^ face of things was changed, to y^e^ rejoysing of y^e^ harts of many, for which they blessed God. And y^e^ effect of their particuler planting was well seene, for all had, one way & other, pretty well to bring y^e^ year aboute, and some of y^e^ abler sorte and more [104] industrious had to spare, and sell to others, so as any generall wante or famine hath not been amongst them since to this day.

Those that come on their perticuler looked for greater matters then they found or could attaine unto, aboute building great houses, and such pleasant situations for them, as them selves had fancied; as if they would be great men & rich, all of a sudaine; but they proved castls in y^e^ aire. These were y^e^ conditions agreed on betweene y^e^ colony and them.

First, that y^e^ Gov^r^, in y^e^ name and with y^e^ consente of y^e^ company, doth in all love and frendship receive and imbrace them; and is to allote them competente places for habitations within y^e^ towne. And promiseth

to shew them all such other curtesies as shall be reasonable for them to desire, or us to performe.

2. That they, on their parts, be subjecte to all such laws & orders as are already made, or hear after shall be, for y^e^ publick good.

3. That they be freed and exempte from y^e^ generall imployments of the said company, (which their presente condition of comunitie requireth,) excepte commune defence, & such other imployments as tend to y^e^ perpetuall good of y^e^ collony.

4^ly^. Towards y^e^ maintenance of Go$\tilde{v}^{rt}$, & publick officers of y^e^ said collony, every male above y^e^ age of 16. years shall pay a bushell of Indean wheat, or y^e^ worth of it, into y^e^ commone store.

5^ly^. That (according to y^e^ agreemente y^e^ marchants made with y^m^ before they came) they are to be wholy debared from all trade with the Indeans for all sorts of furrs, and such like commodities, till y^e^ time of y^e^ comunallitie be ended.

About y^e^ midle of September arrived Captaine Robart Gorges in y^e^ Bay of y^e^ Massachusets, with sundrie passengers and families, intending ther to begine a plantation; and pitched upon y^e^ place M^r^. Weston's people had forsaken. He had a com̄ission from y^e^ Counsell of New-England, to be generall Gove^r^ of y^e^ cuntrie, and they appoynted for his counsell & assistance, Captaine Francis West, y^e^ aforesaid admirall, Christopher Levite, Esquire, and y^e^ Gov^r^ of Plimoth for

y^e^ time beeing, &c. Allso, they gave him authoritie to chuse such other as he should find fit. Allso, they gave (by their comission) full power to him & his assistants, or any 3. of them, wherof him selfe was allway to be one, to doe and execute what to them should seeme good, in all cases, Capitall, Criminall, and Civill, &c., with diverce other instructions. Of which, & his comission, it pleased him to suffer y^e^ Gov^r^ hear to take a coppy.

He gave them notice of his arivall by letter, but before they could visite him he went to y^e^ eastward with y^e^ ship he came in; but a storme arising, (and they wanting a good pilot to harbor them in those parts,) they bore up for this harbor. He and his men were hear kindly entertained; he stayed hear 14. days. In y^e^ mean time came in M^r^. Weston with his small ship, which he had now recovered. [105*] Captaine Gorges tooke hold of y^e^ opportunitie, and acquainted y^e^ Gov^r^ hear, that one occasion of his going to y^e^ eastward was to meete with M^r^. Weston, and call him to accounte for some abuses he had to lay to his charge. Wherupon he called him before him, and some other of his assistants, with y^e^ Gov^r^ of this place; and charged him, first, with y^e^ ille carriage of his men at y^e^ Massachusets; by which means the peace of y^e^ cuntrie was disturbed, and him selfe & the people which he had brought over to plante in that

* In MS. also 145.

bay were therby much prejudised. To this Mr. Weston easily answered, that what was that way done, was in his absence, and might have befalen any man; he left them sufficently provided, and conceived they would have been well governed; and for any errour comitted he had sufficiently smarted. This particuler was passed by. A 2d. was, for an abuse done to his father, Sr. Ferdenando Gorges, and to ye State. The thing was this; he used him & others of ye Counsell of New-England, to procure him a licence for ye transporting of many peeces of great ordnance for New-England, pretending great fortification hear in ye countrie, & I know not what shipping. The which when he had obtained, he went and sould them beyond seas for his private profite; for which (he said) ye State was much offended, and his father suffered a shrowd check, and he had order to apprehend him for it. Mr. Weston excused it as well as he could, but could not deney it; it being one maine thing (as was said) for which he with-drew himself. But after many passages, by ye mediation of ye Govr and some other freinds hear, he was inclined to gentlnes (though he aprehended ye abuse of his father deeply); which, when Mr. Weston saw, he grew more presumptuous, and gave such provocking & cutting speches, as made him rise up in great indignation & distemper, and vowed yt he would either curb him, or send him home for England. At which Mr. Weston was something danted, and came

privatly to y^e^ Gov^r^ hear, to know whether they would suffer Captaine Gorges to apprehend him. He was tould they could not hinder him, but much blamed him, y^t^ after they had pacified things, he should thus breake out, by his owne folly & rashnes, to bring trouble upon him selfe & them too. He confest it was his passion, and prayd y^e^ Gov^r^ to entreat for him, and pacifie him if he could. The which at last he did, with much adoe; so he was called againe, and y^e^ Gov^r^ was contente to take his owne bond to be ready to make further answer, when either he or y^e^ lords should send for him. And at last he tooke only his word, and ther was a freĩdly parting on all hands.

But after he was gone, M^r^. Weston in lue of thanks to y^e^ Gov^r^ and his freinds hear, gave them this quib (behind their baks) for all their pains. That though they were but yonge justices, yet they wear good beggers. Thus they parted at this time, and shortly after y^e^ Gov^r^ tooke his leave and went to y^e^ Massachusets by land, being very thankfull for his kind entertainemente. The ship stayed hear, and fitted her selfe to goe for Virginia, having some passengers ther to deliver; and with her returned sundrie of those from hence which came over on their perticuler, some out of discontente and dislike of y^e^ cuntrie; others by reason of a fire that broke out, and burnt y^e^ houses they lived in, and all their provisions [106 *] so as

* In MS. also 146.

they were necessitated therunto. This fire was occasioned by some of y^e^ sea-men that were roystering in a house wher it first began, makeing a great fire in very could weather, which broke out of y^e^ chimney into y^e^ thatch, and burnte downe 3. or 4. houses, and consumed all y^e^ goods & provissions in y^m^. The house in which it begane was right against their store-house, which they had much adoe to save, in which were their comone store & all their provissions; y^e^ which if it had been lost, y^e^ plantation had been overthrowne. But through Gods mercie it was saved by y^e^ great dilligence of y^e^ people, & care of y^e^ Gov^r^ & some aboute him. Some would have had y^e^ goods throwne out; but if they had, ther would much have been stolne by the rude company y^t^ belonged to these 2. ships, which were allmost all ashore. But a trusty company was plased within, as well as those that with wet-cloaths & other means kept of y^e^ fire without, that if necessitie required they might have them out with all speed. For y^ey^ suspected some malicious dealling, if not plaine treacherie, and whether it was only suspition or no, God knows; but this is certaine, that when y^e^ tumulte was greatest, ther was a voyce heard (but from whom it was not knowne) that bid them looke well aboute them, for all were not freinds y^t^ were near them. And shortly after, when the vemencie of y^e^ fire was over, smoke was seen to arise within a shed y^t^ was joynd to y^e^ end of y^e^ store-

house, which was watled up with bowes, in y^e^ withered leaves wherof y^e^ fire was kindled, which some, ruñing to quench, found a longe firebrand of an ell longe, lying under y^e^ wale on y^e^ inside, which could not possibly come their by cassualtie, but must be laid ther by some hand, in y^e^ judgmente of all that saw it. But God kept them from this deanger, what ever was intended.

Shortly after Captaine Gorges, y^e^ generall Gov^r^, was come home to y^e^ Massachusets, he sends a warrante to arrest M^r^. Weston & his ship, and sends a m^r^. to bring her away thither, and one Captain Hanson (that belonged to him) to conducte him along. The Gov^r^ & others hear were very sory to see him take this course, and tooke exception at y^e^ warrante, as not legall nor sufficiente; and withall write to him to disswade him from this course, shewing him y^t^ he would but entangle and burthen him selfe in doing this; for he could not doe M^r^. Weston a better turne, (as things stood with him); for he had a great many men that belonged to him in this barke, and was deeply ingaged to them for wages, and was in a mañer out of victails (*and now winter*); all which would light upon him, if he did arrest his barke. In y^e^ mean time M^r^. Weston had notice to shift for him selfe; but it was conceived he either knew not whither to goe, or how to mend him selfe, but was rather glad of y^e^ occasion, and so stirred not. But y^e^ Gov^r^ would not be perswaded, but

[107] sent a very formall warrente under his hand & seall, with strict charge as they would answere it to y^e^ state; he also write that he had better considered of things since he was hear, and he could not answer it to let him goe so; besids other things that were come to his knowledg since, which he must answer too. So he was suffered to proceede, but he found in the end that to be true that was tould him; for when an inventorie was taken of what was in y^e^ ship, ther was not vitailes found for above 14. days, at a pare allowance, and not much else of any great worth, & the men did so crie out of him for wages and diate, in y^e^ mean time, as made him soone weary. So as in conclusion it turned to his loss, and y^e^ expence of his owne provissions; and *towards the spring* they came to agreement, (after they had bene to y^e^ eastward,) and y^e^ Gov^r^ restord him his vessell againe, and made him satisfaction, in bisket, meal, and such like provissions, for what he had made use of that was his, or what his men had any way wasted or consumed. So M^r^. Weston came hither againe, and afterward shaped his course for Virginie, & so for present I shall leave him.*

The Gov^r^ and some y^t^ depended upon him returned for England, haveing scarcly saluted y^e^ cuntrie in his Govermente, not finding the state of things hear to

* He dyed afterwards at Bristoll, in y^e^ time of the warrs, of y^e^ sicknes in y^t^ place.

answer his quallitie & condition. The peopl dispersed them selves, some went for England, others for Virginia, some few remained, and were helped with supplies from hence. The Gov^{r} brought over a minister with him, one M^{r}. Morell, who, about a year after y^{e} Gov^{r} returned, tooke shipping from hence. He had I know not what power and authority of superintendancie over other churches granted him, and sundrie instructions for that end; but he never shewed it, or made any use of it; (it should seeme he saw it was in vaine;) he only speake of it to some hear at his going away. This was in effect y^{e} end of a 2. plantation in that place. Ther were allso this year some scatering beginings made in other places, as at Paskataway, by M^{r}. David Thomson, at Monhigen, and some other places by sundrie others.

It rests now y^{t} I speake a word aboute y^{e} piñass spoken of before, which was sent by y^{e} adventurers to be imployed in y^{e} cuntrie. She was a fine vessell, and bravely set out,* and I fear y^{e} adventurers did over pride them selves in her, for she had ill success. However, they erred grosly in tow things aboute her; first, though she had a sufficiente maister, yet she was rudly mañed, and all her men were upon shars, and none was to have any wages but y^{e} m^{r}. 2^{ly}, wheras they mainly lookt at trade, they had sent nothing of any value to trade with. When the men came hear, and mette with

* With her flages, & streamers, pendents, & wastcloaths, &c.

ill counsell from M^r^. Weston & his crue, with others of y^e^ same stampe, neither m^r^. nor Gov^r^ could scarce rule [108] them, for they exclaimed that they were abused & deceived, for they were tould they should goe for a man of warr, and take I know not whom, French & Spaniards, &c. They would neither trade nor fish, excepte they had wages; in fine, they would obey no com̄and of y^e^ maisters; so it was apprehended they would either rune away with y^e^ vessell, or get away w^th^ y^e^ ships, and leave her; so as M^r^. Peirce & others of their freinds perswaded the Gov^r^ to chaing their condition, and give them wages; which was accordingly done. And she was sente about y^e^ Cape to y^e^ Narigansets to trade, but they made but a poore vioage of it. Some corne and beaver they got, but y^e^ Dutch used to furnish them with cloath & better com̄odities, they haveing only a few beads & knives, which were not ther much esteemed. Allso, in her returne home, at y^e^ very entrance into ther owne harbore, she had like to have been cast away in a storme, and was forced to cut her maine mast by y^e^ bord, to save herselfe from driving on y^e^ flats that lye without, caled Browns Ilands, the force of y^e^ wind being so great as made her anchors give way and she drive right upon them; but her mast & takling being gone, they held her till y^e^ wind shifted.

Anno Dom: 1624.

The time of new election of ther officers for this year being come, and* y^e^ number of their people increased, and their troubls and occasions therwith, the Gov^r^ desired them to chainge y^e^ persons, as well as renew y^e^ election; and also to adde more Assistans to y^e^ Gov^r^ for help & counsell, and y^e^ better carrying on of affairs. Showing that it was necessarie it should be so. If it was any honour or benefite, it was fitte others should be made pertakers of it; if it was a burthen, (as doubtles it was,) it was but equall others should help to bear it; and y^t^ this was y^e^ end of Añuall Elections. The issue was, that as before ther was but one Assistante, they now chose 5. giving the Gov^r^ a duble voyce; and aftwards they increased them to 7. which course hath continued to this day.

They having with some truble & charge new-masted and rigged their pinass, in y^e^ begining of March they sent her well vitaled to the eastward on fishing. She arrived safly at a place near Damarins cove, and was there well harbored in a place wher ships used to ride, ther being also some ships allready arived out of England. But shortly after ther [109] arose such a violent & extraordinarie storme, as y^e^ seas broak over such places in y^e^ harbor as was never seene before, and drive her against great roks, which beat such

* *And* is repeated in the MS.

a hole in her bulke, as a horse and carte might have gone in, and after drive her into deep-water, wher she lay sunke. The m^r. was drowned, the rest of y^e men, all save one, saved their lives, with much a doe; all her provision, salt, and what els was in her, was lost. And here I must leave her to lye till afterward.

Some of those that still remained hear on their perticuler, begane privatly to nurish a faction, and being privie to a strong faction that was among y^e adventurers in England, on whom sundry of them did depend, by their private whispering they drew some of the weaker sorte of y^e company to their side, and so filld them with discontente, as nothing would satisfie them excepte they might be suffered to be in their perticuler allso; and made great offers, so they might be freed from y^e generall. The Gov^r consulting with y^e ablest of y^e generall body what was best to be done hear in, it was resolved to permitte them so to doe, upon equall conditions. The conditions were the same in effect with y^e former before related. Only some more added, as that they should be bound here to remaine till y^e generall partnership was ended. And also that they should pay into y^e store, y^e on halfe of all such goods and comodities as they should any waise raise above their food, in consideration of what charg had been layed out for them, with some such like things. This liberty granted, soone stopt this gape, for ther was but a few that undertooke this course when it

came too; and they were as sone weary of it. For the other had perswaded them, & M^r^. Weston togeather, that ther would never come more supply to y^e^ generall body; but y^e^ perticulers had such freinds as would carry all, and doe for them I know not what.

Shortly after, M^r^. Winslow came over, and brought a prety good supply, and the ship came on fishing, a thing fatall to this plantation. He brought 3. heifers & a bull, the first begining of any catle of that kind in y^e^ land, with some cloathing & other necessaries, as will further appear; but withall y^e^ reporte of a strong faction amongst the adventurers * against them, and espetially against y^e^ coming of y^e^ rest from Leyden, and with what difficulty this supply was procured, and how, by their strong & long opposision, bussines was so retarded as not only they were now falne too late for y^e^ fishing season, but the best men were taken up of y^e^ fishermen in y^e^ west countrie, and he was forct to take such a m^r^. & company for that imployment as he could procure upon y^e^ present. Some letters from them shall beter declare these things, being as followeth.

[110] Most worthy & loving freinds, your kind & loving leters I have received, and render you many thanks, &c. It hath plased God to stirre up y^e^ harts of our adventurers *

* *Adventures* in the manuscript.

to raise a new stock for y^e^ seting forth of this shipe, caled y^e^ Charitie, with men & necessaries, both for y^e^ plantation and y^e^ fishing, though accomplished with very great difficulty; in regard we have some amongst us which undoubtedly aime more at their owne private ends, and y^e^ thwarting & opposing of some hear, and other worthy instruments,* of Gods glory elswher, then at y^e^ generall good and furtherance of this noble & laudable action. Yet againe we have many other, and I hope y^e^ greatest parte, very honest Christian men, which I am perswaded their ends and intents are wholy for y^e^ glory of our Lord Jesus Christ, in y^e^ propagation of his gospell, and hope of gaining those poore salvages to y^e^ knowledg of God. But, as we have a proverbe, One scabed sheep may marr a whole flock, so these malecontented persons, & turbulente spirits, doe what in them lyeth to withdraw mens harts from you and your freinds, yea, even from y^e^ generall bussines; and yet under show and pretence of godlynes and furtherance of y^e^ plantation. Wheras the quite contrary doth plainly appeare; as some of y^e^ honester harted men (though of late of their faction) did make manifest at our late meeting. But what should I trouble you or my selfe with these restles opposers of all goodnes, and I doubte will be continuall disturbers of our frendly meetings & love. On Thurs-day y^e^ 8. of Jan: we had a meeting aboute the artickls betweene you & us; wher they would rejecte that, which we in our late leters prest you to grante, (an addition to y^e^ time of our joynt stock). And their reason which they would make known to us was, it trobled their conscience to exacte longer time of you then was agreed upon at y^e^ first. But that night they were so followed and crost of their perverse courses, as they were even wearied, and offered to sell their adventurs; and some were willing to buy. But I, doubting they would raise more scandale and false

* He means M^r^. Robinson.

reports, aud so diverse waise doe us more hurt, by going of in such a furie, then they could or can by continuing adventurers amongst us, would not suffer them. But on y^e^ 12. of Jan: we had another meting, but in the interime diverse of us had talked with most of them privatly, and had great combats & reasoning, pro & con. But at night when we mete to read y^e^ generall letter, we had y^e^ loveingest and frendlyest meeting that ever I knew * and our greatest enemise offered to lend us 50li. So I sent for a potle of wine, (I would you could † doe y^e^ like,) which we dranke freindly together. Thus God can turne y^e^ harts of men when it pleaseth him, &c. Thus loving freinds, I hartily salute you all in y^e^ Lord, hoping ever to rest,

Yours to my power,

Jan: 25. 1623. JAMES SHERLEY.

[111] *Another leter.*

Beloved S^r^., &c. We have now sent you, we hope, men & means, to setle these 3. things, viz. fishing, salt making, and boat making; if you can bring them to pass to some perfection, your wants may be supplyed. I pray you bend you selfe what you can to setle these bussinesses. Let y^e^ ship be fraught away as soone as you can, and sent to Bilbow. You must send some discreete man for factore, whom, once more, you must also authorise to confirme y^e^ conditions. If M^r^. Winslow could be spared, I could wish he came

* But this lasted not long, they had now provided Lyford & others to send over.

† It is worthy to be observed, how y^e^ Lord doth chaing times & things; for what is now more plentifull then wine? and that of y^e^ best, coming from Malago, y^e^ Cannaries, and other places, sundry ships lading in a year. So as ther is now more cause to complaine of y^e^ excess and y^e^ abuse of wine (through mens corruption) even to drunkennes, then of any defecte or wante of y^e^ same. Witnes this year 1646. The good Lord lay not y^e^ sins & unthankfullnes of men to their charge in this perticuler.

againe. This ship carpenter is thought to be the fittest man for you in the land, and will no doubte doe you much good. Let him have an absolute comand over his servants & such as you put to him. Let him build you 2. catches, a lighter, and some 6. or 7. shalops, as soone as you can. The salt-man is a skillfull & industrious man, put some to him, that may quickly apprehende y^e^ misterie of it. The preacher we have sent is (we hope) an honest plaine man, though none of y^e^ most eminente and rare. Aboute chusing him into office use your owne liberty & discretion; he knows he is no officer amongst you, though perhaps custome & universalitie may make him forget him selfe. M^r^. Winslow & my selfe gave way to his going, to give contente to some hear, and we see no hurt in it, but only his great charge of children.

We have tooke a patente for Cap Anne, &c. I am sory ther is no more discretion used by some in their leters hither.* Some say you are starved in body & soule; others, y^t^ you eate piggs & doggs, that dye alone; others, that y^e^ things hear spoaken of, y^e^ goodnes of y^e^ cuntry, are gross and palpable lyes; that ther is scarce a foule to be seene, or a fish to be taken, and many such like. I would such discontented men were hear againe, for it is a miserie when y^e^ whole state of a plantation shall be thus exposed to y^e^ passionate humors of some discontented men. And for my selfe I shall hinder for hearafter some y^t^ would goe, and have not better composed their affections; mean space it is all our crosses, and we must bear them.

I am sorie we have not sent you more and other things, but in truth we have rune into so much charge, to victaile y^e^ ship, provide salte & other fishing implements, &c. as we could not provid other comfortable things, as buter, suger, &c. I hope the returne of this ship, and the James, will

* This was John Oldome & his like.

put us in cash againe. The Lord make you full of courage in this troublesome bussines, which now must be stuck unto, till God give us rest from our labours. Fare well in all harty affection.

Your assured freind,

Jan: 24. 1623. R. C.

With y^e^ former letter write by M^r^. Sherley, there were sente sundrie objections concerning which he thus writeth. "These are the cheefe objections which they [112] that are now returned make against you and the countrie. I pray you consider them, and answer them by the first conveniencie." These objections were made by some of those that came over on their perticuler and were returned home, as is before mentioned, and were of y^e^ same suite with those y^t^ this other letter mentions.

I shall here set them downe, with y^e^ answers then made unto them, and sent over at y^e^ returne of this ship; which did so confound y^e^ objecters, as some confessed their falte, and others deneyed what they had said, and eate their words, & some others of them have since come over againe and heere lived to convince them selves sufficiently, both in their owne & other mens judgments.

1. obj. was diversitie aboute Religion. Ans: We know no such matter, for here was never any controversie or opposition, either publicke or private, (to our knowledg,) since we came.

2. ob: Neglecte of familie duties, one y^e^ Lords day.

Ans. We allow no such thing, but blame it in our selves & others; and they that thus reporte it, should have shewed their Christian love the more if they had in love tould y^e^ offenders of it, rather then thus to reproach them behind their baks. But (to say no more) we wish them selves had given better example.

3. ob: Wante of both the sacrements.

Ans. The more is our greefe, that our pastor is kept from us, by whom we might injoye them; for we used to have the Lords Supper every Saboth, and baptisme as often as ther was occasion of children to baptise.

4. ob: Children not catechised nor taught to read.

Ans: Neither is true; for diverse take pains with their owne as they can; indeede, we have no c̄mone schoole for want of a fitt person, or hithertoo means to maintaine one; though we desire now to begine.

5. ob: Many of y^e^ perticuler members of y^e^ plantation will not work for y^e^ generall.

Ans: This allso is not wholy true; for though some doe it not willingly, & other not honestly, yet all doe it; and he that doth worst gets his owne foode & something besids. But we will not excuse them, but labour to reforme them y^e^ best we cane, or else to quitte y^e^ plantation of them.

6. ob: The water is not wholsome.

Ans: If they mean, not so wholsome as y^e^ good

beere and wine in London, (which they so dearly love,) we will not dispute with them; but els, for water, it is as good as any in y^e^ world, (for ought we knowe,) and it is wholsome enough to us that can be contente therwith.

7. ob: The ground is barren and doth bear no grasse.

[113] Ans: It is hear (as in all places) some better & some worse; and if they well consider their words, in England they shall not find such grasse in them, as in their feelds & meadows. The catle find grasse, for they are as fatt as need be; we wish we had but one for every hundred that hear is grase to keep. Indeed, this objection, as some other, are ridiculous to all here which see and know y^e^ contrary.

8. ob: The fish will not take salt to keepe sweete.

Ans: This is as true as that which was written, that ther is scarce a foule to be seene or a fish to be taken. Things likly to be true in a cuntrie wher so many sayle of ships come yearly a fishing; they might as well say, there can no aile or beere in London be kept from sowering.

9. ob: Many of them are theevish and steale on from an other.

Ans: Would London had been free from that crime, then we should not have been trobled with these here; it is well knowne sundrie have smarted well for it, and so are y^e^ rest like to doe, if they be taken.

10. ob: The countrie is anoyed with foxes and woules.

Ans: So are many other good cuntries too; but poyson, traps, and other such means will help to destroy them.

11. ob: The Dutch are planted nere Hudsons Bay, and are likely to overthrow the trade.

Ans: They will come and plante in these parts, also, if we and others doe not, but goe home and leave it to them. We rather commend them, then condemne them for it.

12. ob: The people are much anoyed with muskeetoes.

Ans: They are too delicate and unfitte to begine new-plantations and collonies, that cannot enduer the biting of a muskeeto; we would wish such to keepe at home till at least they be muskeeto proofe. Yet this place is as free as any, and experience teacheth that y^e^ more y^e^ land is tild, and y^e^ woods cut downe, the fewer ther will be, and in the end scarse any at all.

Having thus dispatcht these things, that I may handle things togeather, I shall here inserte 2. other letters from M^r^. Robinson their pastor; the one to y^e^ Gov^r^, y^e^ other to M^r^. Brewster their Elder, which will give much light to y^e^ former things, and express the tender love & care of a true pastor over them.

His leter to y^e^ Gov^r^.

My loving & much beloved freind, whom God hath hithertoo preserved, preserve and keepe you still to his glorie, and y^e^ good of many; that his blessing may make your godly and wise endeavours answerable to y^e^ valuation which they ther have, & set upon y^e^ same. Of your love too and care for us here, we never doubted; so are we glad to take knowledg of it in that fullnes we doe. Our love & care to and for you, is mutuall, though our hopes of coming [114] unto you be small, and weaker then ever. But of this at large in M^r^. Brewsters letter, with whom you, and he with you, mutualy, I know, comunicate your letters, as I desire you may doe these, &c.

Concerning y^e^ killing of those poor Indeans, of which we heard at first by reporte, and since by more certaine relation, oh! how happy a thing had it been, if you had converted some, before you had killed any; besids, wher bloud is onc begune to be shed, it is seldome stanched of a long time after. You will say they deserved it. I grant it; but upon what provocations and invitments by those heathenish Christians?* Besids, you, being no magistrats over them, were to consider, not what they deserved, but what you were by necessitie constrained to inflicte. Necessitie of this, espetially of killing so many, (and many more, it seems, they would, if they could,) I see not. Methinks on or tow principals should have been full enough, according to that approved rule, The punishmente to a few, and y^e^ fear to many. Upon this occasion let me be bould to exhorte you seriouly to consider of y^e^ dispossition of your Captaine, whom I love, and am perswaded y^e^ Lord in great mercie and for much good hath sent you him, if you use him aright. He is a man humble and meek amongst you, and towards all

* M^r^. Westons men.

in ordinarie course. But now if this be meerly from an humane spirite, ther is cause to fear that by occasion, espetially of provocation, ther may be wanting y^t^ tendernes of y^e^ life of man (made after Gods image) which is meete. It is also a thing more glorious in mens eyes, then pleasing in Gods, or conveniente for Christians, to be a terrour to poore barbarous people; and indeed I am afraid least, by these occasions, others should be drawne to affecte a kind of rufling course in the world. I doubt not but you will take in good part these things which I write, and as ther is cause make use of them. It were to us more comfortable and convenient, that we comunicated our mutuall helps in presence, but seeing that canot be done, we shall always long after you, and love you, and waite Gods apoynted time. The adventurers it seems have neither money nor any great mind of us, for y^e^ most parte. They deney it to be any part of y^e^ covenants betwixte us, that they should trāsporte us, neither doe I looke for any further help from them, till means come from you. We hear are strangers in effecte to y^e^ whole course, and so both we and you (save as your owne wisdoms and worths have intressed you further) of principals intended in this bussines, are scarce accessaries, &c. My wife, with me, resalute you & yours. Unto him who is y^e^ same to his in all places, and nere to them which are farr from one an other, I comend you and all with you, resting,

Yours truly loving,

JOHN ROBINSON.

Leyden, Des: 19. 1623.

His to M^r^. Brewster.

Loving and dear freind and brother: That which I most desired of God in regard of you, namly, y^e^ continuance of your life and health, and the safe coming of these sent unto

you, that I most gladly hear of, and praise God for the same. And I hope M^rs^. Brewsters weake and decayed state of body will have some reparing by the coming of her daughters, and the provissions in this and former ships, I hear is made for you; which maks us with more patience bear our languishing state, and y^e^ deferring of our desired trāsportation; w^ch^ I call desired, rather than hoped for, whatsoever you are borne in hand by any others. For first, ther is no hope at all, that I know, or can conceive of, of any new stock to be raised for that end; so that all must depend [115] upon returns from you, in which are so many uncertainties, as that nothing with any certaintie can thence be concluded. Besids, howsoever for y^e^ presente the adventurers aledg nothing but want of money, which is an invincible difculty, yet if that be taken away by you, others without doubte will be found. For the beter clearing of this, we must dispose y^e^ adventurers into 3. parts; and of them some 5. or 6. (as I conceive) are absolutly bent for us, above any others. Other 5. or 6. are our bitter professed adversaries. The rest, being the body, I conceive to be honestly minded, & loveingly also towards us; yet such as have others (namly y^e^ forward preachers) nerer unto them, then us, and whose course so farr as ther is any differance, they would rather advance then ours. Now what a hanck these men have over y^e^ professors, you know. And I perswade my selfe, that for me, they of all others are unwilling I should be transported, espetially such of them as have an eye that way them selves; as thinking if I come ther, ther market will be mard in many regards. And for these adversaries, if they have but halfe y^e^ witte to their malice, they will stope my course when they see it intended, for which this delaying serveth them very opportunly. And as one restie jade can hinder, by hanging back, more then two or 3. can (or will at least, if they be not very free) draw for-

ward, so will it be in this case. A notable * experimente of this, they gave in your messengers presence, constraining y^e^ company to promise that none of the money now gathered should be expended or imployed to y^e^ help of any of us towards you. Now touching y^e^ question propounded by you, I judg it not lawfull for you, being a ruling Elder, as Rom. 12. 7. 8. & 1. Tim. 5. 17. opposed to the Elders that teach & exhorte and labore in y^e^ word and doctrine, to which y^e^ sacrements are ānexed, to administer them, nor convenient if it were lawfull. Whether any larned man will come unto you or not, I know not; if any doe, you must *Consiliū capere in arena.* Be you most hartily saluted, & you^r^ wife with you, both from me & mine. Your God & ours, and y^e^ God of all his, bring us together if it be his will, and keep us in the mean while, and allways to his glory, and make us servisable to his majestie, and faithfull to the end. Amen.

Your very loving brother,

JOHN ROBINSON.

Leyden, Des: 20. 1623.

These things premised, I shall now prosecute y^e^ procedings and afairs here. And before I come to other things I must speak a word of their planting this year; they having found y^e^ benifite of their last years harvest, and setting corne for their particuler, having therby with a great deale of patience overcome hunger & famine. Which maks me remember a saing of Senecas, *Epis:* 123. *That a great parte of libertie is a well governed belly, and to be patiente in all wants.* They begane now highly to prise corne as

* *Notabe* in MS.

more pretious then silver, and those that had some to spare begane to trade one with another for smale things, by y^e^ quarte, potle, & peck, &c.; for money they had none, and if any had, corne was prefered before it. That they might therfore encrease their tillage to better advantage, they made suite [116] to the Gov^r^ to have some portion of land given them for continuance, and not by yearly lotte, for by that means, that which y^e^ more industrious had brought into good culture (by much pains) one year, came to leave it y^e^ nexte, and often another might injoye it; so as the dressing of their lands were the more sleighted over, & to lese profite. Which being well considered, their request was granted. And to every person was given only one acrre of land, to them & theirs, as nere y^e^ towne as might be, and they had no more till y^e^ 7. years were expired. The reason was, that they might be kept close together both for more saftie and defence, and y^e^ better improvement of y^e^ generall imployments. Which condition of theirs did make me often thinke, of what I had read in Plinie * of y^e^ Romans first beginings in Romulus time. *How every man contented him selfe with* 2. *Acres of land, and had no more assigned them. And chap.* 3. *It was thought a great reward, to receive at y^e^ hands of y^e^ people of Rome a pinte of corne. And long after, the greatest presente given to a Captaine y^t^ had gotte a*

* Plin: lib: 18. chap. 2.

victory over their enemise, was as much ground as they could till in one day. And he was not counted a good, but a dangerous man, that would not contente him selfe with 7. Acres of land. As also how they did pound their corne in morters, as these people were forcte to doe many years before they could get a mille.

The ship which brought this supply, was speedily discharged, and with her m^r^. & company sente to Cap-Anne (of which place they had gott a patente, as before is shewed) on fishing, and because y^e^ season was so farr spente some of y^e^ planters were sent to help to build their stage, to their owne hinderance. But partly by y^e^ latenes of y^e^ year, and more espetialy by y^e^ basnes of y^e^ m^r^., one Baker, they made a poore viage of it. He proved a very drunken beast, and did nothing (in a maner) but drink, & gusle, and consume away y^e^ time & his victails; and most of his company followed his example; and though M^r^. William Peirce was to over see the busines, & to be m^r^. of y^e^ ship home, yet he could doe no good amongst them, so as y^e^ loss was great, and would have bene more to them, but that they kept one a trading ther, which in those times got some store of skins, which was some help unto them.

The ship-carpenter that was sent them, was an honest and very industrious man, and followed his labour very dilligently, and made all that were im-

ployed with him doe y^e^ like; he quickly builte them 2. very good & strong shalops (which after did them greate service), and a great and strong lighter, and had hewne timber for 2. catches; but that was lost, for he fell into a feaver in y^e^ hote season of y^e^ year, and though he had the best means y^e^ place could aforde, yet he dyed; of whom they had a very [117] great loss, and were very sorie for his death. But he whom they sent to make salte was an ignorante, foolish, self-willd fellow; he bore them in hand he could doe great matters in making salt-works, so he was sente to seeke out fitte ground for his purpose; and after some serch he tould y^e^ Gov^r^ that he had found a sufficente place, with a good botome to hold water, and otherwise very conveniente, which he doubted not but in a short time to bring to good perfection, and to yeeld them great profite; but he must have 8. or ten men to be constantly imployed. He was wisht to be sure that y^e^ ground was good, and other things answerable, and y^t^ he could bring it to perfection; otherwise he would bring upon them a great charge by imploying him selfe and so many men. But he was, after some triall, so confidente, as he caused them to send carpenters to rear a great frame for a large house, to receive y^e^ salte & such other uses. But in y^e^ end all proved vaine. Then he layed fault of y^e^ ground, in which he was deceived; but if he might have the lighter to cary clay, he was sure then he could doe it. Now though

y^e^ Gov^r^ & some other foresaw that this would come to litle, yet they had so many malignant spirits amongst them, that would have laid it upon them, in their letters of complainte to y^e^ adventurers, as to be their falte y^t^ would not suffer him to goe on to bring his work to perfection; for as he by his bould confidence & large promises deceived them in England that sente him, so he had wound him selfe in to these mens high esteeme hear, so as they were faine to let him goe on till all men saw his vanity. For he could not doe any thing but boyle salt in pans, & yet would make them y^t^ were joynd with him beleeve ther was so grat a misterie in it as was not easie to be attained, and made them doe many unnecessary things to blind their eys, till they discerned his sutltie. The next yere he was sente to Cap-Anne, and y^e^ pans were set up ther wher the fishing was; but before som̄er was out, he bur̄te the house, and the fire was so vehemente as it spoyld the pans, at least some of them, and this was the end of that chargable bussines.

The 3^d.^ eminente person (which y^e^ letters before mention) was y^e^ minister which they sent over, by name M^r^. John Lyford, of whom & whose doing I must be more large, though I shall abridg things as much as I can. When this man first came a shore, he saluted them with that reverence & humilitie as is seldome to be seen, and indeed made them ashamed, he so bowed and cringed unto them, and would have kissed their

hands if they would have [118] suffered him;* yea, he wept & shed many tears, blessing God that had brought him to see their faces; and admiring y^e^ things they had done in their wants, &c. as if he had been made all of love, and y^e^ humblest person in y^e^ world. And all y^e^ while (if we may judg by his after cariags) he was but like him mentioned in Psa: 10. 10. That croucheth & boweth, that heaps of poore may fall by his might. Or like to that dissembling Ishmaell,† who, when he had slaine Gedelia, went out weeping and mette them y^t^ were coming to offer incence in y^e^ house of y^e^ Lord; saing, Come to Gedelia, when he ment to slay them. They gave him y^e^ best entertainment y^ey^ could, (in all simplisitie,) and a larger alowans of food out of y^e^ store then any other had, and as the Gov^r^ had used in all waightie affairs to consulte with their Elder, M^r^. Brewster, (togeither with his assistants,) so now he caled M^r^. Liford also to counsell with them in their waightiest bussineses. Ater some short time he desired to joyne himselfe a member to y^e^ church hear, and was accordingly received. He made a large confession of his faith, and an acknowledgemente of his former disorderly walking, and his being intangled with many corruptions, which had been a burthen to his conscience, and blessed God for this opportunitie of freedom & libertie to injoye y^e^ ordinances of God in puritie among his people, with many

* Of w^ch^ were many witneses. † Jer. 41. 6.

more such like expressions. I must hear speake a word also of Mr. John Oldom, who was a copartner with him in his after courses. He had bene a cheefe sticler in ye former faction among ye perticulers, and an intelligencer to those in England. But now, since the coming of this ship and he saw ye supply that came, he tooke occasion to open his minde to some of ye cheefe amongst them heere, and confessed he had done them wrong both by word & deed, & writing into England; but he now saw the eminente hand of God to be with them, and his blesing upon them, which made his hart smite him, neither should those in England ever use him as an instrumente any longer against them in any thing; he also desired former things might be forgotten, and that they would looke upon him as one that desired to close with them in all things, with such like expressions. Now whether this was in hipocrisie, or out of some sudden pange of conviction (which I rather thinke), God only knows. Upon it they shew all readynes to imbrace his love, and carry towards him in all frendlynes; and called him to counsell with them in all cheefe affairs, as ye other, without any distrust at all.

Thus all things seemed to goe very comfortably and smothly on amongst them, at which they did much rejoyce; but this lasted not [119] long, for both Oldom and he grew very perverse, and shewed a spirite of great malignancie, drawing as many into faction as

they could; were they never so vile or profane, they did nourish & back them in all their doings; so they would but cleave to them and speak against y^e^ church hear; so as ther was nothing but private meetings and whisperings amongst them; they feeding themselves & others with what they should bring to pass in England by the faction of their freinds their, which brought others as well as them selves into a fools paradise. Yet they could not cary so closly but much of both their doings & sayings were discovered, yet outwardly they still set a faire face of things.

At lenght when y^e^ ship was ready to goe, it was observed Liford was long in writing, & sente many letters, and could not forbear to comunicate to his intimats such things as made them laugh in their sleeves, and thought he had done ther errand sufficiently. The Gov^r^ and some other of his freinds knowing how things stood in England, and what hurt these things might doe, tooke a shalop and wente out with the ship a league or 2. to sea, and caled for all Lifords & Oldums letters. M^r^. William Peirce being m^r^. of y^e^ ship, (and knew well their evill dealing both in England & here,) afforded him all y^e^ assistance he could. He found above 20. of Lyfords letters, many of them larg, and full of slanders, & false accusations, tending not only to their prejudice, but to their ruine & utter subversion. Most of the letters they let pas, only tooke copys of them, but some of y^e^ most materiall

they sent true copyes of them, and kept y^e^ originalls, least he should deney them, and that they might produce his owne hand against him. Amongst his letters they found y^e^ coppyes of tow letters which he sent inclosed in a leter of his to M^r^. John Pemberton, a minster, and a great opposite of theirs. These 2. letters of which he tooke the coppyes were one of them write by a gentle-man in England to M^r^. Brewster here, the other by M^r^. Winslow to M^r^. Robinson, in Holand, at his coming away, as y^e^ ship lay at Gravsend. They lying sealed in y^e^ great cabin, (whilst M^r^. Winslow was bussie aboute the affairs of y^e^ ship,) this slye marchante taks & opens them, taks these coppys, & seals them up againe; and not only sends the coppyes of them thus to his friend and their adversarie, but adds thertoo in y^e^ margente many scurrilous and flouting añotations. This ship went out *towards ēving*, and *in the night* y^e^ Gov^r^ retu̅red. They were somwaht blanke at it, but after some weeks, when they heard nothing, they then were as briske as ever, thinking nothing had been knowne, but all was gone currente, and that the Gov^r^ went but to dispatch his owne letters. The reason why the Gov^r^ & rest concealed these things the longer, was to let things ripen, that they [120] might y^e^ better discover their intents and see who were their adherents. And y^e^ rather because amongst y^e^ rest they found a letter of one of their confederats, in w^ch^ was writen that M^r^. Oldame

& M^r^. Lyford intended a reformation in church and commone wealth; and, as soone as the ship was gone, they intended to joyne togeather, and have the sacrements, &c.

For Oldame, few of his leters were found, (for he was so bad a scribe as his hand was scarce legible,) yet he was as deepe in y^e^ mischeefe as the other. And thinking they were now strong enough, they begane to pick quarells at every thing. Oldame being called to watch (according to order) refused to come, fell out with y^e^ Capten, caled him raskell, and beggerly raskell, and resisted him, drew his knife at him; though he offered him no wrong, nor gave him no ille termes, but with all fairnes required him to doe his duty. The Gov^r^, hearing y^e^ tumulte, sent to quiet it, but he ramped more like a furious beast then a man, and cald them all treatours, and rebells, and other such foule language as I am ashamed to remember; but after he was clapt up a while, he came to him selfe, and with some slight punishmente was let goe upon his behaviour for further censure.

But to cutt things shorte, at length it grew to this esseue, that Lyford with his complicies, without ever speaking one word either to y^e^ Gov^r^, Church, or Elder, withdrewe them selves & set up a publick meeting aparte, on y^e^ Lord's day; with sundry such insolente cariages, too long here to relate, begining now publikly to acte what privatly they had been long plotting.

It was now thought high time (to prevent further mischeefe) to calle them to accounte; so y^e^ Gov^r^ called a courte and sum̄oned the whol company to appeare. And then charged Lyford & Oldom with such things as they were guilty of. But they were stiffe, & stood resolutly upon y^e^ deneyall of most things, and required proofe. They first alledged what was write to them out of England, compared with their doings & pactises hear; that it was evident they joyned in plotting against them, and disturbing their peace, both in respecte of their civill & church state, which was most injurious; for both they and all y^e^ world knew they came hither to injoye y^e^ libertie of their conscience and y^e^ free use of Gods ordinances; and for y^t^ end had ventured their lives and passed throwgh so much hardshipe hithertoo, and they and their freinds had borne the charg of these beginings, which was not small. And that Lyford for his parte was sent over on this charge, and that both he and his great family was maintained on y^e^ same, and also was joyned to y^e^ church, & a member of them; and for him to plote against them & seek their ruine, was most unjust & perfidious. And for [121] Oldam or any other that came over at their owne charge, and were on ther perticuler, seeing they were received in curtesie by the plantation, when they came only to seeke shelter & protection under their wings, not being able to stand alone, that they, (according to y^e^ fable,)

like the Hedghogg whom y^e^ conny in a stormy day in pittie received into her borrow, would not be content to take part with her, but in the end with her sharp pricks forst the poore conny to forsake her owne borrow; so these men with the like injustice indevored to doe y^e^ same to thos that entertained them.

Lyford denyed that he had any thing to doe with them in England, or knew of their courses, and made other things as strange that he was charged with. Then his letters were prodused & some of them read, at which he was struck mute. But Oldam begane to rage furiously, because they had intercepted and opened his letters, threatening them in very high language, and in a most audacious and mutinous maner stood up & caled upon y^e^ people, saying, My maisters, wher is your harts? now shew your courage, you have oft complained to me so & so; now is y^e^ time, if you will doe any thing, I will stand by you, &c. Thinking y^t^ every one (knowing his humor) that had soothed and flattered him, or other wise in their discontente uttered any thing unto him, would now side w^th^ him in open rebellion. But he was deceived, for not a man opened his mouth, but all were silent, being strucken with the injustice of y^e^ thing. Then y^e^ Gov^r^ turned his speech to M^r^. Lyford, and asked him if he thought they had done evill to open his letters; but he was silente, & would not say a word, well knowing what they might reply. Then y^e^ Gov^r^ shewed the people he did it as

a magistrate, and was bound to it by his place, to prevent y^e^ mischeefe & ruine that this conspiracie and plots of theirs would bring on this poor colony. But he, besids his evill dealing hear, had delte trecherusly with his freinds y^t^ trusted him, & stole their letters & opened them, and sent coppies of them, with disgracefull a̅notations, to his freinds in England. And then y^e^ Gov^r^ produced them and his other letters under his owne hand, (which he could not deney,) and caused them to be read before all y^e^ people; at which all his freinds were blanke, and had not a word to say.

It would be too long & tedious here to inserte his letters (which would almost fill a volume), though I have them by me. I shall only note a few of y^e^ cheefe things collected out of them, with y^e^ answers to them as they were then given; and but a few of those many, only for instance, by which the rest may be judged of.

[121*] 1. First, he saith, the church would have none to live hear but them selves. 2^ly^. Neither are any willing so to doe if they had company to live elswher.

Ans: Their answer was, that this was false, in both y^e^ parts of it; for they were willing & desirous y^t^ any honest men may live with them, that will cary them selves peacably, and seek y^e^ co̅mone good, or at least doe them no hurte. And againe, ther are many that

* 121 is repeated in the paging of the original.

will not live els wher so long as they may live with them.

2. That if ther come over any honest men that are not of y^e^ seperation, they will quickly distast them, &c.

A. Ther answer was as before, that it was a false callumniation, for they had many amongst them that they liked well of, and were glad of their company; and should be of any such like that should come amongst them.

3. That they excepted against him for these 2. doctrins raised from 2. Sam: 12. 7. First, that ministers must sume times perticulerly apply their doctrine to spetiall persons; 2^ly^, that great men may be reproved as well as meaner.

A. Their answer was, that both these were without either truth or colour of y^e^ same (as was proved to his face), and that they had taught and beleeved these things long before they knew M^r^. Liford.

4. That they utterly sought y^e^ ruine of y^e^ perticulers; as appeareth by this, that they would not suffer any of y^e^ generall either to buy or sell with them, or to exchaing one comoditie for another.

Ans: This was a most malicious slander and voyd of all truth, as was evidently proved to him before all men; for any of them did both buy, sell, or exchaing with them as often as they had any occation. Yea, and allso both lend & give to them when they wanted; and this the perticuler persons them selves could not

deney, but freely confest in open court. But y^e^ ground from whence this arose made it much worse, for he was in counsell with them. When one was called before them, and questioned for receiving powder and bisket from y^e^ gun̄er of y^e^ small ship, which was y^e^ companys, and had it put in at his window in the night, and allso for buying salt of one, that had no right to it, he not only stood to back him (being one of these perticulers) by excusing & extenuating his falte, as long as he could, but upon this builds this mischeēous & most false slander: That because they would not suffer them to buy stolne goods, ergo, they sought their utter ruine. Bad logick for a devine.

5. Next he writs, that he chocked them with this; that they turned [122] men into their perticuler, and then sought to starve them, and deprive them of all means of subsistance.

A. To this was answered, he did them manifest wrong, for they turned none into their perticuler; it was their owne importunitie and ernest desire that moved them, yea, constrained them to doe it. And they apealed to y^e^ persons them selves for y^e^ truth hereof. And they testified the same against him before all present, as allso that they had no cause to complaine of any either hard or unkind usage.

6. He accuseth them with unjust distribution, and writeth, that it was a strang difference, that some have bene alowed 16^li^. of meale by y^e^ weeke, and others

but 4li. And then (floutingly) saith, it seems some mens mouths and bellies are very litle & slender over others.

Ans: This might seeme strange indeed to those to whom he write his leters in England, which knew not ye reason of it; but to him and others hear, it could not be strange, who knew how things stood. For the first comers had none at all, but lived on their corne. Those wch *came in ye Anne, ye August before*, & were to live 13. months of the provissions they brought, had as good alowance in meal & pease as it would extend too, ye most part of ye year; but a litle before harvest, when they had not only fish, but other fruits began to come in, they had but 4li. having their libertie to make their owne provisions. But some of these which came last, as ye ship carpenter, and samiers, the salte-men & others that were to follow constante imployments, and had not an howers time, from their hard labours, to looke for any thing above their alowance; they had at first, 16li alowed them, and afterwards as fish, & other food coued be gott, they had as balemente, to 14. &. 12. yea some of them to 8. as the times & occasions did vary. And yet those which followed planting and their owne occasions, and had but 4li. of meall a week, lived better then ye other, as was well knowne to all. And yet it must be remembered that Lyford & his had allwais the highest alowance.

Many other things (in his letters) he accused them of, with many aggravations; as that he saw exseeding great wast of tools & vesseles; & this, when it came to be examened, all y^e^ instance he could give was, that he had seen an old hogshed or too fallen to peeces, and a broken how or tow lefte carlesly in y^e^ feilds by some. Though he also knew that a godly, honest man was appointed to looke to these things. But these things & such like was write of by him, to cast disgrace & prejudice upon them; as thinking what came from a [123] minister would pass for currente. Then he tells them that Winslow should say, that ther was not above 7. of y^e^ adventurers y^t^ souight y^e^ good of y^e^ collony. That M^r^. Oldam & him selfe had had much to doe with them, and that y^e^ faction here might match y^e^ Jesuits for politie. With many y^e^ like greevious complaints & accusations.

1. Then, in the next place, he comes to give his freinds counsell and direcction. And first, that y^e^ Leyden company (M^r^. Robinson & y^e^ rest) must still be kepte back, or els all will be spoyled. And least any of them should be taken in privatly somewher on y^e^ coast of England, (as it was feared might be done,) they must chaing the m^r^. of y^e^ ship (M^r^. William Peirce), and put another allso in Winslows stead, for marchante, or els it would not be prevented.

2. Then he would have such a number provided as might oversway them hear. And that y^e^ perticulers

should have voyces in all courts & elections, and be free to bear any office. And that every perticuler should come over as an adventurer, if he be but a servante; some other venturing 10^{li}., y^{e} bill may be taken out in y^{e} servants name, and then assigned to y^{e} party whose money it was, and good covenants drawn betweene them for y^{e} clearing of y^{e} matter; and this (saith he) would be a means to strengthen this side y^{e} more.

3. Then he tells them that if that Capten they spoake of should come over hither as a generall, he was perswaded he would be chosen Capten; for this Captaine Standish looks like a silly boy, and is in utter contempte.

4. Then he shows that if by y^{e} forementioned means they cannot be strengthened to cary & overbear things, it will be best for them to plant els wher by them selves; and would have it artickled by them that they might make choyse of any place that they liked best within 3. or 4. myls distance, shewing ther were farr better places for plantation then this.

5. And lastly he concluds, that if some number came not over to bear them up here, then ther would be no abiding for them, but by joyning with these hear. Then he adds: Since I begane to write, ther are letters come from your company, wherin they would give sole authoritie in diverce things unto the

Gov^r here; which, if it take place, then, *Ve nobis.* But I hope you will be more vigilante hereafter, that nothing may pass in such a mañer. I suppose (saith he) M^r. Oldame will write to you further of these things. I pray you conceall me in the discovery of these things, &c.

Thus I have breefly touched some cheefe things in his leters, and shall now returne to their procceeding with him. After the reading of his leters before the whole company, he was demanded what he could say to these things. [124] But all y^e answer he made was, that Billington and some others had informed him of many things, and made sundrie complaints, which they now deneyed. He was againe asked if that was a sufficiente ground for him thus to accuse & traduse them by his letters, and never say word to them, considering the many bonds betweene them. And so they went on from poynte to poynte; and wisht him, or any of his freinds & confederats, not to spare them in any thing; if he or they had any proofe or witnes of any corrupte or evill dealing of theirs, his or their evidence must needs be ther presente, for ther was the whole company and sundery strangers. He said he had been abused by others in their informations, (as he now well saw,) and so had abused them. And this was all the answer they could have, for none would take his parte in any thing; but Billington, & any whom he named, deneyed the things, and protested he

wronged them, and would have drawne them to such & such things which they could not consente too, though they were sometimes drawne to his meetings. Then they delte with him aboute his dissembling with them aboute y^e^ church, and that he professed to concur with them in all things, and what a large confession he made at his admittance, and that he held not him selfe a minister till he had a new calling, &c. And yet now he contested against them, and drew a company aparte, & sequestred him selfe; and would goe minister the sacrements (by his Episcopall caling) without ever speaking a word unto them, either as magistrats or bretheren. In conclusion, he was fully convicted, and burst out into tears, and "confest he feared he was a reprobate, his sinns were so great that he doubted God would not pardon them, he was unsavorie salte, &c.; and that he had so wronged them as he could never make them amends, confessing all he had write against them was false & nought, both for matter & mañer." And all this he did with as much fullnes as words & tears could express.

After their triall & conviction, the court censured them to be expeld the place; Oldame presently, though his wife & family had liberty to stay all winter, or longer, till he could make provission to remove them comfortably. Lyford had liberty to stay 6. months. It was, indeede, with some eye to his release, if he

caried him selfe well in the meane time, and that his repentance proved sound. Lyford acknowledged his censure was farr less then he deserved.

Afterwards, he confest his sin publikly in y^e^ church, with tears more largly then before. I shall here put it downe as I find it recorded by some who tooke it from his owne words, as him selfe utered them. Acknowledging [125] "That he had don very evill, and slanderously abused them; and thinking most of y^e^ people would take parte with him, he thought to cary all by violence and strong hand against them. And that God might justly lay in̄ocente blood to his charge, for he knew not what hurt might have come of these his writings, and blest God they were stayed. And that he spared not to take knowledg from any, of any evill that was spoaken, but shut his eyes & ears against all the good; and if God should make him a vacabund in y^e^ earth, as was Caine, it was but just, for he had sined in envie & malice against his brethren as he did. And he confessed 3. things to be y^e^ ground & causes of these his doings: pride, vaineglorie, & selfe love." Amplifying these heads with many other sade expressions, in the perticulers of them.

So as they begane againe to conceive good thoughts of him upon this his repentance, and admited him to teach amongst them as before; and Samuell Fuller (a deacon amongst them), and some other tender harted

men amongst them, were so taken with his signes of sorrow & repentance, as they professed they would fall upon their knees to have his censure released.

But that which made them all stand amased in the end, and may doe all others that shall come to hear y^e^ same, (for a rarer president can scarse be showne,) was, that after a month or 2. notwithstand all his former conffessions, convictions, and publick acknowledgments, both in y^e^ face of y^e^ church and whole company, with so many tears & sadde censures of him selfe before God & men, he should goe againe to justifie what he had done.

For secretly he write a 2^d^. leter to y^e^ adventurers in England, in w^ch^ he justified all his former writings, (save in some things which tended to their damage,) the which, because it is brefer then y^e^ former, I shall here inserte.

Worthy S^rs^: Though the filth of mine owne doings may justly be cast in my face, and with blushing cause my perpetuall silence, yet that y^e^ truth may not herby be injuried, your selves any longer deluded, nor injurious * dealing caried out still, with bould out facings, I have adventured once more to write unto you. Firest, I doe freely confess I delte very indiscreetly in some of my perticuler leters w^ch^ I wrote to private freinds, for y^e^ courses in coming hither & the like; which I doe in no sorte seeke to justifie, though stired up ther unto in the beholding y^e^ indirecte courses held by

* *Inurious* in MS.

others, both hear, & ther with you, for effecting their designes. But am hartily sory for it, and doe to y^e^ glory of God & mine owne shame acknowledg it. Which leters being intercepted by the Gov^r^, I have for y^e^ same undergone y^e^ censure [126] of banishmente. And had it not been for y^e^ respecte I have unto you, and some other matters of private regard, I had returned againe at this time by y^e^ pinass for England; for hear I purpose not to abide, unless I receive better incouragmente from you, then from y^e^ church (as they call them selves) here I doe receive. I purposed before I came, to undergoe hardnes, therfore I shall I hope cherfully bear y^e^ conditions of y^e^ place, though very mean; and they have chainged my wages ten times allready. I suppose my letters, or at least y^e^ coppies of them, are come to your hands, for so they hear reporte; which, if it be so, I pray you take notice of this, that I have writen nothing but what is certainly true, and I could make so apeare planly to any indifferente men, whatsoever colours be cast to darken y^e^ truth, and some ther are very audatious this way; besids many other matters which are farre out of order hear. My mind was not to enlarge my selfe any further, but in respecte of diverse poore souls here, y^e^ care of whom in parte belongs to you, being here destitute of the meās of salvation. For how so ever y^e^ church are provided for, to their contente, who are y^e^ smalest number in y^e^ collony, and doe so appropriate y^e^ ministrie to them selves, houlding this principle, that y^e^ Lord hath not appointed any ordinary ministrie for y^e^ conversion of those y^t^ are without, so y^t^ some of y^e^ poor souls have w^th^ tears complained of this to me, and I was taxed for preaching to all in generall. Though in truth they have had no ministrie here since they came, but such as may be performed by any of you, by their owne possition, what soever great pretences they make; but herin they equivocate, as in many other things they doe.

But I exceede y^e^ bounds I set my selfe, therfore resting thus, untill I hear further from you, so it be within y^e^ time limited me. I rest, &c.,

Remaining yours ever,

JOHN LYFORD, Exille.

Dated Aug: 22. An^o^: 1624.

They made a breefe answer to some things in this leter, but referred cheefly to their former. The effecte was to this purpose: That if God in his providence had not brought these things to their hands (both y^e^ former & later), they might have been thus abused, tradused, and calumniated, overthrowne, & undone; and never have knowne by whom, nor for what. They desired but this equall favoure, that they would be pleased to hear their just defence, as well as his accusations, and waigh them in y^e^ balance of justice & reason, and then censure as they pleased. They had write breefly to y^e^ heads of things before, and should be ready to give further [127] answer as any occasion should require; craving leave to adde a word or tow to this last.

1. And first, they desire to examene what filth that was y^t^ he acknowledgeth might justly be throwne in his face, and might cause blushing & perpetuall silence; some great mater sure! But if it be looked into, it amounts to no more then a poynte of indiscretion, and thats all; and yet he licks of y^t^ too with this excuse, that he was stired up therunto by behold-

ing y^e^ indirecte course here. But this point never troubled him here, it was counted a light matter both by him & his freinds, and put of with this, — that any man might doe so, to advise his private freinds to come over for their best advantage. All his sorrow & tears here was for y^e^ wrong & hurt he had done us, and not at all for this he pretends to be done to you: it was not counted so much as indiscretion.

2. Having thus payed you full satisfaction, he thinks he may lay load of us here. And first complains that we have changed his wages ten times. We never agreed with him for any wages, nor made any bargen at all with him, neither know of any that you have made. You sent him over to teach amongst us, and desired he might be kindly used; and more then this we know not. That he hath beene kindly used, (and farr beter then he deserves from us,) he shall be judged first of his owne mouth. If you please to looke upon that writing of his, that was sent you amongst his leters, which he cals a generall relation, in which, though he doth otherwise traduse us, yet in this he him selfe clears us. In y^e^ latter end therof he hath these words. *I speak not this* (saith he) *out of any ill affection to the men, for I have found them very kind & loving to me.* You may ther see these to be his owne words under his owne hand. 2^ly^. It will appere by this that he hath ever had a larger alowance of food

out of y^e^ store for him and his then any, and clothing as his neede hath required; a dwelling in one of our best houses, and a man wholy at his owne com̄and to tend his private affairs. What cause he hath therfore to complaine, judge ye; and what he means in his speech we know not, except he aluds to y^t^ of Jaacob & Laban. If you have promised him more or other wise, you may doe it when you please.

3. Then with an impudente face he would have you take notice, that (in his leters) he hath write nothing but what is certainly true, yea, and he could make it so appeare plainly to any indifferente men. This indeed doth astonish us and causeth us to tremble at y^e^ deceitfullnes [128] and desperate wickednes of mans harte. This is to devoure holy things, and after voues to enquire. It is admirable that after such publick confession, and acknowledgmente in court, in church, before God, & men, with such sadd expressions as he used, and with such melting into teares, that after all this he shoud now justifie all againe. If things had bene done in a corner, it had been some thinge to deney them; but being done in y^e^ open view of y^e^ cuntrie & before all men, it is more then strange now to avow to make them plainly appear to any indifferente men; and here wher things were done, and all y^e^ evidence that could be were presente, and yet could make nothing appear, but even

his freinds condemnd him & gave their voyce to his censure, so grose were they; we leave your selves to judge herein. Yet least this man should triumph in his wikednes, we shall be ready to answer him, when, or wher you will, to any thing he shall lay to our charg, though we have done it sufficiently allready.

4. Then he saith he would not inlarge, but for some poore souls here who are destiute of y^e^ means of salvation, &c. But all his soothing is but that you would use means, that his censure might be released that he might here continue; and under you (at least) be sheltered, till he sees what his freinds (on whom he depends) can bring about & effecte. For such men pretend much for poor souls, but they will looke to their wages & conditions; if that be not to their content, let poor souls doe what they will, they will shift for them selves, and seek poore souls some wher els among richer bodys.

Next he fals upon y^e^ church, that indeed is y^e^ burthensome stone that troubls him. First, he saith they hold this principle, that the Lord hath not apointed any ordinarie ministrie for y^e^ converssion of those without. The church needs not be ashamed of what she houlds in this, haveing Gods word for her warrente; that ordinarie officers are bound cheefly to their flocks, Acts 20. 28. and are not to be extravagants, to goe, come, and leave them at their pleasurs to shift for them selves, or to be devoured of wolves.

But he perverts y^e^ truth in this as in other things, for y^e^ Lord hath as well appoynted them to converte, as to feede in their severall charges; and he wrongs y^e^ church to say other wise. Againe, he saith he was taxed for preaching to all in generall. This is a meere untruth, for this dissembler knows that every Lords day some are appointed to visite suspected places, & if any be found idling and neglecte y^e^ hearing of y^e^ word, (through idlnes or profanes,) they are punished for y^e^ same. Now to procure all to come to hear, and then to blame him for preaching to all, were to play y^e^ mad men.

[129] 6. Next (he saith) they have had no ministrie since they came, what soever pretences they make, &c. We answer, the more is our wrong, that our pastor is kept from us by these mens means, and then reproach us for it when they have done. Yet have we not been wholy distitute of y^e^ means of salvation, as this man would make y^e^ world beleeve; for our reve^d^ Elder hath laboured diligently in dispencing the word of God unto us, before he came; and since hath taken equalle pains with him selfe in preaching the same; and, be it spoaken without ostentation, he is not inferriour to M^r^. Lyford (& some of his betters) either in gifts or larning, though he would never be perswaded to take higher office upon him. Nor ever was more pretended in this matter. For equivocating, he may take it to

him selfe; what y^e^ church houlds, they have manifested to y^e^ world, in all plaines, both in open confession, doctrine, & writing.

This was y^e^ sume of ther answer, and hear I will let them rest for y^e^ presente. I have bene longer in these things then I desired, and yet not so long as the things might require, for I pass many things in silence, and many more deserve to have been more largly handled. But I will returne to other things, and leave y^e^ rest to its place.

The pinass that was left sunck & cast away near Damarins-cove, as is before showed, some of y^e^ fishing maisters said it was a pity so fine a vessell should be lost, and sent them word that, if they would be at y^e^ cost, they would both directe them how to waygh her, and let them have their carpenters to mend her. They thanked them, & sente men aboute it, and beaver to defray y^e^ charge, (without which all had been in vaine). So they gott coopers to trime, I know not how many tune of cask, and being made tight and fastened to her at low-water, they boyed her up; and then with many hands hald her on shore in a conveniente place wher she might be wrought upon; and then hired sundrie carpenters to work upon her, and other to saw planks, and at last fitted her & got her home. But she cost a great deale of money, in thus recovering her, and buying riging & seails for her, both now

and when before she lost her mast; so as she proved a chargable vessell to y^e^ poor plantation. So they sent her home, and with her Lyford sent his last letter, in great secrecie; but y^e^ party intrusted with it gave it y^e^ Gov^r^.

The winter was passed over in ther ordinarie affairs, without any spetiall mater worth noteing; saveing that many who before stood something of from y^e^ church, now seeing Lyfords unrighteous dealing, and malignitie against y^e^ church, now tendered them selves to y^e^ church, and were joyned to y^e^ same; proffessing that it was not out of y^e^ dislike of any thing that they had stood of so long, but a desire to fitte them selves beter for such a state, and they saw now y^e^ Lord cald for their help. [130] And so these troubls produsced a quite contrary effecte in sundrie hear, then these adversaries hoped for. Which was looked at as a great worke of God, to draw on men by unlickly means; and that in reason which might rather have set them further of. And thus I shall end this year.

Anno Dom: 1625.

At y^e^ spring of y^e^ year, about y^e^ time of their Election Court, Oldam came againe amongst them; and though it was a part of his censure for his former mutinye and miscariage, not to returne without leave first obtained, yet in his dareing spirite, he presumed

without any leave at all, being also set on & hardened by y^e^ ill counsell of others. And not only so, but suffered his unruly passion to rune beyond y^e^ limits of all reason and modestie; in so much that some strangers which came with him were ashamed of his outrage, and rebuked him; but all reprofes were but as oyle to y^e^ fire, and made y^e^ flame of his coller greater. He caled them all to nought, in this his mad furie, and a hundred rebells and traytors, and I know not what. But in conclusion they cõmited him till he was tamer, and then apointed a gard of musketers w^ch^ he was to pass throw, and ever one was ordered to give him a thump on y^e^ brich, with y^e^ but end of his musket, and then was conveied to y^e^ water side, wher a boat was ready to cary him away. Then they bid him goe & mende his maners.

Whilst this was a doing, M^r^. William Peirce and M^r^. Winslow came up from y^e^ water side, being come from England; but they were so busie with Oldam, as they never saw them till they came thus upon them. They bid them not spare either him or Liford, for they had played y^e^ vilans with them. But that I may hear make an end with him, I shall hear once for all relate what befell concerning him in y^e^ future, & y^t^ breefly. After y^e^ removall of his familie from hence, he fell into some straits, (as some others did,) and aboute a year or more afterwards, towards winter, he intended a vioage for Virginia; but it so

pleased God that y^e^ barke that caried him, and many other passengers, was in that danger, as they dispaired of life; so as many of them, as they fell to prayer, so also did they begine to examine their consciences [131] and confess such sins as did most burthen them. And M^r^. Ouldame did make a free and large confession of y^e^ wrongs and hurt he had done to y^e^ people and church here, in many perticulers, that as he had sought their ruine, so God had now mette with him and might destroy him; yea, he feared they all fared y^e^ worce for his sake; he prayed God to forgive him, and made vowes that, if y^e^ Lord spard his life, he would become otherwise, and y^e^ like. This I had from some of good credite, yet living in y^e^ Bay, and were them selves partners in the same dangers on y^e^ shoulds of Cap-Codd, and heard it from his owne mouth. It pleased God to spare their lives, though they lost their viage; and in time after wards, Ouldam caried him selfe fairly towards them, and acknowledged y^e^ hand of God to be with them, and seemed to have an honourable respecte of them; and so farr made his peace with them, as he in after time had libertie to goe and come, and converse with them, at his pleasure. He went after this to Virginia, and had ther a great sickness, but recovered and came back againe to his familie in y^e^ Bay, and ther lived till some store of people came over. At lenght going a trading in a smale ves-

sell among y^e^ Indians, and being weakly mand, upon some quarell they knockt him on y^e^ head with a hatched, so as he fell downe dead, & never spake word more. 2. litle boys that were his kinsmen were saved, but had some hurte, and y^e^ vessell was strangly recovered from y^e^ Indeans by another that belonged to y^e^ Bay of Massachusets; and this his death was one ground of the Pequente warr which followed.

I am now come to M^r^. Lyford. His time being now expired, his censure was to take place. He was so farre from answering their hopes by amendmente in y^e^ time, as he had dubled his evill, as is before noted. But first behold y^e^ hand of God conceiving him, wherin that of y^e^ Psalmist is verified. Psa: 7. 15. He hath made a pitte, & digged it, and is fallen into the pitte he made. He thought to bring shame and disgrace upon them, but in stead therof opens his owne to all y^e^ world. For when he was delte with all aboute his second letter, his wife was so affected with his doings, as she could no longer conceaill her greefe and sorrow of minde, but opens y^e^ same to one of their deacons & some other of her freinds, & after uttered y^e^ same to M^r^. Peirce upon his arrivall. Which was to this purpose, that she feared some great judgment of God would fall upon them, and upon her, for her husbands cause; now that they were to remove, she feared to fall into y^e^ Indeans hands, and to be defiled by them, as he had

defiled other women; or some shuch like [132] judgmente, as God had threatened David, 2. Sam. 12. 11. I will raise up evill against y^e^, and will take thy wives & give them, &c. And upon it showed how he had wronged her, as first he had a bastard by another before they were maried, & she having some inkling of some ill cariage that way, when he was a suitor to her, she tould him what she heard, & deneyd him; but she not certainly knowing y^e^ thing, other wise then by some darke & secrete muterings, he not only stifly denied it, but to satisfie her tooke a solemne oath ther was no shuch matter. Upon which she gave consente, and maried with him; but afterwards it was found true, and y^e^ bastard brought home to them. She then charged him with his oath, but he prayed pardon, and said he should els not have had her. And yet afterwards she could keep no maids but he would be medling with them, and some time she hath taken him in y^e^ maner, as they lay at their beds feete, with shuch other circumstances as I am ashamed to relate. The woman being a grave matron, & of good cariage all y^e^ while she was hear, and spoake these things out of y^e^ sorrow of her harte, sparingly, and yet w^th^ some further intimations. And that which did most seeme to affecte her (as they conceived) was, to see his former cariage in his repentance, not only hear with y^e^ church, but formerly about these things; sheding

tears, and using great & sade expressions, and yet eftsone fall into the like things.

Another thing of y^e^ same nature did strangly concurr herewith. When M^r^. Winslow & M^r^. Peirce were come over, M^r^. Winslow informed them that they had had y^e^ like bickering with Lyfords freinds in England, as they had with him selfe and his freinds hear, aboute his letters & accusations in them. And many meetings and much clamour was made by his freinds theraboute, crying out, a minister, a man so godly, to be so esteemed & taxed they held a great skandale, and threated to prosecute law against them for it. But things being referred to a further meeting of most of y^e^ adventurers, to heare y^e^ case and decide y^e^ matters, they agreed to chose 2. eminente men for moderators in the bussines. Lyfords faction chose M^r^. White, a counselor at law, the other parte chose Reve^d^. M^r^. Hooker, y^e^ minister, and many freinds on both sids were brought in, so as ther was a great assemblie. In y^e^ mean time, God in his providence had detected Lyford's evill cariage in Ireland to some freinds amongst y^e^ company, who made it knowne to M^r^. Winslow, and directed him to 2. godly and grave witnesses, who would testifie y^e^ same (if caled therunto) upon their oath. The thing was this; he being gott into Ireland, had wound him selfe into y^e^ esteeme of sundry godly & zelous professours in those parts, who, having been burthened with y^e^ ceremonies in England, found ther

some more liberty to their consciences; amongst whom were these 2. men, which gave [133] this evidence. Amongst y^e^ rest of his hearers, ther was a godly yonge man that intended to marie, and cast his affection on a maide which lived their aboute; but desiring to chose in y^e^ Lord, and preferred y^e^ fear of God before all other things, before he suffered his affection to rune too farr, he resolved to take M^r^. Lyfords advise and judgmente of this maide, (being y^e^ minister of y^e^ place,) and so broak y^e^ matter unto him; & he promised faithfully to informe him, but would first take better knowledg of her, and have private conferance with her; and so had sundry times; and in conclusion cō̄ended her highly to y^e^ yong man as a very fitte wife for him. So they were maried togeather; but some time after mariage the woman was much troubled in mind, and afflicted in conscience, and did nothing but weepe and mourne, and long it was before her husband could get of her what was y^e^ cause. But at length she discovered y^e^ thing, and prayed him to forgive her, for Lyford had overcome her, and defiled her body before marriage, after he had comended him unto her for a husband, and she resolved to have him, when he came to her in that private way. The circumstances I forbear, for they would offend chast ears to hear them related, (for though he satisfied his lust on her, yet he indeaoured to hinder conception.) These things being thus discovered, y^e^ womās husband tooke some

godly freinds with him, to deale with Liford for this evill. At length he confest it, with a great deale of seeming sorrow & repentance, but was forct to leave Irland upon it, partly for shame, and partly for fear of further punishmente, for y^e^ godly withdrew them selves from him upon it; and so coming into England unhapily he was light upon & sente hither.

But in this great assembly, and before y^e^ moderators, in handling y^e^ former matters aboute y^e^ letters, upon provocation, in some heate of replie to some of Lyfords defenders, M^r^. Winslow let fall these words, That he had delte knavishly; upon which on of his freinds tooke hold, & caled for witneses, that he cald a minister of y^e^ gospell knave, and would prosecute law upon it, which made a great tumulte, upon which (to be shorte) this matter broke out, and the witnes were prodused, whose persons were so grave, and evidence so plaine, and y^e^ facte so foule, yet delivered in such modest & chast terms, and with such circumstances, as strucke all his freinds mute, and made them all ashamed; insomuch as y^e^ moderators with great gravitie declared that y^e^ former matters gave them cause enough to refuse him & to deal with him as they had done, but these made him unmeete for ever to bear ministrie any more, what repentance soever he should pretend; with much more to like effecte, and so wisht his freinds to rest quiete. Thus was this matter ended.

From hence Lyford wente to Natasco, in y^e^ Bay of

y^e^ Massachusets, with some other of his freinds with him, wher Oldom allso lived. From thence he removed to Namkeke, since called Salem; but after ther came some people over, wheather for hope of greater profite, or what ends els I know not, he left his freinds that followed him, and went from thence to Virginia, wher he shortly after dyed, and so I leave him to y^e^ Lord. His wife afterwards returned againe to this cuntry, and thus much of this matter.

[134] This storme being thus blowne over, yet sundrie sad effects followed y^e^ same; for the Company of Adventurers broake in peeces here upon, and y^e^ greatest parte wholy deserted y^e^ colony in regarde of any further supply, or care of their subsistance. And not only so, but some of Lyfords & Oldoms freinds, and their adherents, set out a shipe on fishing, on their owne accounte, and getting y^e^ starte of y^e^ ships that came to the plantation, they tooke away their stage, & other necessary provisions that they had made for fishing at Cap-Anne y^e^ year before, at their great charge, and would not restore y^e^ same, excepte they would fight for it. But y^e^ Gov^r^ sent some of y^e^ planters to help y^e^ fisher men to build a new one, and so let them keepe it. This shipe also brought them some small supply, of little value; but they made so pore a bussines of their fishing, (neither could these men make them any returne for y^e^ supply sente,) so as, after this year, they never looked more after them.

Also by this ship, they, some of them, sent (in y^e^ name of y^e^ rest) certaine reasons of their breaking of from y^e^ plantation, and some tenders, upon certaine conditions, of reuniting againe. The which because they are longe & tedious, and most of them aboute the former things already touched, I shall omite them; only giveing an instance in one, or tow. 1. reason, they charged them for dissembling with his majestie in their petition, and with y^e^ adventurers about y^e^ French discipline, &c. 2^ly^, for receiving * a man † into their church, that in his confession renownced all, universall, nationall, and diocessan churches, &c., by which (say they) it appears, that though they deney the name of Brow̄ists, yet they practiss y^e^ same, &c. And therfore they should siñe against God in building up such a people.

Then they adde: Our dislikes thus laid downe, that we may goe on in trade w^th^ better contente & credite, our desires are as followeth. First, that as we are partners in trade, so we may be in Gov̄^rt^ ther, as the patente doth give us power, &c.

2. That the French discipline may be practised in the plantation, as well in the circumstances theirof, as in y^e^ substance; wherby y^e^ scandallous name of y^e^ Brownists, and other church differences, may be taken away.

3. Lastly, that M^r^. Robinson and his company may not goe over to our plantation, unless he and they

* *Receive* in the manuscript.

† This was Lyford himselfe.

will reconcile themselves to our church by a recantation under their hands, &c.

Their answer in part to these things was then as foloweth.

Wheras you taxe us for dissembling with his majestie & y^e^ adventurers aboute y^e^ French discipline, you doe us wrong, for we both hold & practice y^e^ discipline of y^e^ French & other reformed churches, (as they have published y^e^ same in y^e^ Harmony of Confessions,) according to our means, in effecte & substance. But wheras you would tye us to the French discipline in every circumstance, you derogate from y^e^ libertie we have in Christ Jesus. The Apostle Paule would have none to follow him in any thing but wherin he follows Christ, much less ought any Christian or church in y^e^ world to doe it. The French may erre, we may erre, and other churches may erre, and doubtless doe in many circumstances. That honour therfore belongs only to y^e^ infallible word of God, and pure Testamente of Christ, to be propounded and followed as y^e^ only rule and pattern for direction herin to all churches & Christians. And it is too great arrogancie for any man, or church [135] to thinke y^t^ he or they have so sounded y^e^ word of God to y^e^ bottome, as precislie to sett downe y^e^ churches discipline, without error in substance or circumstance, as y^t^ no other without blame may digress or differ in any thing from y^e^ same. And it is not difficulte to shew, y^t^ the reformed churches differ in many circumstances amongest them selves.

The rest I omitte, for brevities sake, and so leave to prosecute these men or their doings any further, but shall returne to y^e^ rest of their freinds of y^e^ company, w^ch^ stuck to them. And I shall first inserte some part

of their letters as followeth; for I thinke it best to render their minds in ther owne words.

To our loving freinds, &c.

Though the thing we feared be come upon us, and y^e^ evill we strove against have overtaken us, yet we cannot forgett you, nor our freindship and fellowship which togeather we have had some years; wherin though our expressions have been small, yet our harty affections towards you (unknown by face) have been no less then to our nearest freinds, yea, to our owne selves. And though this your freind M^r^. Winslow can tell you y^e^ state of things hear, yet least we should seeme to neglecte you, to whom, by a wonderfull providence of God, we are so nearly united, we have thought good once more to write unto you, to let you know what is here befallen, and y^e^ resons of it; as also our purposes & desirs toward you for hereafter.

The former course for the generalitie here is wholy dissolved from what it was; and wheras you & we were formerly sharers and partners, in all viages & deallings, this way is now no more, but you and we are left to bethinke our sellves what course to take in y^e^ future, that your lives & our monies be not lost.

The reasons and causes of this allteration have been these. First and mainly, y^e^ many losses and crosses at sea, and abuses of sea-men, w^ch^ have caused us to rune into so much charge, debts, & ingagements, as our estats & means were not able to goe on without impoverishing our selves, except our estats had been greater, and our associats cloven beter unto us. 2^ly^, as here hath been a faction and siding amongst us now more then 2. years, so now there is an uter breach and sequestration amongst us, and in too parts of us a full dissertion and forsaking of you, without any intente or purpose of medling more with you. And though we are per-

swaded the maine cause of this their doing is wante of money, (for neede wherof men use to make many excuses,) yet other things are pretended, as that you are Brownists, &c. Now what use you or we ought to make of these things, it remaineth to be considered, for we know y^e^ hand of God to be in all these things, and no doubt he would admonish some thing therby, and to looke what is amise. And allthough it be now too late for us or you to prevent & stay these things, yet it is * not to late to exercise patience, wisdom, and conscience in bearing them, and in caring our selves in & under them for y^e^ time to come.

[136] And as we our selves stand ready to imbrace all occasions that may tend to y^e^ furthrance of so hopefull a work, rather admiring of what is, then grudging for what is not; so it must rest in you to make all good againe. And if in nothing else you can be approved, yet let your honestie & conscience be still approved, & lose not one jote of you^r^ innocencie, amids your crosses & afflictions. And surly if you upon this allteration behave your selves wisly, and goe on fairly, as men whose hope is not in this life, you shall need no other weapon to wound your adversaries; for when your righteousnes is revealled as y^e^ light, they shall cover their faces with shame, that causlesly have sought your overthrow.

Now we thinke it but reason, that all such things as ther apertaine to the generall, be kept & preserved togeather, and rather increased dayly, then any way be dispersed or imbeseled away for any private ends or intents whatsoever. And after your necessities are served, you gather togeather such comodities as y^e^ cuntrie yeelds, & send them over to pay debts & clear ingagements hear, which are not less then 1400^li^. And we hope you will doe your best to free our ingagements, &c. Let us all indeavor to keep a faire & honest course, and see

* *Is it not* in the MS.

what time will bring forth, and how God in his providence will worke for us. We still are perswaded you are y^e^ people that must make a plantation in those remoate places when all others faile and returne. And your experience of Gods providence and preservation of you is such as we hope your harts will not faile you, though your freinds should forsake you (which we our selves shall not doe whilst we live, so long as your honestie so well appereth). Yet surly help would arise from some other place whilst you waite on God, with uprightnes, though we should leave you allso.

And lastly be you all intreated to walke circumspectly, and carry your selves so uprightly in all your ways, as y^t^ no man may make just exceptions against you. And more espetially that y^e^ favour and countenance of God may be so toward you, as y^t^ you may find abundante joye & peace even amids tribulations, that you may say with David, Though my father & mother should forsake me, yet y^e^ Lord would take me up.

We have sent you hear some catle, cloath, hose, shoes, leather, &c., but in another nature then formerly, as it stood us in hand to doe; we have com̄itted them to y^e^ charge & custody of M^r^. Allerton and M^r^. Winslow, as our factours, at whose discretion they are to be sould, and com̄odities to be taken for them, as is fitting. And by how much y^e^ more they will be chargable unto you, the better* they had need to be husbanded, &c. Goe on, good freinds, comfortably, pluck up your spirits, and quitte your selves like men in all your difficulties, that notwithstanding all displeasure and threats of men, yet y^e^ work may goe on you are aboute, and not be neglected. Which is so much for y^e^ glorie of God, and the furthrance of our countrie-men, as that a man may with more comforte [137] spend his life in it, then live y^e^ life of Mathusala, in wasting y^e^ plentie of a tilled land, or eating y^e^ fruite of a growne tree. Thus with harty salutations to

* *Bet-* in MS.

you all, and harty prayers for you all, we lovingly take our leaves, this 18. of Des: 1624.

Your assured freinds to our powers,

J. S. W. C. T. F. R. H. &c.

By this leter it appears in what state y^e^ affairs of y^e^ plantation stood at this time. These goods they bought, but they were at deare rates, for they put 40. in y^e^ hundred upon them, for profite and adventure, outward bound; and because of y^e^ v̄nture of y^e^ paiment homeward, they would have 30.* in y^e^ 100. more, which was in all 70. p^r^. cent; a thing thought unreasonable by some, and too great an oppression upon y^e^ poore people, as their case stood. The catle were y^e^ best goods, for y^e^ other being ventured ware, were neither at y^e^ best (some of them) nor at y^e^ best prises. Sundrie of their freinds disliked these high rates, but com̄ing from many hands, they could not help it.

They sent over also 2. ships on fishing on their owne acounte; the one was y^e^ pinass that was cast away y^e^ last year hear in y^e^ cuntrie, and recovered by y^e^ planters, (as was before related,) who, after she came home, was attached by one of y^e^ company for his perticuler debte, and now sent againe on this accounte. The other was a great ship, who was well fitted with an experienced m^r^. & company of fisher-men, to make a viage, & to goe to Bilbo or Sabastians with her fish; the lesser, her order was

* If I mistake not, it was not much less. [30[li] in the manuscript.]

to load with cor-fish, and to bring the beaver home for England, y^t^ should be received for y^e^ goods sould to y^e^ plantation. This bigger ship made a great viage of good drie fish, the which, if they had gone to a market w^th^, would have yeelded them (as such fish was sould y^t^ season) 1800^li^. which would have enriched them. But because ther was a bruite of warr with France, y^e^ m^r^. neglected (through timerousnes) his order, and put first into Plimoth, & after into Portsmouth, and so lost their opportunitie, and came by the loss. The lesser ship had as ill success, though she was as hopfull as y^e^ other for y^e^ marchants profite; for they had fild her with goodly cor-fish taken upon y^e^ banke, as full as she could swime; and besids she had some 800^li^. weaight of beaver, besids other furrs to a good value from y^e^ plantation. The m^r^. seeing so much goods come, put it abord y^e^ biger ship, for more saftie; but M^r^. Winslow (their factor in this busines) was bound in a bond of 500^li^. to send it to London in y^e^ smale ship; ther was some contending between y^e^ m^r^. & him aboute it. But he tould y^e^ m^r^. he would follow his order aboute it; if he would take it out afterward, it should be at his perill. So it went in y^e^ smale ship, and he sent bills of lading in both. The m^r^. was so carfull being both so well laden, as they went joyfully home togeather, for he towed y^e^ leser ship at his sterne all y^e^ way over bound, and they had such fayr weather as he never cast her of till they were shott deep in to y^e^ English Chanell, almost within y^e^ sight of Plimoth;

and yet ther she was unhaply taken by a Turks man of warr, and carried into Saly, wher y^e^ m^r^. and men were made slaves, and many of y^e^ beaver skins were sould for 4^d^ a peece. [138] Thus was all their hops dasht, and the joyfull news they ment to cary home turned to heavie tidings. Some thought this a hand of God for their too great exaction of y^e^ poore plantation, but Gods judgments are unseerchable, neither dare I be bould therwith; but however it shows us y^e^ uncertainty of all humane things, and what litle cause ther is of joying in them or trusting to them.

In y^e^ bigger of these ships was sent over Captine Standish from y^e^ plantation, w^th^ leters & instructions, both to their freinds of y^e^ company which still clave to them, and also to y^e^ Honourable Counsell of New-England. To y^e^ company to desire y^t^ seeing that they ment only to let them have goods upon sale, that they might have them upon easier termes, for they should never be able to bear such high intrest, or to allow so much per cent; also that what they would doe in y^t^ way that it might be disburst in money, or such goods as were fitte and needfull for them, & bought at best hand; and to aquainte them with y^e^ contents of his leters to y^e^ Counsell above said, which was to this purpose, to desire their favour & help; that such of y^e^ adventurers as had thus forsaken & deserted them, might be brought to some order, and not to keepe them bound, and them selves be free. But that they might either stand to ther former

covenants, or ells come to some faire end, by dividente, or composition. But he came in a very bad time, for y^e^ Stat was full of trouble, and y^e^ plague very hote in London, so as no bussines could be done; yet he spake with some of y^e^ Honourd Counsell, who promised all helpfullnes to y^e^ plantation which lay in them. And sundrie of their freinds y^e^ adventurers were so weakened with their losses y^e^ last year, by y^e^ losse of y^e^ ship taken by the Turks, and y^e^ loss of their fish, w^ch^ by reason of y^e^ warrs they were forcte to land at Portsmouth, and so came to litle; so as, though their wills were good, yet they^r^ power was litle. And ther dyed such multituds weekly of y^e^ plague, as all trade was dead, and litle money stirring. Yet with much adooe he tooke up 150^li^. (& spent a good deal of it in expences) at 50. per cent. which he bestowed in trading goods & such other most needfull comodities as he knew requiset for their use; and so returned passenger in a fhishing ship, haveing prepared a good way for y^e^ compossition that was afterward made.

In y^e^ mean time it pleased y^e^ Lord to give y^e^ plantation peace and health and contented minds, and so to blese ther labours, as they had corne sufficient, (and some to spare to others,) with other foode; neither ever had they any supply of foode but what they first brought with them. After harvest this year, they sende out a boats load of corne 40. or 50. leagues to y^e^ eastward, up a river called Kenibeck; it being one of those

2. shalops which their carpenter had built them y^e^ year before; for bigger vessell had they none. They had laid a litle deck over her midships to keepe y^e^ corne drie, but y^e^ men were faine to stand it out all weathers without shelter; and y^t^ time [139] of y^e^ year begins to growe tempestious. But God preserved them, and gave them good success, for they brought home 700^li^. of beaver, besids some other furrs, having litle or nothing els but this corne, which them selves had raised out of y^e^ earth. This viage was made by M^r^. Winslow & some of y^e^ old standards,* for seamen they had none.

Anno Dom: 1626.

About y^e^ begining of Aprill they heard of Captain Standish his arrivall, and sent a boat to fetch him home, and y^e^ things he had brought. Welcome he was, but y^e^ news he broughte was sadd in many regards; not only in regarde of the former losses, before related, which their freinds had suffered, by which some in a maner were undon, others much disabled from doing any further help, and some dead of y^e^ plague, but also y^t^ M^r^. Robinson, their pastor, was dead, which struck them with much sorrow & sadnes, as they had cause. His and their adversaries had been long & continually plotting how they might hinder his coming hither, but y^e^ Lord had appointed him a better place; concerning

* First written as in the text, then altered to *standerss*.

whose death & the maner therof, it will appere by these few lines write to y^e^ Gov^r^ & M^r^. Brewster.

Loving & kind frinds, &c. I know not whether this will ever come to your hands, or miscarie, as other my letters have done; yet in regard of y^e^ Lords dealing with us hear, I have had a great desire to write unto you, knowing your desire to bear a parte with us, both in our joyes, & sorrows, as we doe w^th^ you. These are therfore to give you to understand, that it hath pleased the Lord to take out of this vaell of tears, your and our loving & faithfull pastor, and my dear & Reve^d^ brother, M^r^. John Robinson, who was sick some 8. days. He begane to be sick on Saturday in y^e^ morning, yet y^e^ next day (being the Lords day) he taught us twise. And so y^e^ weeke after grew weaker, every day more then other; yet he felt no paine but weaknes all y^e^ time of his sicknes. The phisick he tooke wrought kindly in mans judgmente, but he grew weaker every day, feeling litle or no paine, and sensible to y^e^ very last. He fell sicke y^e^ 22. of Feb: and departed this life y^e^ 1. of March. He had a continuall inwarde ague, but free from infection, so y^t^ all his freinds came freely to him. And if either prayers, tears, or means, would have saved his life, he had not gone hence. But he having faithfully finished his course, and performed his worke which y^e^ Lord had appointed him here to doe, he now resteth with y^e^ Lord in eternall hapines. We wanting him & all Church Gov^rs^, yet we still (by y^e^ mercie of God) continue & hould close togeather, in peace and quietnes; and so hope we shall doe, though we be very weake. Wishing (if such were y^e^ will of God) that you & we were againe united togeather in one, either ther or here; but seeing it is y^e^ will of y^e^ Lord thus to dispose of things, we must labour w^th^ patience to rest contented, till it please y^e^ Lord otherwise to dispose. For [140] news, is here not much; only as in England we have

lost our old king James, who departed this life aboute a month agoe, so here they have lost y^e^ old prince, Grave Mourise; who both departed this life since my brother Robinson. And as in England we have a new-king Charls, of whom ther is great hope, so hear they have made prince Hendrick Generall in his brothers place, &c. Thus with my love remembred, I take leave & rest,

Your assured loving freind,

ROGER WHITE.

Leyden, Aprill 28.
An^o^: 1625.

Thus these too great princes, and their pastor, left this world near aboute one time. Death maks no difference.

He further brought them notice of y^e^ death of their anciente freind, M^r^. Cush-man, whom y^e^ Lord tooke away allso this year, & aboute this time, who was as their right hand with their freinds y^e^ adventurers, and for diverce years had done & agitated all their bussines with them to ther great advantage. He had write to y^e^ Gove^r^ but some few months before, of y^e^ sore sicknes of M^r^. James Sherley, who was a cheefe freind to y^e^ plantation, and lay at y^e^ pointe of death, declaring his love & helpfullnes, in all things; and much bemoned the loss they should have of him, if God should now take him away, as being y^e^ stay & life of y^e^ whole bussines. As allso his owne purposs this year to come over, and spend his days with them. But he that thus write of anothers sicknes, knew not y^t^ his owne death was so near. It shows allso that a mās ways are not in his owne power, but in his

hands who hath y^e^ issues of life and death. Man may purpose, but God doth dispose.

Their other freinds from Leyden writ many leters to them full of sad laments for ther heavie loss; and though their wills were good to come to them, yet they saw no probabilitie of means, how it might be effected, but concluded (as it were) that all their hopes were cutt of; and many, being aged, begane to drop away by death.

All which things (before related) being well weighed and laied togither, it could not but strick them with great perplexitie; and to looke humanly on y^e^ state of things as they presented them selves at this time, it is a marvell it did not wholy discourage them, and sinck them. But they gathered up their spirits, and y^e^ Lord so helped them, whose worke they had in hand, as now when they were at lowest * they begane to rise againe, and being striped (in a maner) of all humane helps and hops, he brought things aboute other wise, in his devine providence, as they were not only upheld & sustained, but their proccedings both honoured and imitated by others; as by y^e^ sequell will more appeare, if y^e^ Lord spare me life & time to declare y^e^ same.

Haveing now no fishing busines, or other things to intend, but only their trading & planting, they sett them selves to follow the same with y^e^ best industrie they could. The planters finding their corne, what they could spare from ther necessities, to be a comoditie, (for they

* Note.

sould it at 6^{s} a bushell,) used great dilligence in planting y^{e} same. And y^{e} Gove^{r} and such as were designed to manage the trade, (for it was retained for y^{e} generall good, [141] and none were to trade in perticuler,) they followed it to the best advantage they could; and wanting trading goods, they understoode that a plantation which was at Monhigen, & belonged to some marchants of Plimoth was to breake up, and diverse usefull goods was ther to be sould; the Gove^{r} and M^{r}. Winslow tooke a boat and some hands and went thither. But M^{r}. David Thomson, who lived at Pascataway, understanding their purpose, tooke oppertunitie to goe with them, which was some hinderance to them both; for they, perceiveing their joynte desires to buy, held their goods at higher rates; and not only so, but would not sell a parcell of their trading goods, excepte they sould all. So, lest they should further prejudice one an other, they agreed to buy all, & devid them equally between them. They bought allso a parcell of goats, which they distributed at home as they saw neede & occasion, and tooke corne for them of y^{e} people, which gave them good content. Their moyety of y^{e} goods came to above 400^{li}. starling. Ther was allso that spring a French ship cast away at Sacadahock, in w^{ch} were many Biscaie ruggs & other co$\bar{m}$odities, which were falen into these mens hands, & some other fisher men at Damerins-cove, which were allso bought in partnership, and made their parte arise to above 500^{li}. This they made shift to pay for, for y^{e} most

part, with y^e^ beaver & comodities they had gott y^e^ winter before, & what they had gathered up y^t^ somer. M^r^. Thomson having some thing overcharged him selfe, desired they would take some of his, but they refused except he would let them have his French goods only; and y^e^ marchant (who was one of Bristol) would take their bill for to be paid y^e^ next year. They were both willing, so they became ingaged for them & tooke them. By which means they became very well furnished for trade; and tooke of therby some other ingagments w^ch^ lay upon them, as the money taken up by Captaine Standish, and y^e^ remains of former debts. With these goods, and their corne after harvest, they gott good store of trade, so as they were enabled to pay their ingagements against y^e^ time, & to get some cloathing for y^e^ people, and had some comodities before hand. But now they begane to be envied, and others wente and fild y^e^ Indeans with corne, and beat downe y^e^ prise, giveing them twise as much as they had done, and under traded them in other comodities allso.

This year they sent M^r^. Allerton into England, and gave him order to make a composition with y^e^ adventurers, upon as good termes as he could (unto which some way had ben made y^e^ year before by Captaine Standish); but yet injoyned him not to conclud absolutly till they knew y^e^ termes, and had well considered of them; but to drive it to as good an issew as he could, and referr y^e^ conclusion to them. Also they gave him a com̄ission

under their hands & seals to take up some money, provided it exeeded not such a sume specified, for which they engaged them selves, and gave him order how to lay out ye same for ye use of ye plantation.

And finding they rane a great hazard to goe so long viages in a smale open boat, espetialy ye winter season, they begane to thinke how they might gett a small pinass; as for ye reason afforesaid, so also because others had raised ye prise with ye Indeans above ye halfe of what they had formerly given, so as in such a boat they could not [143*] carry a quantity sufficient to answer their ends. They had no ship-carpenter amongst them, neither knew how to get one at presente; but they having an ingenious man that was a house carpenter, who also had wrought with ye ship carpenter (that was dead) when he built their boats, at their request he put forth him selfe to make a triall that way of his skill; and tooke one of ye bigest of ther shalops and sawed her in ye midle, and so lenthened her some 5. or 6. foote, and strengthened her with timbers, and so builte her up, and laid a deck on her; and so made her a conveniente and wholsome vessell, very fitt & comfortable for their use, which did them servise 7. years after; and they gott her finished, and fitted with sayles & anchors, ye insuing year. And thus passed ye affairs of this year.

* Here occurs another error in the paging of the original; 142 is omitted.

Anno Dom: 1627.

At y^e^ usuall season of y^e^ coming of ships M^r^. Allerton returned, and brought some usfull goods with him, according to y^e^ order given him. For upon his commission he tooke up 200^li^. which he now gott at 30. per cent. The which goods they gott safly home, and well conditioned, which was much to the comfort & contente of y^e^ plantation. He declared unto them, allso, how, with much adoe and no small trouble, he had made a composition with y^e^ adventurers, by the help of sundrie of their faithfull freinds ther, who had allso tooke much pains ther about. The agreement or bargen he had brought a draught of, with a list of ther names ther too annexed, drawne by the best counsell of law they could get, to make it firme. The heads wherof I shall here inserte.

To all Christian people, greeting, &c. Wheras at a meeting y^e^ 26. of October last past, diverse & sundrie persons, whose names to y^e^ one part of these presents are subscribed in a schedule hereunto annexed, Adventurers to New-Plimoth in New-England in America, were contented and agreed, in consideration of the sume of one thousand and eight hundred pounds sterling to be paid, (in maner and forme folling,) to sell, and make sale of all & every y^e^ stocks, shares, lands, marchandise, and chatles, what soever, to y^e^ said adventurers, and other ther fellow adventurers to New Plimoth aforesaid, any way accruing, or belonging to y^e^ generalitie of y^e^ said adventurers aforesaid; as well by reason of any sume or sumes

of money, or marchandise, at any time heretofore adventured or disbursed by them, or other wise howsoever; for y^e^ better expression and setting forth of which said agreemente, the parties to these presents subscribing, doe for [144] them selves severally, and as much as in them is, grant, bargan, alien, sell, and transfere all & every y^e^ said shares, goods, lands, marchandice, and chatles to them belonging as aforesaid, unto Isaack Alerton, one of y^e^ planters resident at Plimoth afforesaid, assigned, and sent over as agente for y^e^ rest of y^e^ planters ther, and to such other planters at Plimoth afforesaid as y^e^ said Isack, his heirs, or assignes, at his or ther arrivall, shall by writing or otherwise thinke fitte to joyne or partake in y^e^ premisses, their heirs, & assignes, in as large, ample, and beneficiall maner and forme, to all intents and purposes, as y^e^ said subscribing adventurers here could or may doe, or performe. All which stocks, shares, lands, &c. to the said adven: in severallitie alloted, apportioned, or any way belonging, the said adven: doe warrant & defend unto the said Isaack Allerton, his heirs and assignes, against them, their heirs and assignes, by these presents. And therfore y^e^ said Isaack Allerton doth, for him, his heirs & assigns, covenant, promise, & grant too & with y^e^ adven: whose names are here unto subscribed, ther heirs, &c. well & truly to pay, or cause to be payed, unto y^e^ said adven: or 5. of them which were, at y^t^ meeting afforsaid, nominated & deputèd, viz. *John Pocock*, *John Beachamp*, *Robart Keane*, *Edward Base*, and *James Sherley*, marchants, their heirs, &c. too and for y^e^ use of y^e^ generallitie of them, the sume of 1800^li^. of lawfull money of England, at y^e^ place appoynted for y^e^ receipts of money, on the west side of y^e^ Royall Exchaing in London, by 200^li^. yearly, and every year, on y^e^ feast of St. Migchell, the first paiment to be made An^o^: 1628. &c. Allso y^e^ said Isaack is to indeavor to procure & obtaine from y^e^ planters of N. P. aforesaid, securitie, by severall obligations, or writings oblig-

atory, to make paiment of y^e^ said sume of 1800^li^. in forme afforsaid, according to y^e^ true meaning of these presents. In testimonie wherof to this part of these presents remaining with y^e^ said Isaack Allerton, y^e^ said subscribing adven: have sett to their names,* &c. And to y^e^ other part remaining with y^e^ said adven: the said Isaack Allerton hath subscribed his name, y^e^ 15. *Nov^br^. An^o^:* 1626. *in y^e^ 2. year of his Majesties raigne.*

* Below are the names of the adventurers subscribed to this paper, taken from Bradford's Letter-Book, 1 Mass. Hist. Coll., III. 48; being forty-two in number. The names of six of these persons are found subsequently among the members of the Massachusetts Company, viz. John White, John Pocock, Thomas Goffe, Samuel Sharpe, John Revell, and Thomas Andrews. Mr. Haven, who edited the Records of the Massachusetts Company, is of opinion that the first person on the list is the celebrated clergyman of Dorchester, the reputed author of the Planter's Plea. Emnu. Alltham is probably the same person named in the Council Records, under date January 21, 1622-3: "Emanuel Altum to command the Pinnace built for Mr. Peirce's Plantation." Smith speaks of "Captaine *Altom*" as commanding this vessell, but Morton says the name of the master of the Little James was Mr. Bridges, who it appears was drowned at Damariscove, in March, 1624. See Coll. of the Amer. Antiq. Soc., III. 26, 62, Preface; Felt's MS. Memoranda from the Council Records; Smith's Generall Historie, p. 239; Morton's Memorial, p. 48.

John White,	Samuel Sharpe,	Thomas Hudson,
John Pocock,	Robert Holland,	Thomas Andrews,
Robert Kean,	James Sherley,	Thomas Ward,
Edward Bass,	Thomas Mott,	Fria. Newbald,
William Hobson,	Thomas Fletcher,	Thomas Heath,
William Penington,	Timothy Hatherly,	Joseph Tilden,
William Quarles,	Thomas Brewer,	William Perrin,
Daniel Poynton,	John Thorned,	Eliza Knight,
Richard Andrews,	Myles Knowles,	Thomas Coventry,
Newman Rookes,	William Collier,	Robert Allden,
Henry Browning,	John Revell,	Lawrence Anthony,
Richard Wright,	Peter Gudburn,	John Knight,
John Ling,	Emnu. Alltham,	Matthew Thornhill,
Thomas Goffe,	John Beauchamp,	Thomas Millsop.

This agreemente was very well liked of, & approved by all y^e^ plantation, and consented unto; though they knew not well how to raise y^e^ payment, and discharge their other ingagements, and supply the yearly wants of y^e^ plantation, seeing they were forced for their necessities to take up money or goods at so high intrests. Yet they undertooke it, and 7. or 8. of y^e^ cheefe of y^e^ place became joyntly bound for y^e^ paimente of this 1800^li^. (in y^e^ behalfe of y^e^ rest) at y^e^ severall days. In which they rane a great adventure, as their present state stood, having many other heavie burthens allready upon them, and all things in an uncertaine condition amongst them. So y^e^ next returne it was absolutly confirmed on both sids, and y^e^ bargen fairly ingrossed in partchmente and in many things put into better forme, by y^e^ advice of y^e^ learnedest counsell they could gett; and least any forfeiture should fall on y^e^ whole for none paimente at any of y^e^ days, it rane thus: to forfite 30^s.^ a weeke if they missed y^e^ time; and was concluded under their hands & seals, as may be seen at large by y^e^ deed it selfe.

[145] Now though they had some untowarde persons mixed amongst them from the first, which came out of England, and more afterwards by some of y^e^ adventurers, as freindship or other affections led them, —though sundrie were gone, some for Virginia, and some to other places, —yet diverse were still mingled amongst them, about whom y^e^ Gove^r^ & counsell with

other of their cheefe freinds had serious consideration, how to setle things in regard of this new bargen or purchas made, in respecte of y^e^ distribution of things both for y^e^ presente and future. For y^e^ present, excepte peace and union were preserved, they should be able to doe nothing, but indanger to over throw all, now that other tyes & bonds were taken away. Therfore they resolved, for sundrie reasons, to take in all amongst them, that were either heads of families, or single yonge men, that were of abillity, and free, (and able to governe them selvs with meete descretion, and their affairs, so as to be helpfull in y^e^ comone-welth,) into this partnership or purchass. First, y^ey^ considered that they had need of men & strength both for defence and carrying on of bussinesses. 2^ly^, most of them had borne ther parts in former miseries & wants with them, and therfore (in some sort) but equall to partake in a better condition, if y^e^ Lord be pleased to give it. But cheefly they saw not how peace would be preserved without so doing, but danger & great disturbance might grow to their great hurte & prejudice other wise. Yet they resolved to keep such a mean in distribution of lands, and other courses, as should not hinder their growth in others coming to them.

So they caled y^e^ company togeather, and conferred with them, and came to this conclusion, that y^e^ trade should be managed as before, to help to pay the debts; and all such persons as were above named should be

reputed and inrouled for purchasers; single free men to have a single share, and every father of a familie to be alowed to purchass so many shares as he had persons in his family; that is to say, one for him selfe, and one for his wife, and for every child that he had living with him, one. As for servants, they had none, but what either their maisters should give them out of theirs, or their deservings should obtaine from y^e^ company afterwards. Thus all were to be cast into single shares according to the order abovesaid; and so every one was to pay his part according to his proportion towards y^e^ purchass, & all other debts, what y^e^ profite of y^e^ trade would not reach too; viz. a single man for a single share, a maister of a famalie for so many as he had. This gave all good contente. And first accordingly the few catle which they had were devided, which arose to this proportion; a cowe to 6. persons or shars, & 2. goats to y^e^ same, which were first equalised for age & goodnes, and then lotted for; single persons consorting with others, as they thought good, & smaler familys likwise; and swine though more [146] in number, yet by y^e^ same rule. Then they agreed that every person or share should have 20. acres of land devided unto them, besids y^e^ single acres they had allready; and they appoynted were to begin first on y^e^ one side of y^e^ towne, & how farr to goe; and then on y^e^ other side in like maner; and so to devid it by lotte; and appointed sundrie by

name to doe it, and tyed them to certaine ruls to proceed by; as that they should only lay out settable or tillable land, at least such of it as should butt on y^e^ water side, (as y^e^ most they were to lay out did,) and pass by y^e^ rest as refuse and comūne; and what they judged fitte should be so taken. And they were first to agree of y^e^ goodnes & fitnes of it before the lott was drawne, and so it might as well prove some of ther owne, as an other mans; and this course they were to hould throwout. But yet seekeing to keepe y^e^ people togither, as much as might be, they allso agreed upon this order, by mutuall consente, before any lots were cast: that whose lotts soever should fall next y^e^ towne, or most conveninte for nearnes, they should take to them a neigboure or tow, whom they best liked; and should suffer them to plant corne with them for 4. years; and afterwards they might use as much of theirs for as long time, if they would. Allso every share or 20. acers was to be laid out 5. acres in breadth by y^e^ water side, and 4. acres in lenght, excepting nooks & corners, which were to be measured as y^ey^ would bear to best advantage. But no meadows were to be laid out at all, nor were not of many years after, because they were but streight of meadow grounds; and if they had bene now given out, it would have hindred all addition to them afterwards; but every season all were appoynted wher they should mowe, according to y^e^ proportion of catle they had. This

distribution gave generally good contente, and setled mens minds. Also they gave y^e^ Gove^r^ & 4. or 5. of y^e^ spetiall men amongst them, y^e^ houses they lived in; y^e^ rest were valued & equalised at an indiferent rate, and so every man kept his owne, and he that had a better alowed some thing to him that had a worse, as y^e^ valuation wente.

Ther is one thing that fell out in y^e^ begining of y^e^ winter before, which I have refferred to this place, that I may handle y^e^ whole matter togeither. Ther was a ship, with many passengers in her and sundrie goods, bound for Virginia. They had lost them selves at sea, either by y^e^ insufficiencie of y^e^ maister, or his ilnes; for he was sick & lame of y^e^ scurvie, so that he could but lye in y^e^ cabin dore, & give direction; and it should seeme was badly assisted either w^th^ mate or mariners; or else y^e^ fear and unrulines of y^e^ passengers were such, as they made them stear a course betweene y^e^ southwest & y^e^ norwest, that they might fall with some land, what soever it was they cared not. For they had been 6. weeks at sea, and had no water, nor beere, nor any woode left, but had burnt up all their emptie caske; only one of y^e^ company had a hogshead of wine or 2. which was allso allmost spente, so as they feared they should be starved at sea, or consumed with diseases, which made them rune this desperate course. But it plased God that though they came so neare y^e^ shoulds of Cap-Codd [147] or else ran stumbling over them in

y^e^ night, they knew not how, they came right before a small blind harbore, that lyes about y^e^ midle of Manamoyake Bay, to y^e^ southward of Cap-Codd, with a small gale of wind; and about highwater toucht upon a barr of sand that lyes before it, but had no hurte, y^e^ sea being smoth; so they laid out an anchore. But towards the evēing the wind sprunge up at sea, and was so rough, as broake their cable, & beat them over the barr into y^e^ harbor, wher they saved their lives & goods, though much were hurte with salt water; for w^th^ beating they had sprung y^e^ but end of a planke or too, & beat out ther occome; but they were soone over, and ran on a drie flate within the harbor, close by a beach; so at low water they gatt out their goods on drie shore, and dried those that were wette, and saved most of their things without any great loss; neither was y^e^ ship much hurt, but shee might be mended, and made servisable againe. But though they were not a litle glad that they had thus saved their lives, yet when they had a litle refreshed them selves, and begane to thinke on their condition, not knowing wher they were, nor what they should doe, they begane to be strucken with sadnes. But shortly after they saw some Indians come to them in canows, which made them stand upon their gard. But when they heard some of y^e^ Indeans speake English unto them, they were not a litle revived, especially when they heard them demand if they were the Gove^r^ of Plimoths men, or freinds;

and y^t^ they would bring them to y^e^ English houses, or carry their letters.

They feasted these Indeans, and gave them many giftes; and sente 2. men and a letter with them to y^e^ Gove^r^, and did intreat him to send a boat unto them, with some pitch, & occume, and spiks, w^th^ divers other necessaries for y^e^ mending of ther ship (which was recoverable). Allso they besought him to help them with some corne and sundrie other things they wanted, to enable them to make their viage to Virginia; and they should be much bound to him, and would make satisfaction for any thing they had, in any comodities they had abord. After y^e^ Gov^r^ was well informed by y^e^ messengers of their condition, he caused a boate to be made ready, and such things to be provided as they write for; and because others were abroad upon trading, and such other affairs, as had been fitte to send unto them, he went him selfe, & allso carried some trading comodities, to buy them corne of y^e^ Indeans. It was no season of y^e^ year to goe withoute y^e^ Cape, but understanding wher y^e^ ship lay, he went into y^e^ bottom of y^e^ bay, on y^e^ inside, and put into a crick called Naumskachett, wher it is not much above 2. mile over [148] land to y^e^ bay wher they were, wher he had y^e^ Indeans ready to cary over any thing to them. Of his arrivall they were very glad, and received the things to mend ther ship, & other necessaries. Allso he bought them as much corne as they would have;

and wheras some of their sea-men were rune away amonge the Indeans, he procured their returne to y^e^ ship, and so left them well furnished and contented, being very thankfull for y^e^ curtesies they receaved. But after the Gove^r^ thus left them, he went into some other harbors ther aboute and loaded his boat with corne, which he traded, and so went home. But he had not been at home many days, but he had notice from them, that by the violence of a great storme, and y^e^ bad morring of their ship (after she was mended) she was put a shore, and so beatten and shaken as she was now wholy unfitte to goe to sea. And so their request was that they might have leave to repaire to them, and soujourne with them, till they could have means to convey them selves to Virginia; and that they might have means to trāsport their goods, and they would pay for y^e^ same, or any thing els wher with y^e^ plantation should releeve them. Considering their distres, their requests were granted, and all helpfullnes done unto them; their goods transported, and them selves & goods sheltered in their houses as well as they could.

The cheefe amongst these people was one M^r^. Fells and M^r^. Sibsie, which had many servants belonging unto them, many of them being Irish. Some others ther were y^t^ had a servante or 2. a peece; but y^e^ most were servants, and such as were ingaged to the former persons, who allso had y^e^ most goods. Affter they were hither come, and some thing setled, the maisters

desired some ground to imploye ther servants upon; seing it was like to be y^e^ latter end of y^e^ year before they could have passage for Virginia, and they had now y^e^ winter before them; they might clear some ground, and plant a crope (seeing they had tools, & necessaries for y^e^ same) to help to bear their charge, and keep their servants in imployment; and if they had oppertunitie to departe before the same was ripe, they would sell it on y^e^ ground. So they had ground appointed them in convenient places, and Fells & some other of them raised a great deall of corne, which they sould at their departure. This Fells, amongst his other servants, had a maid servante which kept his house & did his household affairs, and by the intimation of some that belonged unto him, he was suspected to keep her, as his concubine; and both of them were examined ther upon, but nothing could be proved, and they stood upon their justification; so with admonition they were dismiste. But afterward it appeard she was with child, so he gott a small boat, & ran away with her, for fear of punishmente. First he went to Cap-Anne, and after into y^e^ bay of y^e^ Massachussets, but could get no passage, and had like to have been cast away; and was forst to come againe and submite him selfe; but they pact him away & those that belonged unto him by the first oppertunitie, and dismiste all the rest as soone as could, being many untoward people amongst them; though ther were allso some that caried them selves

very orderly all y^e^ time they stayed. And the [149] plantation had some benefite by them, in selling them corne & other provisions of food for cloathing; for they had of diverse kinds, as cloath, perpetuanes, & other stuffs, besids hose, & shoes, and such like cō̄odities as y^e^ planters stood in need of. So they both did good, and received good one from another; and a cuple of barks caried them away at y^e^ later end of so$\bar{m}$er. And sundrie of them have acknowledged their thankfullnes since from Virginia.

That they might y^e^ better take all convenient opportunitie to follow their trade, both to maintaine them selves, and to disingage them of those great sumes which they stood charged with, and bound for, they resoloved to build a smale pinass at Manamet, a place 20. mile from y^e^ plantation, standing on y^e^ sea to y^e^ southward of them, unto which, by an other creeke on this side, they could cary their goods, within 4. or 5. miles, and then trāsport them over land to their vessell; and so avoyd the compasing of Cap-Codd, and those deangerous shoulds, and so make any vioage to y^e^ southward in much shorter time, and with farr less danger. Also for y^e^ saftie of their vessell & goods, they builte a house their, and kept some servants, who also planted corne, and reared some swine, and were allwayes ready to goe out with y^e^ barke when ther was occasion. All which tooke good effecte, and turned to their profite.

They now sent (with y^e^ returne of y^e^ ships) M^r^. Allerton againe into England, giveing him full power, under their hands & seals, to conclude the former bargaine with y^e^ adventurers; and sent ther bonds for y^e^ paimente of the money. Allso they sent what beaver they could spare to pay some of their ingagementes, & to defray his chargs; for those deepe interests still kepte them low. Also he had order to procure a patente for a fitt trading place in y^e^ river of Kenebec; for being emulated both by the planters at Pascataway & other places to y^e^ eastward of them, and allso by y^e^ fishing ships, which used to draw much profite from y^e^ Indeans of those parts, they threatened to procure a grante, & shutte them out from thence; espetially after they saw them so well furnished with comodities, as to carie the trade from them. They thought it but needfull to prevente such a thing, at least that they might not be excluded from free trade ther, wher them selves had first begune and discovered the same, ād brought it to so good effecte. This year allso they had letters, and messengers from y^e^ Dutch-plantation, sent unto them from y^e^ Gov^r^ ther, writen both in Dutch & French. The Dutch had traded in these southerne parts, diverse years before they came; but they begane no plantation hear till 4. or 5. years after their coming, and here begining. Ther letters were as followeth. It being their maner to be full of complementall titles.

Eedele, Eerenfeste Wyse Voorsinnige Heeren, den Gŏveerneŭr, ende Raeden in Nieu-Pliemŭen residerende; onse seer Goede vrinden den directeŭr ende Raed van Nieu-Nederlande, wensen vw̃e Edn: eerenfesten, ende wijse voorsinnige gelŭck salichitt [gelukzaligheid?], In Christi Jesu onsen Heere; met goede voorspoet, ende gesonthijt, naer siele, ende lichaem. Amen.*

The rest I shall render in English, leaving out the repetition of superfluous titles.

[150] We have often before this wished for an opportunitie or an occasion to congratulate you, and your prosperous and praise-worthy undertakeings, and Goverment of your colony ther. And the more, in that we also have made a good begining to pitch y^e^ foundation of a collonie hear; and seeing our native countrie lyes not farr from yours, and our forefathers (diverse hundred years agoe) have made and held frendship and alliance with your ancestours, as sufficently appears by y^e^ old contractes, and entrecourses, confirmed under y^e^ hands of kings & princes, in y^e^ pointe of warr & trafick; as may be seene and read by all y^e^ world in y^e^ old chronakles. The which are not only by the king now reigning confirmed, but it hath pleased his majesty, upon mature deliberation, to make a new covenante, (and to take up armes,) with y^e^ States Generall of our dear native country, against our com̄one enemie the Spaniards, who seeke nothing

* The orthography of some of these words differs from the modern way of spelling them; and we have no means of ascertaining the accuracy of Bradford's copy from the original letter. This passage may be rendered thus:—

"Noble, worshipful, wise, and prudent Lords, the Governor and Councillors residing in New Plymouth, our very dear friends:—The Director and Council of New Netherland wish to your Lordships, worshipful, wise, and prudent, happiness in Christ Jesus our Lord, with prosperity and health, in soul and body."

else but to usurpe and overcome other Christian kings and princes lands, that so he might obtaine and possess his pretended monarchie over all Christendom; and so to rule and comand, after his owne pleasure, over ye consciences of so many hundred thousand sowles, which God forbid.

And also seeing it hath some time since been reported unto us, by some of our people, that by occasion came so farr northward with their shalop, and met with sundry of ye Indeans, who tould them that they were within halfe a days journey of your plantation, and offered ther service to cary letters unto you; therfore we could not forbear to salute you with these few lines, with presentation of our good will and servise unto you, in all frendly-kindnes & neighbourhood. And if it so fall out that any goods that comes to our hands from our native countrie, may be serviceable unto you, we shall take our selves bound to help and accomadate you ther with; either for beaver or any other wares or marchandise that you should be pleased to deale for. And if in case we have no comodity at present that may give you contente, if you please to sell us any beaver, or otter, or such like comodities as may be usefull for us, for ready money, and let us understand therof by this bearer in writing, (whom we have apoynted to stay 3. or 4. days for your answer,) when we understand your minds therin, we shall depute one to deale with you, at such place as you shall appointe. In ye mean time we pray the Lord to take you, our honoured good freinds and neighbours, into his holy protection.

By the appointment of ye Govr and Counsell, &c.

Isaak de Rasier, Secrectaris.

From ye Manhatas, in ye fort Amsterdam,
March 9. Anº: 1627.

To this they returned answer as followeth, on ye other side.

[151] To the Honoured, &c.

The Gove^r & Counsell of New-Plim: wisheth, &c. We have received your leters, &c. wherin appeareth your good wills & frendship towards us; but is expresed w^th over high titls, more then belongs to us, or is meete for us to receive. But for your good will, and congratulations of our prosperitie in these smale beginings of our poore colonie, we are much bound unto you, and with many thanks doe acknowledg y^e same; taking it both for a great honour done unto us, and for a certaine testimoney of your love and good neighbourhood.

Now these are further to give your Wor^pps to understand, that it is to us no smale joye to hear, that his majestie hath not only bene pleased to confirme y^t ancient amitie, aliance, and frendship, and other contracts, formerly made & ratified by his predecessors of famous memorie, but hath him selfe (as you say) strengthened the same with a new-union the better to resist y^e prid of y^t comone enemy y^e Spaniard, from whose cruelty the Lord keep us both, and our native countries. Now forasmuch as this is sufficiente to unite us togeather in love and good neighbourhood, in all our dealings, yet are many of us further obliged, by the good and curteous entreaty which we have found in your countrie; haveing lived ther many years, with freedome, and good contente, as also many of our freinds doe to this day; for which we, and our children after us, are bound to be thankfull to your Nation, and shall never forgett y^e same, but shall hartily desire your good & prosperity, as our owne, for ever.

Likwise for your freindly tender, & offer to acomodate and help us with any comodities or marchandise you have, or shall come to you, either for beaver, otters, or other wares, it is to us very acceptable, and we doubte not but in short time we may have profitable comerce & trade togeather. But for this year we are fully supplyed with all necessaries, both for cloathing and other things; but hereafter it is like

we shall deale with you, if your rates be reasonable. And therfore when you please to send to us againe by any of yours, we desire to know how you will take beaver, by y^e^ pounde, & otters, by y^e^ skine; and how you will deale per cent. for other comodities, and what you can furnishe us with. As likwise what other commodities from us may be acceptable unto you, as tobaco, fish, corne, or other things, and what prises you will give, &c.

Thus hoping that you will pardon & excuse us for our rude and imperfecte writing in your language, and take it in good parte, because [152] for wante of use we cannot so well express that we understand, nor hapily understand every thing so fully as we should. And so we humbly pray the Lord for his mercie sake, that he will take both us and you into his keeping & gratious protection.

By y^e^ Gove^r^ and Counsell of New-Plimoth,

Your Wor^ppa^ very good freinds & neigbours, &c.

New-Plim: March 19.

After this ther was many passages betweene them both by letters and other entercourse; and they had some profitable commerce togither for diverce years, till other occasions interrupted y^e^ same, as may happily appear afterwards, more at large.

Before they sent M^r^. Allerton away for England this year, y^e^ Gove^r^ and some of their cheefe freinds had serious consideration, not only how they might discharge those great ingagments which lay so heavily upon them, as is affore mentioned, but also how they might (if possiblie they could) devise means to help some of their freinds and brecthren of Leyden over unto them, who

desired so much to come to them, ād they desired as much their company. To effecte which, they resolved to rune a high course, and of great adventure, not knowing otherwise how to bring it aboute. Which was to hire y^e^ trade of y^e^ company for certaine years, and in that time to undertake to pay that 1800^li^. and all y^e^ rest of y^e^ debts that then lay upon y^e^ plantation, which was aboute some 600^li^. more; and so to set them free, and returne the trade to y^e^ generalitie againe at y^e^ end of y^e^ terme. Upon which resolution they called y^e^ company togeither, and made it clearly appear unto all what their debts were, and upon what terms they would undertake to pay them all in such a time, and sett them clear. But their other ends they were faine to keepe secrete, haveing only privatly acquaynted some of their trusty freinds therwith; which were glad of y^e^ same, but doubted how they would be able to performe it. So after some agitation of the thing w^th^ y^e^ company, it was yeelded unto, and the agreemente made upon y^e^ conditions following.

Articles of agreemente betweene y^e^ collony of New-Plim̄oth of y^e^ one partie, and William Bradford, Captein Myles Standish, Isaack Allerton, &c. one y^e^ other partie; and shuch others as they shall thinke good to take as partners and undertakers with them, concerning the trade for beaver & other furrs & comodities, &c.; made July, 1627.

First, it is agreed and covenanted betweexte y^e^ said parties, that y^e^ afforsaid William Bradford, Captain Myles

Standish, & Isaack Allerton, &c. have undertaken, and doe by these presents, covenante and agree to pay, discharge, and acquite y^e^ said collony of all y^e^ debtes both due for y^e^ purchass, or any other belonging to them, at y^e^ day of y^e^ date of these presents.

[153] Secondly, y^e^ above-said parties are to have and freely injoye y^e^ pinass latly builte, the boat at Manamett, and y^e^ shalop, called y^e^ Bass-boat, with all other implements to them belonging, that is in y^e^ store of y^e^ said company; with all y^e^ whole stock of furrs, fells, beads, corne, wampampeak, hatchets, knives, &c. that is now in y^e^ storre, or any way due unto y^e^ same uppon accounte.

3^ly^. That y^e^ above said parties have y^e^ whole trade to them selves, their heires and assignes, with all y^e^ privileges therof, as y^e^ said collonie doth now, or may use the same, for 6. full years, to begine y^e^ last of September next insuing.

4^ly^. In furder consideration of y^e^ discharge of y^e^ said debtes, every severall purchaser doth promise and covenante yearly to pay, or cause to be payed, to the above said parties, during y^e^ full terme of y^e^ said 6. years, 3. bushells of corne, or 6^li^. of tobaco, at y^e^ undertakers choyse.

5^ly^. The said undertakers shall dureing y^e^ afforesaid terme bestow 50^li^. per annum, in hose and shoese, to be brought over for y^e^ collonies use, to be sould unto them for corne at 6^s^. per bushell.

6^ly^. That at y^e^ end of y^e^ said terme of 6. years, the whole trade shall returne to y^e^ use and benefite of y^e^ said collonie, as before.

Lastly, if y^e^ afforesaid undertakers, after they have aquainted their freinds in England with these covenants, doe (upon y^e^ first returne) resolve to performe them, and undertake to discharge y^e^ debtes of y^e^ said collony, according to y^e^ true meaning & intente of these presents, then they are (upon such notice given) to stand in full force; otherwise all things to

remaine as formerly they were, and a true accounte to be given to y^e^ said collonie, of the disposing of all things according to the former order.

M^r^. Allerton carried a coppy of this agreemente with him into England, and amongst other his instructions had order given him to deale with some of their speciall freinds, to joyne with them in this trade upon y^e^ above recited conditions; as allso to imparte their further ends that moved them to take this course, namly, the helping over of some of their freinds from Leyden, as they should be able; in which if any of them would joyne with them they should thankfully acceptt of their love and partnership herein. And with all (by their letters) gave them some grounds of their hops of the accomplishmente of these things with some advantage.

Anno Dom: 1628.

After M^r^. Allertons arivall in England, he aquainted them with his comission and full power to conclude y^e^ forementioned bargan & purchas; upon [154] the veiw wherof, and y^e^ delivery of y^e^ bonds for y^e^ paymente of y^e^ money yearly, (as is before mentioned,) it was fully concluded, and a deede * fairly ingrossed in partchmente was delivered him, under their hands & seals confirming the same. Morover he delte with them aboute other things according to his instructions. As

* Nov. 6. 1627. Page 238. [Reference is here made to the page of the original manuscript.]

to admitt some of these their good freinds into this purchass if they pleased, and to deale with them for moneys at better rates, &c. Touching which I shall hear inserte a letter of M^{r}. Sherleys, giving light to what followed therof, writ to y^{e} Gov^{r} as followeth.

S^{r}: I have received yours of y^{e} 26. of May by M^{r}. Gibs, & M^{r}. Goffe, with y^{e} barrell of otter skins, according to y^{e} contents; for which I got a bill of store, and so tooke them up, and sould them togeather at 78^{li}. 12^{s}. sterling; and since, M^{r}. Allerton hath received y^{e} money, as will apear by the accounte. It is true (as you write) that your ingagments are great, not only the purchass, but you are yet necessitated to take up y^{e} stock you work upon; and y^{t} not at 6. or 8. ℔^{r} cent. as it is here let out, but at 30. 40. yea, & some at 50. ℔^{r} cent. which, were not your gaines great, and Gods blessing on your honest indeaours more then ordinarie, it could not be y^{t} you should longe subsiste in y^{e} maintaining of, & upholding of your worldly affaires. And this your honest & discreete agente, M^{r}. Allerton, hath seriously considered, & deeply laid to mind, how to ease you of it. He tould me you were contented to accepte of me & some few others, to joyne with you in y^{e} purchass, as partners; for which I kindly thanke you and all y^{e} rest, and doe willingly accepte of it. And though absente, shall willingly be at shuch charge as you & y^{e} rest shall thinke meete; and this year am contented to forbear my former 50^{li}. and 2. years increase for y^{e} venture, both which now makes it 80^{li}. without any bargaine or condition for y^{e} profite, you (I mean y^{e} generalitie) stand to y^{e} adventure, outward, and homeward. I have perswaded M^{r}. Andrews and M^{r}. Beachamp to doe y^{e} like, so as you are eased of y^{e} high rate, you were at y^{e} other 2. yeares; I say we leave it freely to your selves

to alow us what you please, and as God shall blesse. What course I rune, M^r^. Beachamp desireth to doe y^e^ same; and though he have been or seemed somwhat harsh heretofore, yet now you shall find he is new moulded. I allso see by your letter, you desire I should be your agente or factore hear. I have ever found you so faithfull, honest, and upright men, as I have even resolved with my selfe (God assisting me) to doe you all y^e^ good lyeth in my power; and therfore if you please to make choyse of so weak a man, both for abillities and body, to performe your bussines, I promise (y^e^ Lord enabling me) to doe y^e^ best I can according to those abillities he hath given me; and wherin I faile, blame your selves, y^t^ you made no better choyce. Now, because I am sickly, and we are all mortall, I have advised M^r^. Allerton to joyne M^r^. Beachamp with me in your deputation, which I conceive to be very necessary & good for you; your charge shall be no more, for it is not your salarie maks me undertake your [156*] bussines. Thus comending you & yours, and all Gods people, unto y^e^ guidance and protection of y^e^ Allmightie, I ever rest,

Your faithfull loving freind,

London, Nov. 17. 1628. JAMES SHERLEY.†

* 155 omitted in original MS. — COM.

† Another leter of his, that should have bene placed before: —

We cannot but take notice how y^e^ Lord hath been pleased to crosse our proseedings, and caused many disasters to befale us therin. I conceive y^e^ only reason to be, we, or many of us, aimed at other ends then Gods glorie; but now I hope y^t^ cause is taken away; the bargen being fully concluded, as farr as our powers will reach, and confirmed under our hands & seals, to M^r^. Allerton & y^e^ rest of his & your copartners. But for my owne parte, I confess as I was loath to hinder y^e^ full confirming of it, being y^e^ first propounder ther of at our meeting; so on y^e^ other side, I was as unwilling to set my hand to y^e^ sale, being y^e^ receiver of most part of y^e^ adventurs, and a second causer of much of y^e^ ingagments; and one more threatened, being most envied & aimed at (if they could find any stepe to ground their malice on) then any other whosoever. I profess I know no just cause they ever

With this leter they sent a draught of a formall deputation to be hear sealed and sent back unto them, to authorise them as their agents, according to what is mentioned in y^e^ above said letter; and because some inconvenience grue therby afterward I shall here inserte it.

---

had, or have, so to doe; neither shall it ever be proved y^t^ I have wronged them or any of y^e^ adventurers, wittingly or willingly, one peny in y^e^ disbursing of so many pounds in those 2. years trouble. No, y^e^ sole cause why they maligne me (as I & others conceived) was y^t^ I would not side with them against you, & the going over of y^e^ Leyden people. But as I then card not, so now I litle fear what they can doe; yet charge & trouble I know they may cause me to be at. And for these reasons, I would gladly have perswaded the other 4. to have sealed to this bargaine, and left me out, but they would not; so rather then it should faile, M^r^. Alerton having taken so much pains, I have sealed w^th^ y^e^ rest; with this proviso & promise of his, y^t^ if any trouble arise hear, you are to bear halfe y^e^ charge. Wherfore now I doubt not but you will give your generallitie good contente, and setle peace amongst your selves, and peace with the natives; and then no doubt but y^e^ God of Peace will blese your going out & your returning, and cause all y^t^ you sett your hands unto to prosper; the which I shall ever pray y^e^ Lord to grante if it be his blessed will. Asuredly unless y^e^ Lord be mercifull unto us & y^e^ whole land in generall, our estate & condition is farr worse then yours. Wherfore if y^e^ Lord should send persecution or trouble hear, (which is much to be feared,) and so should put into our minds to flye for refuge, I know no place safer then to come to you, (for all Europ is at varience one with another, but cheefly w^th^ us,) not doubting but to find such frendly entertainmente as shall be honest & conscionable, notwithstanding what hath latly passed. For I profess in y^e^ word of an honest man, had it not been to procure your peace & quiet from some turbulent spirites hear, I would not have sealed to this last deed; though you would have given me all my adventure and debte ready downe. Thus desiring y^e^ Lord to blesse & prosper you, I cease ever resting,

Your faithfull & loving freind,
to my power,

Des: 27. JAMES SHERLEY.

[The above letter was written on the reverse of page 154 of the original manuscript.]

To all to whom these prẽts shall come greeting; know yee that we, William Bradford, Gov^r^ of Plimoth, in N. E. in America, Isaak Allerton, Myles Standish, William Brewster, & Ed: Winslow, of Plimoth aforesaid, marchants, doe by these presents for us & in our names, make, substitute, & appointe James Sherley, Goldsmith, & John Beachamp, Salter, citizens of London, our true & lawfull agents, factors, substitutes, & assignes; as well to take and receive all such goods, wares, & marchandise what soever as to our said substitutes or either of them, or to y^e^ citie of London, or other place of y^e^ Relme of Engl: shall be sente, transported, or come from us or any of us, as allso to vend, sell, barter, or exchaing y^e^ said goods, wares, and marchandise so from time to time to be sent to such person or persons upon credite, or other wise in such maner as to our said agents & factors joyently, or to either of them severally shall seeme meete. And further we doe make & ordaine our said substituts & assignes joyntly & severally for us, & to our uses, & accounts, to buy and consigne for and to us into New-Engl: aforesaid, such goods and marchandise to be provided here, and to be returned hence, as by our said assignes, or either of them, shall be thought fitt. And to recover, receive, and demand for us & in our names all such debtes & sumes of money, as now are or hereafter shall be due incidente accruing or belonging to us, or any of us, by any wayes or means; and to acquite, discharge, or compound for any debte or sume of money, which now or hereafter shall be due or oweing by any person or persons to us, or any of us. And generally for us & in our names to doe, performe, and execute every acte & thing which to our said assignes, or either of them, shall seeme meete to be done in or aboute y^e^ premissies, as fully & effectually, to all intents & purposes, as if we or any of us were in person presente. And whatsoever our said agents & factors joyntly or severally shall

doe, or cause to be done, in or aboute y^e^ premisses, we will & doe, & every of us doth ratife, alow, & confirme, by these presents. In wittnes wherof we have here unto put our hands & seals. Dated 18. Nov^br^ 1628.

This was accordingly confirmed by the above named, and 4. more of the cheefe of them under their hands & seals, and delivered unto them. Also M^r^. Allerton formerly had authoritie under their hands & seals for y^e^ transacting of y^e^ former bussines, and taking up of moneys, &c. which still he retained whilst he was imployed in these affaires; they mistrusting neither him nor any of their freinds faithfullnes, which made them more remisse in looking to shuch acts as had passed under their hands, as necessarie for y^e^ time; but letting them rune on to long unminded or recaled, it turned to their harme afterwards, as will appere in its place.

[157] M^r^. Allerton having setled all things thus in a good and hopfull way, he made hast to returne in y^e^ first of y^e^ spring to be hear with their supply for trade, (for y^e^ fishermen with whom he came used to sett forth in winter & be here betimes.) He brought a resonable supply of goods for y^e^ plantation, and without those great interests as before is noted; and brought an accounte of y^e^ beaver sould, and how y^e^ money was disposed for goods, & y^e^ paymente of other debtes, having paid all debts abroad to others, save to M^r^. Sherley, M^r^. Beachamp, & M^r^. Andrews; from whom

likwise he brought an accounte which to them all amounted not to above 400li. for which he had passed bonds. Allso he had payed the first paymente for ye purchass, being due for this year, viz. 200li. and brought them ye bonde for ye same canselled; so as they now had no more foreine debtes but ye abovesaid 400li. and odde pownds, and ye rest of ye yearly purchass monie. Some other debtes they had in ye cuntrie, but they were without any intrest, & they had wherwith to discharge them when they were due. To this pass the Lord had brought things for them. Also he brought them further notice that their freinds, the abovenamed, & some others that would joyne with them in ye trad & purchass, did intend for to send over to Leyden, for a competente number of them, to be hear the next year without fayle, if ye Lord pleased to blesse their journey. He allso brought them a patente for Kenebeck, but it was so straite & ill bounded, as they were faine to renew & inlarge it the next year, as allso that which they had at home, to their great charge, as will after appeare. Hithertoo Mr. Allerton did them good and faithfull service; and well had it been if he had so continued, or els they had now ceased for imploying him any longer thus into England. But of this more afterwards.

Having procured a patente (as is above said) for Kenebeck, they now erected a house up above in ye river in ye most convenientest place for trade, as they

conceived, and furnished the same with comodities for y^t^ end, both winter & somer, not only with corne, but also with such other commodities as y^e^ fishermen had traded with them, as coats, shirts, ruggs, & blankets, biskett, pease, prunes, &c.; and what they could not have out of England, they bought of the fishing ships, and so carried on their bussines as well as they could.

This year the Dutch sent againe unto them from their plantation, both kind leterss, and also diverse comodities, as suger, linen cloth, Holand finer & courser stufes, &c. They came up with their barke to Manamete, to their house ther, in which came their Secretarie Rasier; who was accompanied with a noyse of trumpeters, and some other attendants; and desired that they would send a boat for him, for he could not travill so farr over land. So they sent a boat to Manonscussett, and brought him to y^e^ plantation, with y^e^ cheefe of his company. And after some few days entertainmente, he returned to his barke, and some of them wente with him, and bought sundry of his goods; after which begining thus made, they sente often times to y^e^ same place, and had entercourse togeather for diverce years; and amongst other comodities, they vended [158] much tobaco for linen cloath, stuffs, &c., which was a good benefite to y^e^ people, till the Virginians found out their plantation. But that which turned most to their profite, in time, was an entrance into the trade of Wampampeake; for they

now bought aboute 50li. worth of it of them; and they tould them how vendable it was at their forte Orania; and did perswade them they would find it so at Kenebeck; and so it came to pass in time, though at first it stuck, & it was 2. years before they could put of this small quantity, till ye inland people knew of it; and afterwards they could scarce ever gett enough for them, for many years togeather. And so this, with their other provissions, cutt of they trade quite from ye fisher-men, and in great part from other of ye straggling planters. And strange it was to see the great allteration it made in a few years amonge ye Indeans them selves; for all the Indeans of these parts, & ye Massachussets, had none or very litle of it,* but ye sachems & some spetiall persons that wore a litle of it for ornamente. Only it was made & kepte amonge ye Narigansets, & Pequents, which grew rich & potent by it, and these people were poore & begerly, and had no use of it. Neither did the English of this plantation, or any other in ye land, till now that they had knowledg of it from ye Dutch, so much as know what it was, much less yt it was a comoditie of that worth & valew. But after it grue thus to be a comoditie in these parts, these Indeans fell into it allso, and to learne how to make it; for ye Narigansets doe geather ye shells of which yey make it from their shors. And it hath now continued a current comoditie aboute this

* Peag.

20. years, and it may prove a drugg in time. In y^e^ mean time it maks y^e^ Indeans of these parts rich & power full and also prowd therby; and fills them with peeces, powder, and shote, which no laws can restraine, by reasone of y^e^ bassnes of sundry unworthy persons, both English, Dutch, & French, which may turne to y^e^ ruine of many. Hithertoo y^e^ Indeans of these parts had no peeces nor other armes but their bowes & arrowes, nor of many years after; nether durst they scarce handle a gune, so much were they affraid of them; and y^e^ very sight of one (though out of kilter) was a terrour unto them. But those Indeans to y^e^ east parts, which had com̄erce with y^e^ French, got peces of them, and they in y^e^ end made a commone trade of it; and in time our English fisher-men, led with y^e^ like covetoussnes, followed their example, for their owne gaine; but upon complainte against them, it pleased the kings majestie to prohibite y^e^ same by a stricte proclaimation, commanding that no sorte of armes, or munition, should by any of his subjects be traded with them.

Aboute some 3. or 4. years before this time, ther came over one Captaine Wolastone, (a man of pretie parts,) and with him 3. or 4. more of some eminencie, who brought with them a great many servants, with provissions & other implments for to begine a plantation; and pitched them selves in a place within the Massachusets, which they called, after their Captains

name, Mount-Wollaston. Amongst whom was one Mr. Morton, who, it should seeme, had some small adventure (of his owne or other mens) amongst them; but had litle respecte [159] amongst them, and was sleghted by ye meanest servants. Haveing continued ther some time, and not finding things to answer their expectations, nor profite to arise as they looked for, Captaine Wollaston takes a great part of ye sarvants, and transports them to Virginia, wher he puts them of at good rates, selling their time to other men; and writs back to one Mr. Rassdall, one of his cheefe partners, and accounted their marchant, to bring another parte of them to Verginia likewise, intending to put them of ther as he had done ye rest. And he, wth ye consente of ye said Rasdall, appoynted one Fitcher to be his Livetenante, and governe ye remaines of ye plantation, till he or Rasdall returned to take further order theraboute. But this Morton abovesaid, haveing more craft then honestie, (who had been a kind of petiefogger, of Furnefells Inne,) in ye others absence, watches an oppertunitie, (commons being but hard amongst them,) and gott some strong drinck & other junkats, & made them a feast; and after they were merie, he begane to tell them, he would give them good counsell. You see (saith he) that many of your fellows are carried to Virginia; and if you stay till this Rasdall returne, you will also be carried away and sould for slaves with ye rest. Therfore I would

advise you to thruste out this Levetenant Fitcher; and I, having a parte in the plantation, will receive you as my partners and consociats; so may you be free from service, and we will converse, trad, plante, & live togeather as equalls, & supporte & protecte one another, or to like effecte. This counsell was easily received; so they tooke oppertunitie, and thrust Levetenante Fitcher out a dores, and would suffer him to come no more amongst them, but forct him to seeke bread to eate, and other releefe from his neigbours, till he could gett passages for England. After this they fell to great licenciousnes, and led a dissolute life, powering out them selves into all profanenes. And Morton became lord of misrule, and maintained (as it were) a schoole of Athisme. And after they had gott some good into their hands, and gott much by trading with y^e^ Indeans, they spent it as vainly, in quaffing & drinking both wine & strong waters in great exsess, and, as some reported, 10^li^. worth in a morning. They allso set up a May-pole, drinking and dancing aboute it many days togeather, inviting the Indean women, for their consorts, dancing and frisking togither, (like so many fairies, or furies rather,) and worse practises. As if they had anew revived & celebrated the feasts of y^e^ Roman Goddes Flora, or y^e^ beasly practieses of y^e^ madd Bacchinalians. Morton likwise (to shew his poetrie) composed sundry rimes & verses, some tending to lasciviousnes, and

others to y^e^ detraction & scandall of some persons, which he affixed to this idle or idoll May-polle. They chainged allso the name of their place, and in stead of calling it Mounte Wollaston, they call it Meriemounte, [160] as if this joylity would have lasted ever. But this continued not long, for after Morton was sent for England, (as follows to be declared,) shortly after came over that worthy gentlman, M^r^. John Indecott, who brought over a patent under y^e^ broad seall, for y^e^ govermente of y^e^ Massachusets, who visiting those parts caused y^t^ May-polle to be cutt downe, and rebuked them for their profannes, and admonished them to looke ther should be better walking; so they now, or others, changed y^e^ name of their place againe, and called it Mounte-Dagon.

Now to maintaine this riotous prodigallitie and profuse excess, Morton, thinking him selfe lawless, and hearing what gaine y^e^ French & fisher-men made by trading of peeces, powder, & shotte to y^e^ Indeans, he, as y^e^ head of this consortship, begane y^e^ practise of y^e^ same in these parts; and first he taught them how to use them, to charge, & discharg, and what proportion of powder to give y^e^ peece, according to y^e^ sise or bignes of y^e^ same; and what shotte to use for foule, and what for deare. And having thus instructed them, he imployed some of them to hunte & fowle for him, so as they became farr more active in that imployemente then any of y^e^ English, by reason of ther

swiftnes of foote, & nimblnes of body, being also quick-sighted, and by continuall exercise well knowing y^e^ hants of all sorts of game. So as when they saw y^e^ execution that a peece would doe, and y^e^ benefite that might come by y^e^ same, they became madd, as it were, after them, and would not stick to give any prise they could attaine too for them; accounting their bowes & arrowes but bables in comparison of them.

And here I may take occasion to bewaile y^e^ mischefe that this wicked man began in these parts, and which since base covetousnes prevailing in men that should know better, has now at length gott y^e^ upper hand, and made this thing com̄one, notwithstanding any laws to y^e^ contrary; so as y^e^ Indeans are full of peeces all over, both fouling peeces, muskets, pistols, &c. They have also their moulds to make shotte, of all sorts, as muskett bulletts, pistoll bullets, swane & gose shote, & of smaler sorts; yea, some have seen them have their scruplats to make scrupins them selves, when they wante them, with sundery other implements, wherwith they are ordinarily better fited & furnished then y^e^ English them selves. Yea, it is well knowne that they will have powder & shot, when the English want it, nor cannot gett it; and y^t^ in a time of warr or danger, as experience hath manifested, that when lead hath been scarce, and men for their owne defence would gladly have given a groat a li., which is dear enoughe,

yet hath it bene bought up & sent to other places, and sould to shuch as trade it with y^e^ Indeans, at 12. pence y^e^ li.; and it is like they give 3. or 4.^s^ y^e^ pound, for they will have it at any rate. And these things have been done in y^e^ same times, when some of their neigbours & freinds are daly killed by y^e^ Indeans, or are in deanger therof, and live but at y^e^ Indeans mercie. [161] Yea, some (as they have aquainted them with all other things) have tould them how gunpowder is made, and all y^e^ materialls in it, and that they are to be had in their owne land: and I am confidente, could they attaine to make saltpeter, they would teach them to make powder. O the horiblues of this vilanie! how many both Dutch & English have been latly slaine by those Indeans, thus furnished: and no remedie provided, nay, y^e^ evill more increased, and y^e^ blood of their brethren sould for gaine, as is to be feared; and in what danger all these colonies are in is too well known. Oh! that princes & parlements would take some timly order to prevente this mischeefe, and at length to suppress it, by some exemplerie punishmente upon some of these gaine thirstie murderers, (for they deserve no better title,) before their collonies in these parts be over throwne by these barbarous savages, thus armed with their owne weapons, by these evill instruments, and traytors to their neighbors and countrie. But I have forgott my selfe, and have been to longe in this digression; but now to returne. This Morton having

thus taught them y^e^ use of peeces, he sould them all he could spare; and he and his consorts detirmined to send for many out of England, and had by some of y^e^ ships sente for above a score. The which being knowne, and his neigbours meeting y^e^ Indeans in y^e^ woods armed with guns in this sorte, it was a terrour unto them, who lived straglingly, and were of no strenght in any place. And other places (though more remote) saw this mischeefe would quictly spread over all, if not prevented. Besides, they saw they should keep no servants, for Morton would entertaine any, how vile soever, and all y^e^ scume of y^e^ countrie, or any discontents, would flock to him from all places, if this nest was not broken; and they should stand in more fear of their lives & goods (in short time) from this wicked & deboste crue, then from y^e^ salvages them selves.

So sundrie of y^e^ cheefe of y^e^ stragling plantations, meeting togither, agreed by mutuall consente to sollissite those of Plimoth (who were then of more strength then them all) to joyne with them, to prevente y^e^ further grouth of this mischeefe, and suppress Morton & his consortes before y^e^^y^ grewe to further head and strength. Those that joyned in this acction (and after contributed to y^e^ charge of sending him for England) were from Pascataway, Namkeake, Winisimett, Weesagascusett, Natasco, and other places wher any English were seated. Those of Plimoth being thus sought too by their mes-

sengers & letters, and waying both their reasons, and the comone danger, were willing to afford them their help; though them selves had least cause of fear or hurte. So, to be short, they first resolved joyntly to write to him, and in a freindly & neigborly way to admonish him to forbear these courses, & sent a messenger with their letters to bring his answer. But he was so highe as he scorned all advise, and asked who had to doe with him; he had and would trade peeces with ye Indeans in dispite of all, with many other scurillous termes full of disdaine. They sente to him a second time, and bad him be better advised, and more temperate in his termes, for ye countrie could not beare ye injure he did; it was against their comone saftie, and against ye king's proclamation. He answerd in high terms as before, and that ye kings proclaimation was no law; demanding what penaltie was upon it. It was answered, more then he could [162] bear, his majesties displeasure. But insolently he persisted, and said ye king was dead and his displeasure with him, & many ye like things; and threatened withall that if any came to molest him, let them looke to them selves, for he would prepare for them. Upon which they saw ther was no way but to take him by force; and having so farr proceeded, now to give over would make him farr more hautie & insolente. So they mutually resolved to proceed, and obtained of ye Govr of Plimoth to send

Captaine Standish, & some other aide with him, to take Morton by force. The which accordingly was done; but they found him to stand stifly in his defence, having made fast his dors, armed his consorts, set diverse dishes of powder & bullets ready on y^e^ table; and if they had not been over armed with drinke, more hurt might have been done. They somaned him to yeeld, but he kept his house, and they could gett nothing but scofes & scorns from him; but at length, fearing they would doe some violence to y^e^ house, he and some of his crue came out, but not to yeeld, but to shoote; but they were so steeld with drinke as their peeces were to heavie for them; him selfe with a carbine (over charged & allmost halfe fild with powder & shote, as was after found) had thought to have shot Captaine Standish; but he stept to him, & put by his peece, & tooke him. Neither was ther any hurte done to any of either side, save y^t^ one was so drunke y^t^ he rane his owne nose upon y^e^ pointe of a sword y^t^ one held before him as he entred y^e^ house; but he lost but a litle of his hott blood. Morton they brought away to Plimoth, wher he was kepte, till a ship went from y^e^ Ile of Shols for England, with which he was sente to y^e^ Counsell of New-England; and letters writen to give them information of his course & cariage; and also one was sent at their comone charge to informe their Ho^rs^ more perticulerly, & to prosecute against him. But he foold of y^e^ messenger, after he was gone

from hence, and though he wente for England, yet nothing was done to him, not so much as rebukte, for ought was heard; but returned y^e^ nexte year. Some of y^e^ worst of y^e^ company were disperst, and some of y^e^ more modest kepte y^e^ house till he should be heard from. But I have been too long aboute so unworthy a person, and bad a cause.

This year M^r^. Allerton brought over a yonge man for a minister to y^e^ people hear, wheather upon his owne head, or at y^e^ motion of some freinds ther, I well know not, but it was without y^e^ churches sending; for they had bene so bitten by M^r^. Lyford, as they desired to know y^e^ person well whom they should invite amongst them. His name was M^r^. Rogers; but they perceived, upon some triall, that he was crased in his braine; so they were faine to be at further charge to send him back againe y^e^ nexte year, and loose all y^e^ charge that was expended in his hither bringing, which was not smalle by M^r^. Allerton's accounte, in provissions, aparell, bedding, &c. After his returne he grue quite distracted, and M^r^. Allerton was much blamed y^t^ he would bring such a man over, they having charge enough otherwise.

M^r^. Allerton, in y^e^ years before, had brought over some small quantie of goods, upon his owne perticuler, and sould them for his owne private benefite; which was more then any man had yet hithertoo attempted. But because he had other wise done them good ser-

vice, and also he sould them among y^e^ people at y^e^ plantation, by which their wants were supplied, and he aledged it was the [163] love of M^r^. Sherley and some other freinds that would needs trust him with some goods, conceiveing it might doe him some good, and none hurte, it was not much lookt at, but past over. But this year he brought over a greater quantitie, and they were so intermixte with y^e^ goods of y^e^ generall, as they knew not which were theirs, & w^ch^ was his, being pact up together; so as they well saw that, if any casualty had beefalne at sea, he might have laid y^e^ whole on them, if he would; for ther was no distinction. Allso what was most vendible, and would yeeld presente pay, usualy that was his; and he now begane allso to sell abroad to others of forine places, which, considering their co̅mone course, they began to dislike. Yet because love thinkes no evill, nor is susspitious, they tooke his faire words for excuse, and resolved to send him againe this year for England; considering how well he had done y^e^ former bussines, and what good acceptation he had with their freinds ther; as also seeing sundry of their freinds from Leyden were sente for, which would or might be much furthered by his means. Againe, seeing the patente for Kenebeck must be inlarged, by reason of y^e^ former mistaks in the bounding of it, and it was conceived, in a maner, y^e^ same charge would serve to inlarge this at home with it, and he that had begane

y^e^ former y^e^ last year would be y^e^ fittest to effecte this; so they gave him instructions and sente him for England this year againe. And in his instructions bound him to bring over no goods on their accounte, but 50^li^. in hose & shoes, and some linen cloth, (as y^ey^ were bound by covenante when they tooke y^e^ trad;) also some trading goods to such a value; and in no case to exseed his instructions, nor rune them into any further charge; he well knowing how their state stood. Also y^t^ he should so provide y^t^ their trading goods came over betimes, and what so ever was sent on their accounte should be pact up by it selfe, marked with their marke, and no other goods to be mixed with theirs. For so he prayed them to give him such instructions as they saw good, and he would folow them, to prevente any jellocie or farther offence, upon the former forementioned dislikes. And thus they conceived they had well provided for all things.

Anno Dom: 1629.

M^r^. ALLERTON safly arriving in England, and delivering his leters to their freinds their, and aquainting them with his instructions, found good acceptation with them, and they were very forward & willing to joyne with them in y^e^ partnership of trade, & in y^e^ charge to send over y^e^ Leyden people; a company wherof were allready come out of Holand, and prepared to come over, and so were sent away before M^r^. Allerton

could be ready to come. They had passage with y^e^ ships that came to Salem, that brought over many godly persons to begine y^e^ plantations & churches of Christ ther, & in y^e^ Bay of Massachussets; so their long stay & keeping back [164] was recompensed by y^e^ Lord to ther freinds here with a duble blessing, in that they not only injoyed them now beyond ther late expectation, (when all their hops seemed to be cutt of,) but, with them, many more godly freinds & Christian breethren, as y^e^ begining of a larger harvest unto y^e^ Lord, in y^e^ increase of his churches & people in these parts, to y^e^ admiration of many, and allmost wonder of y^e^ world; that of so small beginings so great things should insue, as time after manifested; and that here should be a resting place for so many of y^e^ Lords people, when so sharp a scourge came upon their owne nation. But it was y^e^ Lords doing, & it ought to be marvellous in our eyes.

But I shall hear inserte some of their freinds letters, which doe best expresse their owne minds in these thir proceedings.

A leter of M^r^. Sherleys to y^e^ Gov^r^.

May 25, 1629.*

S^r^: &c. Here are now many of your and our freinds from Leyden coming over, who, though for y^e^ most parte be but a weak company, yet herein is a good parte of that

* 1629, May 25, the first letter concerning the former company of Leyden people. — *Prince.*

end obtained which was aimed at, and which hath been so strongly opposed by some of our former adventurers. But God hath his working in these things, which man cannot frustrate. With them we have allso sent some servants in y^e^ ship called the Talbut, that wente hence latly; but these come in y^e^ May-flower. M^r^. Beachamp & my selfe, with M^r^. Andrews & M^r^. Hatherly, are, with your love and liking, joyned partners with you, &c.

Your deputation we have received, and y^e^ goods have been taken up & sould by your freind & agente, M^r^. Allerton, my selfe having bine nere 3. months in Holland, at Amsterdam & other parts in y^e^ Low-Countries. I see further the agreemente you have made with y^e^ generallitie, in which I cannot understand but you have done very well, both for them & you, and also for your freinds at Leyden. M^r^. Beachamp, M^r^. Andrews, M^r^. Hatherley, & my selfe, doe so like and approve of it, as we are willing to joyne with you, and, God directing and inabling us, will be assisting and helpfull to you, y^e^ best y^t^ possiblie we can. Nay, had you not taken this course, I doe not see how you should accomplish y^e^ end you first aimed at, and some others indevored these years past. We know it must keep us from y^e^ profite, which otherwise by y^e^ blessing of God and your indeaours, might be gained; for most of those that came in May, & these now sente, though I hope honest & good people, yet not like to be helpfull to raise profite, but rather, ney, certaine must, some while, be chargable to you & us; at which it is lickly, had not this wise & discreete course been taken, many of your generalitie would have grudged. Againe, you say well in your letter, and I make no doubte but you will performe it, that now being but a few, on whom y^e^ burthen must be, you will both menage it y^e^ beter, and sett too it more cherfully, haveing no discontente nor

contradiction, but so lovingly to joyne togeither, in affection and counsell, as God no doubte will blesse and prosper your honest labours & indeavors. And therfore in all respects I doe not see but you have done marvelously discreetly, & advisedly, and no doubt but it gives all parties good contente; I mean y^t^ are reasonable & honest men, such as make conscience of giving y^e^ best satisfaction they be able for their debts, and y^t^ regard not their owne perticuler so much as y^e^ accomplishing of y^t^ good end for which this bussines was first intended, &c. Thus desiring y^e^ Lord to blese & prosper you, & all yours, and all our honest endeavors, I rest

Your unfained & ever loving freind,

JAMES SHERLEY.

Lon: March 8. 1629.*

[165] That I may handle things together, I have put these 2. companies that came from Leyden in this place; though they came at 2. severall times, yet they both came out of England this year. The former company, being 35. persons, were shiped in May, and arived here aboute August. The later were shiped in y^e^ begining of March, and arived hear y^e^ later end of May, 1630. M^r^. Sherleys 2. letters, y^e^ effect wherof I have before related, (as much of them as is pertinente,) mentions both. Their charge, as M^r^. Allerton brought it in afterwards on accounte, came to above 550^li.^ besids ther fetching hither from Salem & y^e^ Bay, wher they and their goods were landed; viz.

* 1629-30, March 8th, the second letter concerning the latter company of Leyden people. — *Prince.*

their transportation from Holland to England, & their charges lying ther, and passages hither, with clothing provided for them. For I find by accounte for y^e^ one company, 125. yeards of karsey, 127. ellons of linen cloath, shoes, 66. p^r^, with many other perticulers. The charge of y^e^ other company is reckoned on y^e^ severall families, some 50^li^., some 40^li^., some 30^li^., and so more or less, as their number & expencess were. And besids all this charg, their freinds & bretheren here were to provid corne & other provissions for them, till they could reap a crope which was long before. Those that came in May were thus maintained upward of 16. or 18. months, before they had any harvest of their owne, & y^e^ other by proportion. And all they could doe in y^e^ mean time was to gett them some housing, and prepare them grounds to plant on, against the season. And this charg of maintaining them all this while was litle less then y^e^ former sume. These things I note more perticulerly, for sundry regards. First, to shew a rare example herein of brotherly love, and Christian care in performing their promises and covenants to their bretheren, too, & in a sorte beyonde their power; that they should venture so desperatly to ingage them selves to accomplish this thing, and bear it so cheerfully; for they never demanded, much less had, any repaymente of all these great sumes thus disbursed. 2^ly^. It must needs be that ther was more then of man in these acheevements, that should thus readily stire up

y^e^ harts of shuch able frinds to joyne in partnership with them in shuch a case, and cleave so faithfullie to them as these did, in so great adventures; and the more because the most of them never saw their faces to this day; ther being neither kindred, aliance, or other acquaintance or relations betweene any of them, then hath been before mentioned; it must needs be therfore the spetiall worke and hand of God. 3^ly^. That these poore people here in a wilderness should, notwithstanding, be inabled in time to repay all these ingagments, and many more unjustly brought upon them through the unfaithfullnes of some, and many other great losses which they sustained, which will be made manifest, if y^e^ Lord be pleased to give life and time. In y^e^ mean time, I cannot but admire his ways and workes towards his servants, and humbly desire to blesse his holy name for his great mercies hithertoo.

[166] The Leyden people being thus come over, and sundry of y^e^ generalitie seeing & hearing how great y^e^ charg was like to be that was that way to be expended, they begane to murmure and repine at it, notwithstanding y^e^ burden lay on other mens shoulders; espetially at y^e^ paying of y^e^ 3. bushells of corne a year, according to y^e^ former agreemente, when y^e^ trad was lett for y^e^ 6. years aforesaid. But to give them contente herein allso, it was promised them, that if they could doe it in y^e^ time without it, they would never demand it of them; which gave them good con-

tente. And indeed it never was paid, as will appeare by y^e^ sequell.

Concerning M^r^. Allertons proceedings about y^e^ inlarging & confirming of their patent, both y^t^ at home & Kenebeck, will best appere by another leter of M^r^. Sherleys; for though much time & money was expended aboute it, yet he left it unaccomplisht this year, and came without it. See M^r^. Sherleys letter.

Most worthy & loving freinds, &c.

Some of your letters I received in July, & some since by M^r^. Peirce, but till our maine bussines, y^e^ patent, was granted, I could not setle my mind nor pen to writing. M^r^. Allerton was so turrmoyled about it, as verily I would not nor could not have undergone it, if I might have had a thousand pounds; but y^e^ Lord so blessed his labours (even beyond expectation in these evill days) as he obtained y^e^ love & favore of great men in repute & place. He got granted from y^e^ Earle of Warwick & S^r^. Ferdinando Gorge all that M^r^. Winslow desired in his letters to me, & more also, which I leave to him to relate. Then he sued to y^e^ king to confirme their grante, and to make you a corporation, and so to inable you to make & execute lawes, in such large & ample maner as y^e^ Massachusett plantation hath it; which y^e^ king graciously granted, referring it to y^e^ Lord Keeper to give order to y^e^ solisiter to draw it up, if ther were a presidente for it. So y^e^ Lord Keeper furthered it all he could, and allso y^e^ solissiter; but as Festus said to Paule, With no small sume of money obtained I this freedom; for by y^e^ way many ridells must be resolved, and many locks must be opened with y^e^ silver, ney, y^e^ golden key. Then it was to come to y^e^ Lord Treasurer, to have his warrente

for freeing y^e^ custume for a certaine time; but he would not doe it, but refferd it to y^e^ Counsell table. And ther M^r^. Allerton atended day by day, when they sate, but could not gett his petition read. And by reason of M^r^. Peirce his staying with all y^e^ passengers at Bristoll, he was forct to leave y^e^ further prosecuting of it to a solissiter. But ther is no fear nor doubte but it will be granted, for he hath y^e^ cheefe of them to freind; yet it will be marvelously needfull for him to returne by y^e^ first ship y^t^ comes from thence; for if you had this confirmed, then were you compleate, and might bear such sway & goverment as were fitt for your ranke & place y^t^ God hath called you unto; and stope y^e^ moueths of base and scurrulous fellowes, y^t^ are ready to question & threaten you in every action you [167] doe. And besids, if you have y^e^ custome free for 7. years inward, & 21. outward, y^e^ charge of y^e^ patent will be soone recovered, and ther is no fear of obtaining* it. But such things must work by degrees; men cannot hasten it as they would; werefore we (I write in behalfe of all our partners here) desire you to be ernest with M^r^. Allerton to come, and his wife to spare him this one year more, to finish this great & waighty bussines, which we conceive will be much for your good, & I hope for your posteritie, and for many generations to come.

Thus much of this letter. It was dated y^e^ 19. March, 1629.

By which it appears what progress was made herein, & in part what charge it was, and how left unfinished, and some reason of y^e^ same; but in truth (as was

* This word is here substituted for *recovering* in the manuscript, on the authority of Bradford's Letter-Book.

afterwards appehended) the meaine reason was Mr. Allerton's policie, to have an opportunitie to be sent over againe, for other regards; and for that end procured them thus to write. For it might then well enough have been finshed, if not with yt clause aboute ye custumes, which was Mr. Allertons & Mr. Sherleys device, and not at all thought on by ye colony here, nor much regarded, yet it might have been done without it, without all queston, having passed ye kings hand; nay it was conceived it might then have beene done with it, if he had pleased; but covetousnes never brings ought home, as ye proverb is, for this oppertunytie being lost, it was never accomplished, but a great deale of money veainly & lavishly cast away aboute it, as doth appear upon their accounts. But of this more in its place.

Mr. Alerton gave them great and just ofence in this (which I had omited* and almost forgotten), — in bringing over this year, for base gaine, that unworthy man, and instrumente of mischeefe, Morton, who was sent home but ye year before for his misdemenors. He not only brought him over, but to ye towne (as it were to nose them), and lodged him at his owne house, and for a while used him as a scribe to doe his bussines, till he was caused to pack him away. So he wente to his old nest in ye Massachusets, wher it was not long

* This paragraph is written on the reverse of the page immediately preceding, in the original manuscript.

but by his miscariage he gave them just occation to lay hands on him; and he was by them againe sent prisoner into England, wher he lay a good while in Exeter Jeole. For besids his miscariage here, he was vemently suspected for y^e^ murder of a man that had adventured moneys with him, when he came first into New-England. And a warrente was sente from y^e^ Lord Cheefe Justice to apprehend him, by vertue wherof he was by the Gov^r^ of y^e^ Massachusets sent into England; and for other his misdemenors amongst them, they demolisht his house, that it might be no longer a roost for shuch unclaine birds to nestle in. Yet he got free againe, and write an infamouse & scurillous booke against many godly & cheefe men of y^e^ cuntrie; full of lyes & slanders, and fraight with profane callumnies against their names and persons, and y^e^ ways of God. After sundry years, when y^e^ warrs were hott in England, he came againe into y^e^ cuntrie, and was imprisoned at Boston for this booke and other things, being grown old in wickednes.

Concerning y^e^ rest of M^r^. Allertons instructions, in which they strictly injoyned him not to exceed above y^t^ 50^li^. in y^e^ goods before mentioned, not to bring any but trading comodities, he followed them not at all, but did the quite contrarie; bringing over many other sorts of retaile goods, selling what he could by the way on his owne accounte, and delivering the rest, which he said to be theirs, into y^e^ store; and for

trading goods brought but litle in comparison; excusing the matter, they had laid out much about y^e^ Laiden people, & patent, &c. And for other goods, they had much of them of ther owne dealings, without present disbursemente, & to like effect. And as for passing his bounds & instructions, he laid it on M^r^. Sherley, &c., who, he said, they might see his mind in his leters; also that they had sett out Ashley at great charg; but next year they should have what trading goods they would send for, if things were now well setled, &c. And thus were they put off; indeed M^r^. Sherley write things tending this way, but it is like he was overruled by M^r^. Allerton, and harkened more to him then to their letters from hence.

Thus he further writs in y^e^ former leter.

I see what you write in your leters concerning y^e^ over-coming & paying of our debts, which I confess are great, and had need be carfully looked unto; yet no doubt but we, joyning in love, may soone over-come them; but we must follow it roundly & to purposs, for if we pedle out y^e^ time of our trad, others will step in and nose us. But we know y^t^ you have y^t^ aquaintance & experience in y^e^ countrie, as none have the like; wherfore, freinds & partners, be no way discouraged with y^e^ greatnes of y^e^ debt, &c., but let us not fulfill y^e^ proverbe, to bestow 12^d^. on a purse, and put 6^d^. [168] in it; but as you and we have been at great charg, and undergone much for setling you ther, and to gaine experience, so as God shall enable us, let us make use of it. And think not with 50^li^. pound a yeare sent you over, to rayse shuch means as to pay our debts. We see a possi-

billitie of good if you be well supplied, and fully furnished; and cheefly if you lovingly agree. I know I write to godly and wise men, such as have lerned to bear one an others infirmities, and rejoyce at any ones prosperities; and if I were able I would press this more, because it is hoped by some of your enimies, that you will fall out one with another, and so over throw your hopfull bussines. Nay, I have heard it crediblie reported, y^t^ some have said, that till you be disjoynted by discontents & factions* amongst your sellves, it bootes not any to goe over, in hope of getting or doing good in those parts. But we hope beter things of you, and that you will not only bear one with another, but banish such thoughts, and not suffer them to lodg in your brests. God grant you may disappointe y^e^ hopes of your foes, and procure y^e^ hartie desire of your selves & freinds in this perticuler.

By this it appears that ther was a kind of concurrance betweene M^r^. Allerton and them in these things, and that they gave more regard to his way & course in these things, then to y^e^ advise from hence; which made him bould to presume above his instructions, and to rune on in y^e^ course he did, to their greater hurt afterwards, as will appear. These things did much trouble them hear, but they well knew not how to help it, being loath to make any breach or contention hear aboute; being so premonished as before in y^e^ leter above recited. An other more secrete cause was herewith concurrente; M^r^. Allerton had maried y^e^ daughter of their Reverend Elder, M^r^. Brewster (a man beloved

* *Fractions* in the manuscript.

& honoured amongst them, and who tooke great paines in teaching & dispenceing y^e^ word of God unto them), whom they were loath to greeve or any way offend, so as they bore with much in that respecte. And with all M^r^. Allerton carried so faire with him, and procured such leters from M^r^. Sherley to him, with shuch applause of M^r^. Allertons wisdom, care, and faithfullnes, in y^e^ bussines; and as things stood none were so fitte to send aboute them as he; and if any should suggest other wise, it was rather out of envie, or some other sinister respecte then other wise. Besids, though private gaine, I doe perswade my selfe, was some cause to lead M^r^. Allerton aside in these beginings, yet I thinke, or at least charitie caries me to hope, that he intended to deale faithfully with them in y^e^ maine, and had such an opinion of his owne abillitie, and some experience of y^e^ benefite that he had made in this singuler way, as he conceived he might both raise him selfe an estate, and allso be a means to bring in such profite to M^r^. Sherley, (and it may be y^e^ rest,) as might be as lickly to bring in their moneys againe with advantage, and it may be sooner then from the generall way; or at least it was looked upon by some of them to be a good help ther unto; and that neither he nor any other did intend to charge y^e^ generall accounte with any thing that rane in perticuler; or y^t^ M^r^. Sherley or any other did purposs but y^t^ y^e^ generall should be first & fully supplyed. I say charitie

makes me thus conceive; though things fell out other wise, and they missed of their aimes, and y^e^ generall suffered abundantly hereby, as will afterwards apear.

[169] Togeither herewith sorted an other bussines contrived by M^r^. Allerton and them ther, w^th^out any knowledg of y^e^ partners, and so farr proceeded in as they were constrained to allow therof, and joyne in y^e^ same, though they had no great liking of it, but feared what might be y^e^ evente of y^e^ same. I shall relate it in a further part of M^r^. Sherley's leter as foloweth.

I am to aquainte you that we have thought good to joyne with one Edward Ashley (a man I thinke y^t^ some of you know); but it is only of y^t^ place wherof he hath a patente in M^r^. Beachamps name; and to that end have furnished him with larg provissions, &c. Now if you please to be partners with us in this, we are willing you shall; for after we heard how forward Bristoll men (and as I hear some able men of his owne kindrid) have been to stock & supply him, hoping of profite, we thought it fitter for us to lay hould of such an opportunitie, and to keep a kind of ruñing plantation, then others who have not borne y^e^ burthen of setling a plantation, as we have done. And he, on y^e^ other side, like an understanding yonge man, thought it better to joyne with those y^t^ had means by a plantation to supply & back him ther, rather then strangers, that looke but only after profite. Now it is not knowne that you are partners with him; but only we 4., M^r^. Andrews, M^r^. Beachamp, my selfe, & M^r^. Hatherley, who desired to have y^e^ patente, in consideration of our great loss we have allready sustained in setling y^e^ first plantation ther; so we agreed togeather to

take it in our names. And now, as I said before, if you please to joyne with us, we are willing you should. Mr. Allerton had no power from you to make this new contracte, neither was he willing to doe any thing therin without your consente & approbation. Mr. William Peirce is joyned with us in this, for we thought it very conveniente, because of landing Ashley and his goods ther, if God please; and he will bend his course accordingly. He hath a new boate with him, and boards to make another, with 4. or 5. lustie fellowes, wherof one is a carpenter. Now in case you are not willing in this perticuler to joyne with us, fearing ye charge & doubting ye success, yet thus much we intreate of you, to afford him all the help you can, either by men, commodities, or boats; yet not but yt we will pay you for any thing he hath. And we desire you to keep ye accounts apart, though you joyne with us; becase ther is, as you see, other partners in this then ye other; so, for all mens wages, boats-hire, or comodities, which we shall have of you, make him debtore for it; and what you shall have of him, make ye plantation or your selves debtore for it to him, and so ther will need no mingling of ye accounts.

And now, loving freinds & partners, if you joyne in Ashles patent & bussines, though we have laid out ye money and taken up much to stock this bussines & the other, yet I thinke it conscionable and reasonable yt you should beare your shares and proportion of ye stock, if not by present money, yet by securing us for so much as it shall come too; for it is not barly ye interest yt is to be alowed & considered of, but allso ye adventure; though I hope in God, by his blessing & your honest indeavors, it may soon be payed; yet ye years yt this partnership holds is not long, nor many; let all therfore lay it to harte, and make ye best use of ye time that possiblie we cann, and let every man

put too his shoulder, and y^e^ burthen will be the lighter. I know you are so honest & conscionable men, as you will consider hereof, [170] and returne shuch an answer as may give good satisfaction. Ther is none of us that would venture as we have done, were it not to strengthen & setle you more then our owne perticuler profite.

Ther is no liclyhood of doing any good in buying y^e^ debte for y^e^ purchas. I know some will not abate y^e^ interest, and therfore let it rune its course; they are to be paied yearly, and so I hope they shall, according to agreemente. The Lord grant y^t^ our loves & affections may still be united, and knit togeither; and so we rest your ever loving friends,

James Sherley.

Timothy Hatherley.

Bristoll, March 19. 1629.

This mater of y^e^ buying y^e^ debts of y^e^ purchass was parte of M^r^. Allertons instructions, and in many of them it might have been done to good profite for ready pay (as some were); but M^r^. Sherley had no mind to it. But this bussines aboute Ashley did not a litle trouble them; for though he had wite & abillitie enough to menage y^e^ bussines, yet some of them knew him to be a very profane yonge man; and he had for some time lived amonge y^e^ Indeans as a savage, & wente naked amongst them, and used their maners (in w^ch^ time he got their language), so they feared he might still rune into evill courses (though he promised better), and God would not prosper his ways. As soone as he was landed at y^e^ place intended, caled Penobscote, some 4. score leagues from this place, he

write (& afterwards came) for to desire to be supplyed with Wampampeake, corne against winter, and other things. They considered these were of their cheefe comodities, and would be continually needed by him, and it would much prejudice their owne trade at Kenebeck if they did not joyne with him in y^e^ ordering of things, if thus they should supply him; and on y^e^ other hand, if they refused to joyne with him, and allso to afford any supply unto him, they should greatly offend their above named friends, and might hapily lose them hereby; and he and M^r^. Allerton, laying their craftie wits togither, might gett supplies of these things els wher; besids, they considered that if they joyned not in y^e^ bussines, they knew M^r^. Allerton would be with them in it, & so would swime, as it were, betweene both, to y^e^ prejudice of boath, but of them selves espetially. For they had reason to thinke this bussines was cheefly of his contriving, and Ashley was a man fitte for his turne and dealings. So they, to prevente a worse mischeefe, resolved to joyne in y^e^ bussines, and gave him supplies in what they could, & overlooked his proceedings as well as they could; the which they did y^e^ better, by joyning an honest yonge man,* that came from Leyden, with him as his fellow (in some sorte), and not merely as a servante. Which yonge man being discreete, and one whom they could trust, they so instructed as

* Thomas Willett.

keept Ashley in some good mesure within bounds. And so they returned their answer to their freinds in England, that they accepted of their motion, and joyned with them in Ashleys bussines; and yet withall tould them what their fears were concerning him.

But when they came to have full notice of all y^e^ goods brought them that year, they saw they fell very short of trading goods, and Ashley farr better suppleyed then [171] themselves; so as they were forced to buy of the fisher men to furnish them selves, yea, & cottens & carseys &. other such like cloath (for want of trading cloath) of M^r^. Allerton himselfe, and so to put away a great parte of their beaver, at under rate, in the countrie, which they should have sente home, to help to discharge their great ingagementes; which was to their great vexation; but M^r^. Allerton prayed them to be contente, and y^e^ nexte yere they might have what they would write for. And their ingagmentes of this year were great indeed when they came to know them, (which was not wholy till 2. years after); and that which made them y^e^ more, M^r^. Allerton had taken up some large sum̄es at Bristoll at 50. p^r^ cent. againe, which he excused, that he was forcte to it, because other wise he could at y^e^ spring of year get no goods transported, such were their envie against their trade. But wheither this was any more then an excuse, some of them doubted; but how-

ever, y^e^ burden did lye on their backs, and they must bear it, as they did many heavie loads more in y^e^ end.

This paying of 50. ℔^r^ cent. and dificulty of having their goods trāsported by y^e^ fishing ships at y^e^ first of y^e^ year, (as was beleeved,) which was y^e^ cheefe season for trade, put them upon another projecte. M^r^. Allerton, after y^e^ fishing season was over, light of a bargan of salte, at a good fishing place, and bought it; which came to aboute 113^li^.; and shortly after he might have had 30^li^. cleare profite for it, without any more trouble aboute it. But M^r^. Winslow coming that way from Kenebeck, & some other of ther partners with him in y^e^ barke, they mett with M^r^. Allerton, and falling into discourse with him, they stayed him from selling y^e^ salte; and resolved, if it might please y^e^ rest, to keep it for them selves, and to hire a ship in y^e^ west cuntrie to come on fishing for them, on shares, according to y^e^ coustome; and seeing she might have her salte here ready, and a stage ready builte & fitted wher the salt lay safely landed & housed. In stead of bringing salte, they might stowe her full of trading goods, as bread, pease, cloth, &c., and so they might have a full supply of goods without paing fraight, and in due season, which might turne greatly to their advantage. Coming home, this was propounded, and considered on, and aproved by all but y^e^ Gov^r^, who had no mind to it, seeing they had allway lost

by fishing; but y^e^ rest were so ernest, as thinkeing that they might gaine well by y^e^ fishing in this way; and if they should but save, yea, or lose some thing by it, y^e^ other benefite would be advantage inough; so, seeing their ernestnes, he gave way, and it was referd to their freinds in England to alow, or disalow it. Of which more in its place.

Upon y^e^ consideration of y^e^ bussines about y^e^ paten, & in what state it was left, as is before remembred, and M^r^. Sherleys ernest pressing to have M^r^. Allertō to come over againe to finish it, & perfect y^e^ accounts, &c., it was concluded to send him over this year againe; though it was with some fear & jeolocie; yet he gave them fair words and promises of well performing all their bussineses according to their directions, and to mend his former errors. So he was accordingly sent with full instructions for all things, with large letters to M^r^. Sherley & y^e^ rest, both aboute Ashleys bussines and their owne suply with trading comodities, and how much it did concerne them to be furnished therwith, & what y^e^ had suffered for wante therof; and of what litle use other goods were [172] in comparison therof; and so likewise aboute this fishing ship, to be thus hired, and fraught with trading goods, which might both supply them & Ashley, and y^e^ benefite therof; which was left to their consideration to hire & set her out, or not; but in no case not to send any, exepte she was thus fraighte with trading

goods. But what these things came too will appere in y^e^ next years passages.

I had like to have omited an other passage that fell out y^e^ begining of this year. Ther was one M^r^. Ralfe Smith, & his wife & familie, y^t^ came over into y^e^ Bay of y^e^ Massachusets, and sojourned at presente with some stragling people that lived at Natascoe; here being a boat of this place putting in ther on some occasion, he ernestly desired that they would give him & his, passage for Plimoth, and some such things as they could well carrie; having before heard y^t^ ther was liklyhood he might procure house-roome for some time, till he should resolve to setle ther, if he might, or els-wher as God should disposs; for he was werie of being in y^t^ uncoth place, & in a poore house y^t^ would neither keep him nor his goods drie. So, seeing him to be a grave man, & understood he had been a minister, though they had no order for any such thing, yet they presumed and brought him. He was here accordingly kindly entertained & housed, & had y^e^ rest of his goods & servants sente for, and exercised his gifts amongst them, and afterwards was chosen into y^e^ ministrie, and so remained for sundrie years.

It was before noted that sundry of those that came from Leyden, came over in the ships y^t^ came to Salem, wher M^r^. Endecott had cheefe comand; and by infection that grue amonge y^e^ passengers at sea, it spread also among them a shore, of which many dyed, some of y^e^

scurvie, other of an infectious feaoure, which continued some time amongst them (though our people, through Gods goodnes, escaped it). Upon which occasion he write hither for some help, understanding here was one that had some skill y^t^ way, & had cured diverse of y^e^ scurvie, and others of other diseases, by letting blood, & other means. Upon which his request y^e^ Gov^r^ hear sent him unto them, and also write to him, from whom he received an answere; the which, because it is breefe, and shows y^e^ begining of their aquaintance, and closing in y^e^ truth & ways of God, I thought it not unmeete, nor without use, hear to inserte it; and an other showing y^e^ begining of their fellowship & church estate ther.

Being as followeth.

Right worthy S^r^:

It is a thing not usuall, that servants to one m^r^. and of y^e^ same houshold should be strangers; I assure you I desire it not, nay, to speake more plainly, I cannot be so to you. Gods people are all marked with one and y^e^ same marke, and sealed with one and y^e^ same seale, and have for y^e^ maine, one & y^e^ same harte, guided by one & same spirite of truth; and wher this is, ther can be no discorde, nay, here must needs be sweete harmonie. And y^e^ same request (with you) I make unto y^e^ Lord, that we may, as Christian breethren, be united by a heavenly & unfained love; bending all our harts and forces in furthering a worke beyond our strength, with reverence & fear, fastening our eyse allways on him that only is able to directe and prosper all our ways. I acknowledge my selfe much bound to you for your kind love and care in sending M^r^. Fuller among us,

and rejoyce much y^t I am by him satisfied touching your judgments of y^e outward forme of Gods worshipe. It is, as farr as [173] I can yet gather, no other then is warrented by y^e evidence of truth, and y^e same which I have proffessed and maintained ever since y^e Lord in mercie revealed him selfe unto me; being farr from y^e commone reporte that hath been spread of you touching that perticuler. But Gods children must not looke for less here below, and it is y^e great mercie of God, that he strengthens them to goe through with it. I shall not neede at this time to be tedious unto you, for, God willing, I purpose to see your face shortly. In y^e mean time, I humbly take my leave of you, comiting you to y^e Lords blessed protection, & rest,

Your assured loving friend,

Jo: Endecott.

Naumkeak, May 11. An^o. 1629.

This second leter sheweth ther proceedings in their church affaires at Salem, which was y^e 2. church erected in these parts; and afterwards y^e Lord established many more in sundrie places.

S^r: I make bould to trouble you with a few lines, for to certifie you how it hath pleased God to deale with us, since you heard from us. How, notwithstanding all opposition that hath been hear, & els wher, it hath pleased God to lay a foundation, the which I hope is agreeable to his word in every thing. The 20. of July, it pleased y^e Lord to move y^e hart of our Gov^r to set it aparte for a solemne day of humilliation for y^e choyce of a pastor & teacher. The former parte of y^e day being spente in praier & teaching, the later parte aboute y^e election, which was after this maner. The persons thought on (who had been ministers in England)

were demanded concerning their callings; they acknowledged ther was a towfould calling, the one an inward calling, when y^e^ Lord moved y^e^ harte of a man to take y^t^ calling upon him, and fitted him with guiftes for y^e^ same; the second was an outward calling, which was from y^e^ people, when a company of beleevers are joyned togither in covenante, to walke togither in all y^e^ ways of God, and every member (being men) are to have a free voyce in y^e^ choyce of their officers, &c. Now, we being perswaded that these 2. men were so quallified, as y^e^ apostle speaks to Timothy, wher he saith, A bishop must be blamles, sober, apte to teach, &c., I thinke I may say, as y^e^ eunuch said unto Philip, What should let from being baptised, seeing ther was water? and he beleeved. So these 2. servants of God, clearing all things by their answers, (and being thus fitted,) we saw noe reason but we might freely give our voyces for their election, after this triall. So M^r^. Skelton was chosen pastor, and M^r^. Higgison to be teacher; and they accepting y^e^ choyce, M^r^. Higgison, with 3. or 4. of y^e^ gravest members of y^e^ church, laid their hands on M^r^. Skelton, using prayer therwith. This being done, ther was imposission of hands on M^r^. Higgison also. And since that time, Thursday (being, as I take it, y^e^ 6. of August) is appoynted for another day of humilliation, for y^e^ choyce of elders & deacons, & ordaining of them.

And now, good S^r^, I hope y^t^ you & y^e^ rest of Gods people (who are aquainted with the ways of God) with you, will say that hear was a right foundation layed, and that these 2. blessed servants of y^e^ Lord came in at y^e^ dore, and not at y^e^ window. Thus I have made bould to trouble you with these few lines, desiring you to remember us, &c. And so rest,

At your service in what I may,

CHARLES GOTT.

Salem, July 30. 1629.

[174] *Anno Dom:* 1630.

Ashley, being well supplyed, had quickly gathered a good parcell of beaver, and like a crafty pate he sent it all home, and would not pay for y^e^ goods he had had of y^e^ plantation hear, but lett them stand still on y^e^ score, and tooke up still more. Now though they well enough knew his aime, yet they let him goe on, and write of it into England. But partly y^e^ beaver they received, & sould, (of which they weer sencible,) and partly by M^r^. Allertons extolling of him, they cast more how to supplie him then y^e^ plantation, and something to upbraid them with it. They were forct to buy him a barke allso, and to furnish her w^th^ a m^r^. & men, to transporte his corne & provissions (of which he put of much); for y^e^ Indeans of those parts have no corne growing, and at harvest, after corne is ready, y^e^ weather grows foule, and y^e^ seas dangerous, so as he could doe litle good with his shallope for y^t^ purposs.

They looked ernestly for a timely supply this spring, by the fishing ship which they expected, and had been at charg to keepe a stage for her; but none came, nor any supply heard of for them. At length they heard sume supply was sent to Ashley by a fishing ship, at which they something marvelled, and the more y^t^ they had no letters either from M^r^. Allerton or M^r^. Sherley; so they went on in their bussines as well as y^e^ could.

At last they heard of M^r^. Peirce his arivall in y^e^ Bay of y^e^ Massachusetts, who brought passengers & goods thither. They presently sent a shallop, conceiving they should have some thing by him. But he tould them he had none; and a ship was sett out on fishing, but after 11. weeks beating at sea, she mett with shuch foull weather as she was forcte back againe for England, and, y^e^ season being over, gave off y^e^ vioage. Neither did he hear of much goods in her for y^e^ plantation, or y^t^ she did belong to them, for he had heard some thing from M^r^. Allerton tending that way. But M^r^. Allerton had bought another ship, and was to come in her, and was to fish for bass to y^e^ eastward, and to bring goods, &c. These things did much trouble them, and half astonish them. M^r^. Winslow haveing been to y^e^ eastward, brought nuese of the like things, w^th^ some more perticulers, and y^t^ it was like M^r^. Allerton would be late before he came. At length they, having an oppertunitie, resolved to send M^r^. Winslow, with what beaver they had ready, into England, to see how y^e^ squars wente, being very jeolouse of these things, & M^r^. Allertons courses; and writ shuch leters, and gave him shuch instructions, as they thought meet; and if he found things not well, to discharge M^r^. Allerton for being any longer agent for them, or to deal any more in y^e^ bussines, and to see how y^e^ accounts stood, &c.

Aboute y^e^ midle of som̄er arrives M^r^. Hatherley in

y^e^ Bay of y^e^ Massachusetts, (being one of y^e^ partners,) and came over in y^e^ same ship that was set out on fhishing (called y^e^ Frendship). They presently sent to him, making no question but now they had goods come, and should know how all things stood. But they found [175] the former news true, how this ship had been so long at sea, and spente and spoyled her provissions, and overthrowne y^e^ viage. And he being sent over by y^e^ rest of y^e^ partners, to see how things wente hear, being at Bristoll with M^r^. Allerton, in y^e^ shipe bought (called y^e^ White-Angell), ready to set sayle, over night came a messenger from Bastable to M^r^. Allerton, and tould him of y^e^ returne of y^e^ ship, and what had befallen. And he not knowing what to doe, having a great chareg under hand, y^e^ ship lying at his rates, and now ready to set sayle, got him to goe and discharg y^e^ ship, and take order for y^e^ goods. To be short, they found M^r^. Hatherley some thing reserved, and troubled in him selfe, (M^r^. Allerton not being ther,) not knowing how to dispose of y^e^ goods till he came; but he heard he was arived with y^e^ other ship to y^e^ eastward, and expected his coming. But he tould them ther was not much for them in this ship, only 2. packs of Bastable ruggs, and 2. hoggsheads of meatheglin, drawne out in wooden flackets (but when these flackets came to be received, ther was left but 6. gallons of y^e^ 2. hogsheads, it being drunke up under y^e^ name leackage, and so lost).

But the ship was filled with goods for sundrie gentlemen, & others, that were come to plant in y^e^ Massachusets, for which they payed fraight by y^e^ tun. And this was all the satisfaction they could have at presente, so they brought this small parcell of goods & returned with this nues, and a letter as obscure; which made them much to marvell therat. The letter was as followeth.

Gentle-men, partners, and loving friends, &c.

Breefly thus: wee have this year set forth a fishing ship, and a trading ship, which later we have bought; and so have disbursed a great deale of money, as may and will appeare by y^e^ accounts. And because this ship (called y^e^ White Angell) is to acte 2. parts, (as I may say,) fishing for bass, and trading; and that while M^r^. Allerton was imployed aboute y^e^ trading, the fishing might suffer by carlesnes or neglecte of y^e^ sailors, we have entreated your and our loving friend, M^r^. Hatherley, to goe over with him, knowing he will be a comforte to M^r^. Allerton, a joye to you, to see a carfull and loving friend, and a great stay to y^e^ bussines; and so great contente to us, that if it should please God y^e^ one should faile, (as God forbid,) yet y^e^ other would keepe both recconings, and things uprighte. For we are now out great sumes of money, as they will acquainte you withall, &c. When we were out but 4. or 5. hundred pounds a peece, we looked not much after it, but left it to you, & your agente, (who, without flaterie, deserveth infinite thanks & comendations, both of you & us, for his pains, &c.); but now we are out double, nay, trible a peece, some of us, &c.; which maks us both write, and send over our friend, M^r^. Hatherley, whom we pray you to entertaine kindly, of which we doubte not of. The main end of sending him

is to see y^e^ state and accounte of all y^e^ bussines, of all which we pray you informe him fully, though y^e^ ship & bussines wayte for it and him. For we should take it very unkindly that we should intreat him to take such a journey, and that, when it pleaseth God he returnes, he could not give us contente & satisfaction in this perticuler, through defaulte of any of you. [176] But we hope you will so order bussines, as neither he nor we shall have cause to complaine, but to doe as we ever have done, thinke well of you all, &c. I will not promise, but shall indeaour & hope to effecte y^e^ full desire and grant of your patente, & that ere it be longe. I would not have you take any thing unkindly. I have not write out of jeolocie of any unjuste dealing. Be you all kindly saluted in y^e^ Lord, so I rest,

Yours in what I may,

JAMES SHERLEY.

March 25. 1630.

It needs not be thought strange, that these things should amase and trouble them; first, that this fishing ship should be set out, and fraight with other mens goods, & scarce any of theirs; seeing their maine end was (as is before remembred) to bring them a full supply, and their speatiall order not to sett out any excepte this was done. And now a ship to come on their accounte, clean contrary to their both end & order, was a misterie they could not understand; and so much y^e^ worse, seeing she had shuch ill success as to lose both her vioage & provissions. The 2. thing, that another ship should be bought and sente out on new designes, a thing not so much as once thought on by

any here, much less, not a word intimated or spoaken of by any here, either by word or letter, neither could they imagine why this should be. Bass fishing was never lookt at by them, but as soone as ever they heard on it, they looked at it as a vaine thing, that would certainly turne to loss. And for M^{r}. Allerton to follow any trade for them, it was never in their thoughts. And 3^{ly}, that their friēds should complaine of disbursements, and yet rune into such great things, and charge of shiping & new projects of their owne heads, not only without, but against, all order & advice, was to them very strang. And 4^{ly}, that all these matters of so great charg & imployments should be thus wrapped up in a breefe and obscure letter, they knew not what to make of it. But amids all their doubts they must have patience till M^{r}. Allerton & M^{r}. Hatherley should come. In y^{e} mean time M^{r}. Winslow was gone for England; and others of them were forst to folow their imployments with y^{e} best means they had, till they could hear of better.

At length M^{r}. Hatherley & M^{r}. Allerton came unto them, (after they had delivered their goods,) and finding them strucken with some sadnes aboute these things, M^{r}. Allerton tould them that y^{e} ship Whit-Angele did not belong to them, nor their accounte, neither neede they have any thing to doe with her, excepte they would. And M^{r}. Hatherley confirmed y^{e} same, and said that they would have had him to have

had a parte, but he refused; but he made question whether they would not turne her upon y^e^ generall accounte, if ther came loss (as he now saw was like), seeing M^r^. Allerton laid downe this course, and put them on this projecte. But for y^e^ fishing ship, he tould them they need not be so much troubled, for he had her accounts here, and showed them that her first seting out came not much to exceed 600^li^. as they might see by y^e^ accounte, which he showed them; and for this later viage, it would arrise to profite by y^e^ fraight of y^e^ goods, and y^e^ salle of some katle which he shiped and had allready sould, & was to be paid for partly here & partly by bills into England, so as they should not have this put on their acounte at all, except they [178]* would. And for y^e^ former, he had sould so much goods out of her in England, and imployed y^e^ money in this 2. viage, as it, togeither with such goods & implements as M^r^. Allerton must need aboute his fishing, would rise to a good parte of y^e^ money; for he must have y^e^ sallt and nets, allso spiks, nails, &c.; all which would rise to nere 400^li^.; so, with y^e^ bearing of their parts of y^e^ rest of y^e^ loses (which would not be much above 200^li^.), they would clear them of this whole accounte. Of which motion they were glad, not being willing to have any accounts lye upon them; but aboute their trade, which made them willing to harken therunto, and demand of M^r^. Hatherley how he could

* 177 is omitted in MS.

make this good, if they should agree their unto, he tould them he was sent over as their agente, and had this order from them, that whatsoever he and M^r^. Allerton did togeather, they would stand to it; but they would not alow of what M^r^. Allerton did alone, except they liked it; but if he did it alone, they would not gaine say it. Upon which they sould to him & M^r^. Allerton all y^e^ rest of y^e^ goods, and gave them present possession of them; and a writing was made, and confirmed under both M^r^. Hatherleys and M^r^. Allertons hands, to y^e^ effecte afforesaide. And M^r^. Allertone, being best aquainted w^th^ y^e^ people, sould away presenly all shuch goods as he had no need of for y^e^ fishing, as 9. shallop sails, made of good new canvas, and y^e^ roads for them being all new, with sundry such usefull goods, for ready beaver, by M^r^. Hatherleys allowance. And thus they thought they had well provided for them selvs. Yet they rebuked M^r^. Allerton very much for runing into these courses, fearing y^e^ success of them. M^r^. Allerton & M^r^. Hatherley brought to y^e^ towne with them (after he had sould what he could abroad) a great quantity of other goods besids trading comodities; as linen cloath, bedticks, stockings, tape, pins, ruggs, &c., and tould them they were to have them, if they would; but they tould M^r^. Allerton that they had forbid him before for bringing any such on their accounte; it would hinder their trade and returnes. But he & M^r^. Hatherley said, if they would not have them, they

would sell them, them selves, and take corne for what they could not otherwise sell. They tould them they might, if they had order for it. The goods of one sorte & other came to upward of 500li.

After these things, Mr. Allerton wente to ye ship aboute his bass fishing; and Mr. Hatherley, (according to his order,) after he tooke knowledg how things stood at ye plantation, (of all which they informed him fully,) he then desired a boate of them to goe and visite ye trading houeses, both Kenebeck, and Ashley at Penobscote; for so they in England had injoyned him. They accordingly furnished him with a boate & men for ye viage, and aquainted him plainly & thorowly with all things; by which he had good contente and satisfaction, and saw plainly yt Mr. Allerton plaid his owne game, and rane a course not only to ye great wrong & detrimente of ye plantation, who imployed & trusted him, but abused them in England also, in possessing them with prejudice against ye plantation; as yt they would never be able to repaye their moneys (in regard of their great charge), but if [179] they would follow his advice and projects, he & Ashley (being well supplyed) would quickly bring in their moneys with good advantage. Mr. Hatherley disclosed also a further projecte aboute ye setting out of this ship, ye White-angell; how, she being wel fitted with good ordnance, and known to have made a great fight at sea (when she belongd to Bristoll) and caried away

y^e victory, they had agreed (by M^r. Allerton's means) that, after she had brought a fraight of goods here into y^e countrie, and fraight her selfe with fish, she should goe from hence to Port of porte,* and ther be sould, both ship, goods, and ordenance; and had, for this end, had speech with a factore of those parts, beforehand, to whom she should have been consigned. But this was prevented at this time, (after it was known,) partly by y^e contrary advice given by their freinds hear to M^r. Allerton & M^r. Hatherley, showing how it might insnare their friends in England, (being men of estate,) if it should come to be knowne; and for y^e plantation, they did and would disalow it, and protest against it; and partly by their bad viage, for they both came too late to doe any good for fishing, and allso had such a wicked and drunken company as neither M^r. Allerton nor any els could rule; as M^r. Hatherley, to his great greefe & shame, saw, & beheld, and all others that came nere them.

Ashley likwise was taken in a trape, (before M^r. Hatherley returned,) for trading powder & shote with y^e Indeans; and was ceased upon by some in authoritie, who allso would have confiscated above a thousand weight of beaver; but y^e goods were freed, for y^e Gov^r here made it appere, by a bond under Ashleys hand, wherin he was bound to them in 500^li. not to trade any munition with y^e Indeans, or other wise

* Oporto, called by the Dutch *Port a port.*

to abuse him selfe; it was also manifest against him that he had comited uncleannes with Indean women, (things that they feared at his first imployment, which made them take this strict course with him in y^e^ begining); so, to be shorte, they gott their goods freed, but he was sent home prisoner. And that I may make an end concerning him, after some time of imprisonmente in y^e^ Fleet, by y^e^ means of friends he was set at liberty, and intended to come over againe, but y^e^ Lord prevented it; for he had a motion made to him, by some marchants, to goe into Russia, because he had such good skill in y^e^ beaver trade, the which he accepted of, and in his returne home was cast away at sea; this was his end.

M^r^. Hatherley, fully understanding y^e^ state of all things, had good satisfaction, and could well informe them how all things stood betweene M^r^. Allerton and y^e^ plantation. Yea, he found y^t^ M^r^. Allerton had gott within him, and [180] got all y^e^ goods into his owne hands, for which M^r^. Hatherley stood joyntly ingaged to them hear, aboute y^e^ ship-Freidship, as also most of y^e^ fraigte money, besids some of his owne perticuler estate; about w^ch^ more will appear here after. So he returned into England, and they sente a good quantity of beaver with him to y^e^ rest of y^e^ partners; so both he and it was very wellcome unto them.

M^r^. Allerton followed his affaires, & returned with his White Angell, being no more imployed by y^e^ plan-

tation; but these bussinesses were not ended till many years after, nor well understood of a longe time, but foulded up in obscuritie, & kepte in y^e^ clouds, to y^e^ great loss & vexation of y^e^ plantation, who in y^e^ end were (for peace sake) forced to bear y^e^ unjust burthen of them, to their allmost undoing, as will appear, if God give life to finish this history.

They sent their letters also by M^r^. Hatherley to y^e^ partners ther, to show them how M^r^. Hatherley & M^r^. Allerton had discharged them of y^e^ Friendships accounte, and that they boath affirmed y^t^ the White-Angell did not at all belong to them; and therfore desired that their accounte might not be charged ther-with. Also they write to M^r^. Winslow, their agente, that he in like maner should (in their names) protest against it, if any such thing should be intended, for they would never yeeld to y^e^ same. As allso to signifie to them that they renounsed M^r^. Allerton wholy, for being their agente, or to have any thing to doe in any of their bussines.

This year John Billinton y^e^ elder (one that came over with y^e^ first) was arrained, and both by grand & petie jurie found guilty of willfull murder, by plaine & notorious evidence. And was for the same accordingly executed.* This, as it was y^e^ first execution

* Hubbard, on page 101, notices the execution of Billington as taking place "about September" of this year. "The murtherer expected that, either for want of power to execute for capital offences, or for want of

amongst them, so was it a mater of great sadnes unto them. They used all due means about his triall, and tooke y^e^ advice of M^r^. Winthrop and other y^e^ ablest gentle-men in y^e^ Bay of y^e^ Massachusets, that were then new-ly come over, who concured with them y^t^ he ought to dye, and y^e^ land to be purged from blood. He and some of his had been often punished for miscariags before, being one of y^e^ profanest families amongst them. They came from London, and I know not by what freinds shufled into their company. His facte was, that he way-laid a yong-man, one John New-comin, (about a former quarell,) and shote him with a gune, wherof he dyed.*

Having by a providence a letter or to y^t^ came to my hands concerning the proceedings of their Re^d^: freinds in y^e^ Bay of y^e^ Massachusets, who were latly come over, I thought it not amise here to inserte them, (so farr as is pertenente, and may be usefull for after times,) before I conclude this year.

S^r^: Being at Salem y^e^ 25. of July, being y^e^ saboath, after y^e^ evēing exercise, M^r^. Johnson received a letter from y^e^

people to increase the plantation, he should have his life spared; but justice otherwise determined, and rewarded him, the first murtherer of his neighbour there, with the deserved punishment of death, for a warning to others." The first offence committed in the colony was by Billington, in 1621, who, for contempt of the Captain's lawful command, with opprobrious speeches, was adjudged to have his neck and heels tied together. Prince, I. 103, from Bradford's pocket-book.

* This paragraph was written on the reverse of page 180 of the original manuscript, near this place.

Gov^r, M^r. John Winthrop, manifesting y^e hand of God to be upon them, and against them at Charles-towne, in visiting them with sicknes, and taking diverse from amongst them, not sparing y^e righteous, but partaking with y^e wicked in these bodily judgments. It was therfore by his desire taken into y^e Godly consideration of y^e best hear, what was to be done to pacifie y^e Lords wrath, &c. Wher it was concluded, that the Lord was to be sought in righteousnes; and to that end, y^e 6. day (being Friday) of this present weeke, is set aparte, that they may humble them selves before God, and seeke him in his ordenances; and that then also such godly persons that are amongst them, and know̄ each to other, may publickly, at y^e end of their exercise, make known their Godly desire, and practise y^e same, viz. solem̄ly to enter into [181] covenante with y^e Lord to walke in his ways. And since they are so disposed of in their outward estats, as to live in three distinct places, each having men of abilitie amongst them, ther to observe y^e day, and become 3. distincte bodys; not then intending rashly to proceed to y^e choyce of officers, or y^e admitting of any other to their societie then a few, to witte, such as are well knowne unto them; promising after to receive in such by confession of faith, as shall appeare to be fitly qualified for y estate. They doe ernestly entreate that y^e church of Plimoth would set apparte y^e same day, for y^e same ends, beseeching y^e Lord, as to withdraw his hand of correction from them, so also to establish and direct them in his wayes. And though y^e time be shorte, we pray you be provocked to this godly worke, seing y^e causes are so urgente; wherin God will be honoured, and they & we undoubtedly have sweete comforte. Be you all kindly saluted, &c.

Your brethren in Christ, &c.

Salem, July 26. 1630.

S^{r}: &c. The sadd news here is, that many are sicke, and many are dead; y^{e} Lord in mercie looke upon them. Some are here entered into church covenante; the first were 4. namly, y^{e} Gov^{r}, M^{r}. John Winthrop, M^{r}. Johnson, M^{r}. Dudley, and M^{r}. Willson; since that 5. more are joyned unto them, and others, it is like, will adde them selves to them dayly; the Lord increase them, both in number and in holines for his mercie sake. Here is a gentleman, one M^{r}. Cottington, (a Boston man,) who tould me, that M^{r}. Cottons charge at Hamton was, that they should take advise of them at Plimoth, and should doe nothing to offend them. Here are diverce honest Christians that are desirous to see us, some out of love which they bear to us, and y^{e} good perswasion they have of us; others to see whether we be so ill as they have heard of us. We have a name of holines, and love to God and his saincts; the Lord make us more and more answerable, and that it may be more then a name, or els it will doe us no good. Be you lovingly saluted, and all the rest of our friends. The Lord Jesus blese us, and y^{e} whole Israll of God. Amen.

Your loving brother, &c.

Charles-towne, Aug. 2. 1630.

Thus out of smalle beginings greater things have been produsd by his hand y^{t} made all things of nothing, and gives being to all things that are; and as one small candle may light a thousand, so y^{e} light here kindled hath shone to many, yea in some sorte to our whole nation; let y^{e} glorious name of Jehova have all y^{e} praise.

[182] *Anno Dom:* 1631.

Ashley being thus by y^e^ hand of God taken away, and M^r^. Allerton discharged of his imployemente for them, their bussines began againe to rune in one chanell, and them selves better able to guide the same, Penobscote being wholy now at their disposing. And though M^r^. William Peirce had a parte ther as is before noted, yet now, as things stood, he was glad to have his money repayed him, and stand out. M^r^. Winslow, whom they had sent over, sent them over some supply as soone as he could; and afterwards when he came, which was something longe by reason of bussines, he brought a large supply of suitable goods with him, by which ther trading was well carried on. But by no means either he, or y^e^ letters y^ey^ write, could take off M^r^. Sherley & y^e^ rest from putting both y^e^ Friendship and Whit-Angell on y^e^ generall accounte; which caused continuall contention betweene them, as will more appeare.

I shall inserte a leter of M^r^. Winslow's about these things, being as foloweth.

S^r^: It fell out by Gods providence, y^t^ I received and brought your leters p^r^ M^r^. Allerton from Bristoll, to London; and doe much feare what will be y^e^ event of things. M^r^. Allerton intended to prepare y^e^ ship againe, to set forth upon fishing. M^r^. Sherley, M^r^. Beachamp, & M^r^. Andrews, they renounce all perticulers, protesting but for us they

would never have adventured one penie into those parts; Mr. Hatherley stands inclinable to either. And wheras you write that he and Mr. Allerton have taken ye Whit-Angell upon them, for their partners here, they professe they neiver gave any such order, nor will make it good; if them selves will cleare ye accounte & doe it, all shall be well. What ye evente of these things will be, I know not. The Lord so directe and assiste us, as he may not be dishonoured by our divissions. I hear (pr a freind) that I was much blamed for speaking wt * I heard in ye spring of ye year, concerning ye buying & setting forth of yt ship; † sure, if I should not have tould you what I heard so peremtorly reported (which report I offered now to prove at Bristoll), I should have been unworthy my imployemente. And concerning ye cõmission so long since given to Mr. Allerton, the truth is, the thing we feared is come upon us; for Mr. Sherley & ye rest have it, and will not deliver it, that being ye ground of our agents credite to procure shuch great sumes. But I looke for bitter words, hard thoughts, and sower looks, from sundrie, as well for writing this, as reporting ye former. I would I had a more thankfull imployemente; but I hope a good conscience shall make it comefortable, &c.

Thus farr he. Dated Nov: 16. 1631.

The comission above said was given by them under their hand and seale, when Mr. Allerton was first imployed by them, and redemanded of him in ye year 29. when they begane to suspecte his course. He tould them it was amongst his papers, but he would seeke it out & give it them before he wente. But he

* *Wth* in manuscript.

† This was about ye selling ye ship in Spaine.

being ready to goe, it was demanded againe. He said he could not find it, but it was amongst his papers, which he must take w^th^ him, [183] and he would send it by y^e^ boat from y^e^ eastward; but ther it could not be had neither, but he would seeke it up at sea. But whether M^r^. Sherley had it before or after, it is not certaine; but having it, he would not let it goe, but keeps it to this day. Wherfore, even amongst freinds, men had need be carfull whom they trust, and not lett things of this nature lye long unrecaled.

Some parts of M^r^. Sherley's letters aboute these things, in which y^e^ truth is best manifested.

S^r^: Yours I have received by our loving friends, M^r^. Allerton & M^r^. Hatherley, who, blesed be God, after a long & dangerous passage with y^e^ ship Angell, are safely come to Bristoll. M^r^. Hatherley is come up, but M^r^. Allerton I have not yet seen. We thanke you, and are very glad you have disswaded him from his Spanish viage, and y^t^ he did not goe on in these designes he intended; for we did all uterly dislick of that course, as allso of y^e^ fishing y^t^ y^e^ Freindship should have performed; for we wished him to sell y^e^ salte, and were unwilling to have him undertake so much bussines, partly for y^e^ ill success we formerly had in those affairs, and partly being loath to disburse so much money. But he perswaded us this must be one way y^t^ must repay us, for y^e^ plantation would be long in doing of it; ney, to my rememberance, he doubted you could not be able, with y^e^ trade ther, to maintaine your charge & pay us. And for this very cause he brought us on y^t^ bussines with Ed: Ashley, for he was a stranger to us, &c.

For y^e^ fishing ship, we are sorie it proves so heavie, and will be willing to bear our parts. What M^r^. Hatherley & M^r^. Allerton have done, no doubt but them selves will make good;* we gave them no order to make any composition, to seperate you and us in this or any other. And I thinke you have no cause to forsake us, for we put you upon no new thing, but what your agent perswaded us to, & you by your letters desired. If he exceede your order, I hope you will not blame us, much less cast us of, when our moneys be layed out, &c. But I fear neither you nor we have been well delte withall, for sure, as you write, halfe 4000^li^., nay, a quarter, in fitting comodities, and in seasonable time, would have furnished you beter then you were. And yet for all this, and much more I might write, I dare not but thinke him honest, and that his desire and intente was good; but y^e^ wisest may faile. Well, now y^t^ it hath pleased God to give us hope of meeting, doubte not but we will all indeavore to perfecte these accounts just & right, as soone as possibly we can. And I supposs you sente over M^r^. Winslow, and we M^r^. Hatherley, to certifie each other how y^e^ state of things stood. We have received some contente upon M^r^. Hatherley's returne, and I hope you will receive good contente

* They were too short in resting on M^r^. Hatherleys honest word, for his order to discharg them from y^e^ Friendship's accounte, when he and M^r^. Allerton made y^e^ bargane with them, and they delivered them the rest of y^e^ goods; and therby gave them oppertunitie also to receive all the fraight of boath viages, without seeing an order (to have such power) under their hands in writing, which they never doubted of, seeing he affirmed he had power; and they both knew his honestie, and y^t^ he was spetially imployed for their agente at this time. And he was as shorte in resting on a verball order from them; which was now denyed, when it came to a perticuler of loss; but he still affirmed the same. But they were both now taught how to deale in y^e^ world, espetially with marchants, in such cases. But in y^e^ end this light upon these here also, for M^r^. Allerton had gott all into his owne hand, and M^r^. Hatherley was not able to pay it, except they would have uterlie undon him, as y^e^ sequell will manifest.

upon M^r^. Winslow's returne. Now I should come to answer more perticulerly your letter, but herin I shall be very breefe. The coming of y^e^ White Angele on your accounte could not be more strang to you, then y^e^ buying of her was to us; for you gave him comission* that what he did you would stand too; we gave him none, and yet for his credite, and your saks, payed what bills he charged on us, &c. For y^t^ I write she was to acte tow parts, fishing & trade; beleeve me, I never so much as thought of any perticuler trade, nor will side with any y^t^ doth, if I conceive it may wrong you; for I ever was against it, useing these words: They will eate up and destroy y^e^ generall.

Other things I omite as tedious, and not very pertenente. This was dated Nov^r^. 19. 1631.

In an other leter bearing date y^e^ 24. of this month, being an answer to y^e^ generall order, he hath these words: —

[184] For y^e^ White Angell, against which you write so ernestly, and say we thrust her upon you, contrary to y^e^ intente of y^e^ buyer, herin we say you forgett your selves, and doe us wrong. We will not take uppon us to devine what y^e^ thougts or intents of y^e^ buyer was, but what he spack we heard, and that we will affirme, and make good against any y^t^ oppose it; which is, y^t^ unles shee were bought, and shuch a course taken, Ashley could not be supplyed; and againe, if he weer not supplyed, we could not be satisfied what we were out for you. And further, you were not able to doe it; and he gave some reasons

* This comission is abused; he never had any for shuch end, as they well knew, nether had they any to pay this money, nor would have paid a peny, if they had not pleased for some other respecte.

which we spare to relate, unless by your unreasonable refusall you will force us, and so hasten y^t^ fire which is a kindling too fast allready, &c.

Out of another of his, bearing date Jan. 2. 1631.

We purpose to keep y^e^ Freīdship and y^e^ Whit Angell, for y^e^ last year viages, on the generall accounte, hoping togeither they will rather produse profite then loss, and breed less confution in our accounts, and less disturbance in our affections. As for y^e^ White Angell, though we layed out y^e^ money, and tooke bills of salle in our owne names, yet none of us had so much as a thought (I dare say) of deviding from you in any thing this year, because we would not have y^e^ world (I may say Bristoll) take notice of any breach betwixte M^r^. Allerton and you, and he and us; and so disgrace him in his proceedings on * in his intended viage. We have now let him y^e^ ship at 30^li^. p^r^ month, by charter-partie, and bound him in a bond of a 1000^li^. to performe covenants, and bring her to London (if God please). And what he brings in her for you, shall be marked w^th^ your marke, and bils of laden taken, & sent in M^r^. Winslows letter, who is this day riding to Bristoll about it. So in this viage, we deale & are with him as strangers. He hath brought in 3. books of accounts, one for y^e^ company, an other for Ashley's bussines, and y^e^ third for y^e^ Whit-Angell and Freīdship. The books, or coppies, we purpose to send you, for you may discover y^e^ errours in them better then we. We can make it appear how much money he hath had of us, and you can charg him with all y^e^ beaver he hath had of you. The totall sume, as he hath put it, is 7103. 17. 1. Of this he hath expended, and given to M^r^. Vines & others, aboute 543^li^. ode money, and then by your books you will

* *o* in MS.

find whether you had such, & so much goods, as he chargeth you with all; and this is all that I can say at presente concerning these accounts. He thought to dispatch them in a few howers, but he and Straton & Fogge were above a month aboute them; but he could not stay till we had examined them, for losing his fishing viage, which I fear he hath allready done, &c.

We blese God, who put both you & us in mind to send each to other, for verily had he rune on in that desperate & chargable course one year more, we had not been able to suport him; nay, both he and we must have lyen in y^e^ ditch, and sunck under y^e^ burthen, &c. Had ther been an orderly course taken, and your bussines better managed, assuredly (by y^e^ blessing of God) you had been y^e^ ablest plantation that, as we think, or know, hath been undertaken by Englishmen, &c.

Thus farr of these letters of M^r^. Sherley's.*

[185] A few observations from y^e^ former letters, and then I shall set downe the simple truth of y^e^ things (thus in controversie betweene them), at least as farr as by any good evidence it could be made to appeare; and so laboure to be breefe in so tedious and intricate a bussines, which hunge in expostulation betweene them many years before y^e^ same was ended. That though ther will be often occasion to touch these things about other passages, yet I shall not neede to be large therin; doing it hear once for all.

First, it seemes to appere clearly that Ashley's bussines, and y^e^ buying of this ship, and y^e^ courses

* The last two words not found in the MS. but obviously intended.

framed ther upon, were first contrived and proposed by M^r^. Allerton, as also y^t^ the pleaes and pretences which he made, of y^e^ inablitie of y^e^ plantation to repaye their moneys, &c., and y^e^ hops he gave them of doing it with profite, was more beleeved & rested on by them (at least some of them) then any thing y^e^ plantation did or said.

2. It is like, though M^r^. Allerton might thinke not to wrong y^e^ plantation in y^e^ maine, yet his owne gaine and private ends led him a side in these things; for it came to be knowne, and I have it in a letter under M^r^. Sherley's hand, that in y^e^ first 2. or 3. years of his imployemente, he had cleared up 400^li^. and put it into a brew-house of M^r^. Colliers in London, at first under M^r^. Sherley's name, &c.; besids what he might have other wise. Againe, M^r^. Sherley and he had perticuler dealings in some things; for he bought up y^e^ beaver that sea-men & other passengers brought over to Bristoll, and at other places, and charged y^e^ bills to London, which M^r^. Sherley payed; and they got some time 50^li^. a peece in a bargen, as was made knowne by M^r^. Hatherley & others, besids what might be other wise; which might make M^r^. Sherley harken unto him in many things; and yet I beleeve, as he in his forementioned leter write, he never would side in any perticuler trade w^ch^ he conceived would wrong y^e^ plantation, and eate up & destroy y^e^ generall.

3ly. It may be perceived that, seeing they had done so much for ye plantation, both in former adventures and late disbursements, and allso that Mr. Allerton was ye first occasioner of bringing them upon these new designes, which at first seemed faire & profitable unto them, and unto which they agreed; but now, seeing them to turne to loss, and decline to greater intanglments, they thought it more meete for ye plantation to bear them, then them selves, who had borne much in other things allready, and so tooke advantage of such comission & power as Mr. Allerton had formerly had as their agente, to devolve these things upon them.

4ly. With pitie and compassion (touching Mr. Allerton) I may say with ye apostle to Timothy, 1. Tim. 6. 9. *They that will be rich fall into many temtations and snares, &c., and pearce them selves throw with many sorrows, &c.; for the love of money is ye roote of all evill*, v. 10. God give him to see ye evill in his failings, that he may find mercie by repentance for ye wrongs he hath done to any, and this pore plantation in spetiall. They that doe such things doe not only bring them selves into snares, and sorrows, but many with them, (though in an other kind,) as lamentable experience shows; and is too manifest in this bussines.

[186] Now about these ships & their setting forth, the truth, as farr as could be learned, is this. The motion aboute setting forth ye fishing ship (caled ye

Frindship) came first from y^e^ plantation, and y^e^ reasons of it, as is before remembered; but wholy left to them selves to doe or not to doe, as they saw cause. But when it fell into consideration, and y^e^ designe was held to be profitable and hopefull, it was propounded by some of them, why might not they doe it of them selves, seeing they must disburse all y^e^ money, and what need they have any refferance to y^e^ plantation in y^t^; they might take y^e^ profite them selves, towards other losses, & need not let y^e^ plantation share therin; and if their ends were other wise answered for their supplyes to come too them in time, it would be well enough. So they hired her, & set her out, and fraighted her as full as she could carry with passengers goods y^t^ belonged to y^e^ Massachussets, which rise to a good sume of money; intending to send y^e^ plantations supply in y^e^ other ship. The effecte of this M^r^. Hatherley not only declared afterward upon occasion, but affirmed upon othe, taken before y^e^ Gov^r^ & Dep: Gov^r^ of y^e^ Massachusets, M^r^. Winthrop & M^r^. Dudley: That this ship-Frindship was not sett out nor intended for y^e^ joynt partnership of y^e^ plantation, but for y^e^ perticuler accounte of M^r^. James Sherley, M^r^. Beachampe, M^r^. Andrews, M^r^. Allerton, & him selfe. This deposition was taken at Boston y^e^ 29. of Aug: 1639. as is to be seen under their hands; besids some other concurente testimonies declared at severall times to sundrie of them.

About y^e^ Whit-Angell, though she was first bought, or at least the price beaten, by M^r^. Allerton (at Bristoll), yet that had been nothing if M^r^. Sherley had not liked it, and disbursed y^e^ money. And that she was not intended for y^e^ plantation appears by sundrie evidences;* as, first, y^e^ bills of sale, or charter-parties, were taken in their owne names, without any mention or refferance to y^e^ plantation at all; viz. M^r^. Sherley, M^r^. Beachampe, M^r^. Andrews, M^r^. Denison, and M^r^. Allerton; for M^r^. Hatherley fell off, and would not joyne with them in this. That she was not bought for their accounte, M^r^. Hatherley tooke his oath before y^e^ parties afforesaid, y^e^ day and year above writen.

M^r^. Allerton tooke his oath to like effecte concerning this ship, the Whit-Angell, before y^e^ Gov^r^ & Deputie, the 7. of Sep: 1639. and likewise deposed, y^e^ same time, that M^r^. Hatherley and him selfe did, in the behalfe of them selves and y^e^ said M^r^. Sherley, M^r^. Andrews, & M^r^. Beachamp, agree and undertake to discharge, and save harmless, all y^e^ rest of y^e^ partners & purchasers, of and from y^e^ said losses of Freindship for 200^li^., which was to be discounted therupon; as by ther depossitions (which are in writing) may appeare more at large, and some other depositions & other

* About y^e^ Whit-Angell they all mette at a certaine taverne in London, wher they had a diner prepared, and had a conference with a factore aboute selling of her in Spaine, or at Port a porte, as hath been before mentioned; as M^r^. Hatherley manifested, & M^r^. Allerton could not deney.

testemonies by Mr. Winslow,* &c. But I suppose these may be sufficente to evince the truth in these things, against all pretences to ye contrary. And yet the burthen lay still upon ye plantation; or, to speake more truly and rightly, upon those few that were ingaged for all, for they were faine to wade through these things without any help from any.

[187] Concerning Mr. Allerton's accounts, they were so larg and intrecate, as they could not well understand them, much less examine & correcte them, without a great deale of time & help, and his owne presence, which was now hard to gett amongst them; and it was 2. or 3. years before they could bring them to any good pass, but never make them perfecte. I know not how it came to pass, or what misterie was in it, for he tooke upon him to make up all accounts till this time, though Mr. Sherley was their agente to buy & sell their goods, and did more then he therin; yet he past in accounts in a maner for all disbursments, both concerning goods bought, which he never saw,

* Mr. Winslow deposed, ye same time, before ye Govr afore said, &c. that when he came into England, and ye partners inquired of ye success of ye Whit Angell, which should have been laden wth bass and so sent for Port, of Porting-gall, and their ship & goods to be sould; having informed them that they were like to faile in their lading of bass, that then Mr. James Sherley used these termes: Feck, we must make one accounte of all; and ther upon presed him, as agente for ye partners in Neu-England, to accepte ye said ship Whit-Angell, and her accounte, into ye joynte partner-ship; which he refused, for many reasons; and after received instructions from New-Engl: to refuse her if she should be offered, which instructions he shewed them; and wheras he was often pressed to accept her, he ever refused her, &c.

but were done when he was hear in y^e^ cuntrie or at sea; and all y^e^ expences of y^e^ Leyden people, done by others in his absence; the charges aboute y^e^ patente, &c. In all which he made them debtore to him above 300^li^. and demanded paimente of it. But when things came to scaning, he was found above 2000^li^. debtore to them, (this wherin M^r^. Hatherley & he being joyntly ingaged, which he only had, being included,) besids I know not how much y^t^ could never be cleared; and interest moneys which ate them up, which he never accounted. Also they were faine to alow such large bills of charges as were intolerable; the charges of y^e^ patent came to above 500^li^. and yet nothing done in it but what was done at first without any confirmation; 30^li^. given at a clape, and 50^li^. spent in a journey. No marvell therfore if M^r^. Sherley said in his leter, if their bussines had been better managed, they might have been y^e^ richest plantation of any English at y^t^ time. Yea, he scrued up his poore old father in law's accounte to above 200^li^. and brought it on y^e^ generall accounte, and to befreind him made most of it to arise out of those goods taken up by him at Bristoll, at 50. per cent., because he knew they would never let it lye on y^e^ old man, when, alass! he, poore man, never dreamte of any such thing, nor y^t^ what he had could arise nere y^t^ valew; but thought that many of them had been freely bestowed on him & his children by M^r^. Allerton. Nither in truth did they come nere y^t^

valew in worth, but y^t^ sume was blowne up by interest & high prises, which y^e^ company did for y^e^ most parte bear, (he deserving farr more,) being most sory that he should have a name to have much, when he had in effecte litle.

This year also M^r^. Sherley sent over an accounte, which was in a maner but a cash accounte what M^r^. Allerton had had of them, and disbursed, for which he referd to his accounts; besids an account of beaver sould, which M^r^. Winslow & some others had carried over, and a large supply of goods which M^r^. Winslow had sent & brought over, all which was comprised in y^t^ accounte, and all y^e^ disbursments aboute y^e^ Freindship, & Whit-Angell, and what concerned their accounts from first to last; or any thing else he could charg y^e^ partners with. So they were made debtor in y^e^ foote of that accounte 4770^li^. 19. 2.* besids 1000^li^. still due for y^e^ purchase yet unpayed; notwithstanding all y^e^ beaver, and returnes that both Ashley & they had made, which were not small.

[188] In these accounts of M^r^. Sherley's some things were obscure, and some things twise charged, as a 100.

* So as a while before, wheras their great care was how to pay the purchase, and those other few debts which were upon them, now it was with them as it was some times with Saule's father, who left careing for y^e^ Asses, and sorrowed for his sonn. 1. Sam. 10. 2. So that which before they looked at as a heavie burthen, they now esteeme but a small thing and a light mater, in comparison of what was now upon them. And thus y^e^ Lord oftentimes deals with his people to teach them, and humble them, that he may doe them good in y^e^ later end.

of Bastable ruggs which came in y^e^ Freindship, & cost 75^li^., charged before by M^r^. Allerton, and now by him againe, with other perticulers of like nature doubtfull, to be twise or thrise charged; as also a sume of 600^li^. which M^r^. Allerton deneyed, and they could never understand for what it was. They sent a note of these & such like things afterward to M^r^. Sherley by M^r^. Winslow; but (I know not how it came to pass) could never have them explained.

Into these deepe sumes had M^r^. Allerton rune them in tow years, for in y^e^ later end of y^e^ year 1628. all their debts did not amounte to much above 400^li^., as was then noted; and now come to so many thousands. And wheras in y^e^ year 1629. M^r^. Sherley & M^r^. Hatherley being at Bristoll, and write a large letter from thence, in which they had given an account of y^e^ debts, and what sumes were then disbursed, M^r^. Allerton never left begging & intreating of them till they had put it out. So they bloted out 2. lines in y^t^ leter in which y^e^ sumes were contained, and write upon it so as not a word could be perceived; as since by them was confessed, and by y^e^ leters may be seene. And thus were they kept hoodwinckte, till now they were so deeply ingaged. And wheras M^r^. Sherley did so ernestly press y^t^ M^r^. Allerton might be sent over to finish y^e^ great bussines aboute y^e^ patente, as may be seen in his leter write 1629. as is before recorded, and y^t^ they should be ernest w^th^ his wife to suffer him

to goe, &c., he hath since confessed by a letter under my hands, that it was Mr. Allerton's owne doings, and not his, and he made him write his words, & not his owne. The patent was but a pretence, and not ye thing. Thus were they abused in their simplicitie, and no beter then bought & sould, as it may seeme.

And to mend ye matter, Mr. Allerton doth in a sorte wholy now deserte them; having brought them into ye briers, he leaves them to gett out as they can. But God crost him mightily, for he having hired ye ship of Mr. Sherly at 30li. a month, he set forth againe with a most wicked and drunken crue, and for covetousnes sake did so over lade her, not only filling her hould, but so stufed her betweene decks, as she was walte, and could not bear sayle, and they had like to have been cast away at sea, and were forced to put for Millford Havene, and new-stow her, & put some of ther ordnance & more heavie goods in ye botome; which lost them time, and made them come late into ye countrie, lose ther season, and made a worse viage then ye year before. But being come into ye countrie, he sells trading comodities to any yt will buy, to ye great prejudice of ye plantation here; but that which is worse, what he could not sell, he trustes; and sets up a company of base felows and maks them traders, to rune into every hole, & into ye river of Kenebeck, to gleane away ye trade from ye house ther, aboute ye patente & priviledge wherof he had dasht away so

much money of theirs here; [189] and now what in him lay went aboute to take away y^e^ benefite therof, and to overthrow them. Yea, not only this, but he furnishes a company, and joyns with some consorts, (being now deprived of Ashley at Penobscote,) and sets up a trading house beyoned Penobscote, to cute of y^e^ trade from thence also. But y^e^ French perceiving that that would be greatly to their damage allso, they came in their begining before they were well setled, and displanted them, slue 2. of their men, and tooke all their goods to a good valew, y^e^ loss being most, if not all, M^r^. Allerton's; for though some of them should have been his partners, yet he trusted them for their partes; the rest of y^e^ men were sent into France, and this was the end of y^t^ projecte. The rest of those he trusted, being lose and drunken fellows, did for y^e^ most parte but coussen & cheate him of all they got into their hands; that howsoever he did his friends some hurte hereby for y^e^ presente, yet he gate litle good, but wente by y^e^ loss by Gods just hand. After in time, when he came to Plim̃oth, y^e^ church caled him to accounte for these, and other his grosse miscarrages; he confessed his faulte, and promised better walking, and that he would wind him selfe out of these courses as soone as he could, &c.

This year also M^r^. Sherley would needs send them over a new-acountante; he had made mention of such a thing y^e^ year before, but they write him word, that

their charge was great allready, and they neede not increase it, as this would; but if they were well delte with, and had their goods well sent over, they could keep their accounts hear them selves. Yet he now sente one, which they did not refuse, being a yonger brother of M^r^. Winslows, whom they had been at charge to instructe at London before he came. He came over in the White Angell with M^r^. Allerton, and ther begane his first imployemente; for though M^r^. Sherley had so farr befreinded M^r^. Allerton, as to cause * M^r^. Winslow to ship y^e^ supply sente to y^e^ partners here in this ship, and give him 4^li^. p^r^ tune, wheras others carried for 3. and he made them pay their fraight ready downe, before y^e^ ship wente out of y^e^ harbore, wheras others payed upon certificate of y^e^ goods being delivered, and their fraight came to upward of 6. score pounds, yet they had much adoe to have their goods delivered, for some of them were chainged, as bread & pease; they were forced to take worse for better, neither could they ever gett all. And if Josias Winslow had not been ther, it had been worse; for he had y^e^ invoyce, and order to send them to y^e^ trading houses.

This year their house at Penobscott was robed by y^e^ French, and all their goods of any worth they carried away, to y^e^ value of 400. or 500^li^. as y^e^ cost first peny worth; in beaver 300^li^. waight; and y^e^ rest in trading

* This word is obscure in MS.

goods, as coats, ruggs, blankett, biskett, &c. It was in this maner. The m^r^. of y^e^ house, and parte of y^e^ company with him, were come with their vessell to y^e^ westward to fecth a supply of goods which was brought over for them. In y^e^ mean time comes a smale French ship into y^e^ harbore (and amongst y^e^ company was a false Scott); they pretended they were nuly come from y^e^ sea, and knew not wher they were, and that their vesell was very leake, and desired they might hale her a shore and stop their leaks. And many French complements they used, and congees they made; and in y^e^ ende, seeing but 3. or 4. simple men, y^t^ were servants, and by this Scoth-man understanding that y^e^ maister & ye rest of y^e^ company were gone from home, they fell of comending their gunes and muskets, that lay upon racks by y^e^ wall side, and tooke them downe to looke on them, asking if they were charged. And when they were possesst of them, one presents a peece ready charged against y^e^ servants, and another a pistoll; and bid them not sturr, but quietly deliver them their goods, and carries some of y^e^ men aborde, & made y^e^ other help to carry away y^e^ goods. And when they had tooke what they pleased, they sett them at liberty, and wente their way, with this mocke, biding them tell their m^r^. when he came, that some of y^e^ Ile of Rey gentlemen had been ther.*

* The above paragraph was written on the reverse of page 188 of the original manuscript.

* This year, on S^r^ Christopher Gardener, being, as him selfe said, descended of y^t^ house y^t^ the Bishop of Winchester came of (who was so great a persecutor of Gods saincts in Queene Maries days), and being a great traveler, received his first honour of knighthood at Jerusalem, being made Knight of y^e^ Sepulcher ther. He came into these parts under pretence of forsaking y^e^ world, and to live a private life, in a godly course, not unwilling to put him selfe upon any meane imployments, and take any paines for his living; and some time offered him selfe to joyne to y^e^ churchs in sundry places. He brought over with him a servante or 2. and a comly yonge woman, whom be caled his cousin, but it was suspected, she (after y^e^ Italian maner) was his concubine. Living at y^e^ Massachusets, for some miscariages which he should have answered, he fled away from authority, and gott amonge y^e^ Indeans of these parts; they sent after him, but could not gett him, and promissed some reward to those y^t^ should find him. The Indeans came to y^e^ Gov^r^ here, and tould wher he was, and asked if they might kill him; he tould them no, by no means, but if they could take him and bring him hither, they should be payed for their paines. They said he had a gune & a rapier, & he would kill them if y^ey^ went aboute it; and y^e^

* The following account of Sir Christopher Gardiner, with the documents accompanying it, extending to page 357, does not appear in the text of the original manuscript, — having been perhaps inadvertently omitted, — but was written on the reverse of pages 189-191.

Massachuset Indeans said they might kille him. But y^e^ Gov^r^ tould them no, they should not kill him, but watch their opportunitie, & take him. And so they did, for when they light of him by a river side, he got into a canowe to get from them, & when they came nere him, whilst he presented his peece at them to keep them of, the streame carried y^e^ canow against a rock, and tumbled both him & his peece & rapier into y^e^ water; yet he got out, and having a litle dagger by his side, they durst not close with him, but getting longe pols they soone beat his dagger out of his hand, so he was glad to yeeld; and they brought him to y^e^ Gov^r^. But his hands and armes were swolen & very sore with y^e^ blowes they had given him. So he used him kindly, & sent him to a lodging wher his armes were bathed and anoynted, and he was quickly well againe, and blamed y^e^ Indeans for beating him so much. They said that they did but a litle whip him with sticks. In his lodging, those y^t^ made his bed found a litle note booke that by accidente had slipt out of his pockett, or some private place, in which was a memoriall what day he was reconciled to y^e^ pope & church of Rome, and in what universitie he tooke his scapula, and such & such degrees. It being brought to y^e^ Gov^r^, he kept it, and sent y^e^ Gov^r^ of y^e^ Massachusets word of his taking, who sent for him. So y^e^ Gov^r^ sent him and these notes to y^e^ Gov^r^ ther, who tooke it very thankfuly; but after he

gott for England, he shewed his malice, but God prevented him.

See y^e^ Gov^r^ leter on y^e^ other side.*

S^r^: It hath pleased God to bring S^r^. Christopher Gardener safe to us, with thos that came with him. And howsoever I never intended any hard measure to him, but to respecte and use him according to his qualitie, yet I let him know your care of him, and y^t^ he shall speed y^e^ better for your mediation. It was a spetiall providence of God to bring those notes of his to our hands; I desire y^t^ you will please to speake to all y^t^ are privie to them, not to discovere them to any one, for y^t^ may frustrate y^e^ means of any further use to be made of them. The good Lord our God who hath allways ordered things for y^e^ good of his poore churches here, directe us in this arighte, and dispose it to a good issue. I am sorie we put you to so much trouble about this gentleman, espetialy at this time of great imployemente, but I know not how to avoyed it. I must againe intreate you, to let me know what charge & troble any of your people have been at aboute him, y^t^ it may be recompenced. So with the true affection of a frind, desiring all happines to your selfe & yours, and to all my worthy friends with you (whom I love in y^e^ Lord), I comende you to his grace & good providence, & rest

Your most assured friend,

JOHN WINTHROP.

Boston, May 5. 1631.

By occation wherof I will take a litle libertie to declare what fell out by this mans means & malice,

* That is, in the original manuscript.

complying with others. And though I doubt not but it will be more fully done by my honourd friends, whom it did more directly concerne, and have more perticuler knowledg of y^e^ matter, yet I will here give a hinte of y^e^ same, and Gods providence in preventing y^e^ hurte that might have come by y^e^ same. The intelligence I had by a letter from my much hon^d^ and beloved freind, M^r^. John Winthrop, Gov^r^ of y^e^ Massachusets.

S^r^: Upon a petition exhibited by S^r^. Christo: Gardner, S^r^. Ferd: Gorges, Captaine Masson, &c., against you and us, the cause was heard before y^e^ lords of y^e^ Privie Counsell, and after reported to y^e^ king, the sucsess wherof maks it evident to all, that y^e^ Lord hath care of his people hear. The passages are admirable, and too long to write. I hartily wish an opportunitie to imparte them unto you, being māy sheets of paper. But y^e^ conclusion was (against all mens expectation) an order for our incouragmente, and much blame and disgrace upon y^e^ adversaries, w^ch^ calls for much thankfullnes from us all, which we purpose (y^e^ Lord willing) to express in a day of thanks-giving to our mercifull God, (I doubt not but you will consider, if it be not fitt for you to joyne in it,) who, as he hath humbled us by his late correction, so he hath lifted us up, by an abundante rejoysing, in our deliverance out of so desperate a danger; so as that w^ch^ our enemies builte their hopes upon to ruine us by, He hath mercifully disposed to our great advantage, as I shall further aquainte you, when occasion shall serve.

The coppy of y^e^ order follows.

At y^e^ courte at Whit-hall y^e^ 19. Jan: 1632.

Present

Sigillum	Lord Privie Seale	Lord Cottinton
	Ea: of Dorsett	M^r^. Tre^r^
	Lo: Vi: Falkland	M^r^. Vic Chamb^r^
	Lo: Bp: of London	M^r^. Sec: Cooke

Maister Sec: Windebanck

Wheras his Ma^tie^ hath latly been informed of great distraction and much disorder in y^t^ plantation in y^e^ parts of America called New-England, which, if they be true, & suffered to rune on, would tende to y^e^ great dishonour of this kingdome, and utter ruine of that plantation. For prevention wherof, and for y^e^ orderly settling of goverment, according to y^e^ intention of those patents which have been granted by his Ma^tie^ and from his late royall father king James, it hath pleased his Ma^tie^ that y^e^ lords & others of his most honourable Privie Counsell, should take y^e^ same into consideration. Their lordships in y^e^ first place thought fitt to make a comitie of this bord, to take examination of y^e^ matters informed; which comitties having called diverse of y^e^ principall adventurers in y^t^ plantation, and heard those that are complanants against them, most of the things informed being deneyed, and resting to be proved by parties that must be called from y^t^ place, which required a long expence of time; and at presente their lordships finding the adventurers were upon dispatch of men, victles, and marchandice for y^t^ place, all which would be at a stand, if y^e^ adventurers should have discouragmente, or take suspition that the state hear had no good opinion of y^t^ plantation; their lordships, not laying the faulte or fancies (if any be) of some perticuler men upon the generall govermente, or principall adventurers, (which in due time is further to be

inquired into,) have thought fitt in y^e^ meane time to declare, that the appearences were so faire, and hopes so greate, y^t^ the countrie would prove both beneficiall to this kingdom, and profitable to the perticuler adventurers, as y^t^ the adventurers had cause to goe on cherfully with their undertakings, and rest assured, if things were carried as was pretended when y^e^ patents were granted, and accordingly as by the patentes it is appointed, his Majestie would not only maintaine the liberties & privileges heretofore granted, but supply any thing further that might tend to the good governmente, prosperitie, and comforte of his people ther of that place, &c.

WILLIAM TRUMBALL.

Anno Dom: 1632.

M^R^. ALLERTON, returning for England, litle regarded his bound of a 1000^li^. to performe covenants; for wheras he was bound by y^e^ same to bring y^e^ ship to [190] London, and to pay 30^li^. per month for her hire, he did neither of boath, for he carried her to Bristoll againe, from whence he intended to sett her out againe, and so did y^e^ 3. time, into these parts (as after will appear); and though she had been 10. months upon y^e^ former viage, at 30^li^. p^r^ month, yet he never payed peney for hire. It should seeme he knew well enough how to deale with M^r^. Sherley. And M^r^. Sherley, though he would needs tye her & her accounte upon y^e^ generall, yet he would dispose of her as him selfe pleased; for though M^r^. Winslow had in their names protested against y^e^ receiving her on y^t^ accounte, or if

ever they should hope to preveile in shuch a thing, yet never to suffer M^r^. Allerton to have any more to doe in her, yet he y^e^ last year let her wholy unto him, and injoyned them to send all their supplye in her to their prejudice, as is before noted. And now, though he broke his bonds, kepte no covenante, paid no hire, nor was ever like to keep covenants, yet now he goes and sells him all, both ship, & all her accounts, from first to last (and in effecte he might as well have given him y^e^ same); and not only this, but he doth as good as provide a sanctuary for him, for he gives him one years time to prepare his accounte, and then to give up y^e^ same to them here; and then another year for him to make paymente of what should be due upon y^t^ accounte. And in y^e^ mean time writs ernestly to them not to interupte or hinder him from his bussines, or stay him aboute clearing accounts, &c.; so as he in y^e^ mean time gathers up all monies due for fraighte, and any other debtes belonging either to her, or y^e^ Frindship's accounts, as his owne perticuler; and after, sells ship, & ordnans, fish, & what he had raised, in Spaine, according to y^e^ first designe, in effecte; and who had, or what became of y^e^ money, he best knows. In y^e^ mean time their hands were bound, and could doe nothing but looke on, till he had made all away into other mens hands (save a few catle & a litle land & some small maters he had here at Plimoth), and so in y^e^ end removed, as he had allready his person, so all

his from hence. This will better appere by M^r^. Sherley's leter.

S^r^: These few lines are further to give you to understand, that seeing you & we, that never differed yet but aboute y^e^ White-Angell, which somewhat troubleth us, as I perceive it doth you. And now M^r^. Allerton beeing here, we have had some confferance with him about her, and find him very willing to give you & us all contente y^t^ possiblie he can, though he burthen him selfe. He is contente to take y^e^ White-Angell wholy on him selfe, notwithstanding he mett with pirates nere y^e^ coast of Ierland, which tooke away his best sayles & other provissions from her; so as verily if we should now sell her, she would yeeld but a small price, besids her ordnance. And to set her forth againe with fresh money we would not, she being now at Bristoll. Wherfore we thought it best, both for you & us, M^r^. Allerton being willing to take her, to accepte of his bond of tow thousand pounds, to give [191] you a true & perfecte accounte, and take y^e^ whole charge of y^e^ Whit-Angell wholy to him selfe, from y^e^ first to y^e^ last. The accounte he is to make and perfecte within 12. months from y^e^ date of this letter, and then to pay you at 6. and 6. months after, what soever shall be due unto you and us upon the foote of y^t^ accounte. And verily, notwithstanding all y^e^ disasters he hath had, I am perswaded he hath enough to pay all men here and ther. Only they must have patience till he can gather in what is due to him ther. I doe not write this slightly, but upon some ground of what I have seen (and perhaps you know not of) under y^e^ hands & seals of some, &c. I rest

Your assured friend,

JAMES SHERLEY.

Des: 6. 1632.

But heres not a word of y^e^ breach of former bonds & covenants, or paimente of y^e^ ships hire; this is passt by as if no such thing had been; besids what bonds or obligments so ever they had of him, ther never came any into y^e^ hands or sight of y^e^ partners here. And for this y^t^ M^r^. Sherley seems to intimate (as a secrete) of his abilitie, under y^e^ hands & seals of some, it was but a trick, having gathered up an accounte of what was owing form such base fellows as he had made traders for him, and other debts; and then got M^r^. Mahue, & some others, to affirme under their hand & seale, that they had seen shuch accounts y^t^ were due to him.

M^r^. Hatherley came over againe this year, but upon his owne occasions, and begane to make preparation to plant & dwell in y^e^ countrie. He with his former dealings had wound in what money he had in y^e^ patnership into his owne hands, and so gave off all partnership (excepte in name), as was found in y^e^ issue of things; neither did he medle, or take any care aboute y^e^ same; only he was troubled about his ingagmente aboute y^e^ Friendship, as will after appeare. And now partly aboute y^t^ accounte, in some reconings betweene M^r^. Allerton and him, and some debts y^t^ M^r^. Allerton otherwise owed him upon dealing between them in perticuler, he drue up an accounte of above 2000^li^., and would faine have ingaged y^e^ partners here with it, because M^r^. Allerton had been their agent. But they

tould him they had been fool'd longe enough with such things, and shewed him y^t^ it no way belonged to them; but tould him he must looke to make good his ingagment for y^e^ Freindship, which caused some trouble betweene M^r^. Allerton and him.

M^r^. William Peirce did y^e^ like, M^r^. Allerton being wound into his debte also upon particuler dealings; as if they had been bound to make good all mens debts. But they easily shooke off these things. But M^r^. Allerton herby rane into much trouble & vexation, as well as he had troubled others, for M^r^. Denison sued him for y^e^ money he had disbursed for y^e^ 6. part of y^e^ Whit-Angell, & recovered y^e^ same with damages.

Though y^e^ partners were thus plūged into great ingagments, & oppresed with unjust debts, yet y^e^ Lord prospered their trading, that they made yearly large returnes, and had soone wound them selves out of all, if yet they had otherwise been well delt with all; as will more appear here after. [192] Also y^e^ people of y^e^ plantation begane to grow in their owtward estats, by reason * of y^e^ flowing of many people into y^e^ cuntrie, espetially into y^e^ Bay of y^e^ Massachusets; by which means corne & catle rose to a great prise, by w^ch^ many were much inriched, and cōmodities grue plentifull; and yet in other regards this benefite turned to their hurte, and this accession of strength to their weaknes. For now as their stocks increased, and y^e^

* *Rea-* in the manuscript.

increse vendible, ther was no longer any holding them togeather, but now they must of necessitie goe to their great lots; they could not other wise keep their katle; and having oxen growne, they must have land for plowing & tillage. And no man now thought he could live, except he had catle and a great deale of ground to keep them; all striving to increase their stocks. By which means they were scatered all over y^e^ bay, quickly, and y^e^ towne, in which they lived compactly till now, was left very thine, and in a short time allmost desolate. And if this had been all, it had been less, thoug to much; but y^e^ church must also be devided, and those y^t^ had lived so long togeather in Christian & comfortable fellowship must now part and suffer many divissions. First, those that lived on their lots on y^e^ other side of y^e^ bay (called Duxberie) they could not long bring their wives & children to y^e^ publick worship & church meetings here, but with such burthen, as, growing to some competente number, they sued to be dismissed and become a body of them selves; and so they were dismiste (about this time), though very unwillingly. But to touch this sadd matter, and handle things together that fell out afterward. To prevent any further scatering from this place, and weakning of y^e^ same, it was thought best to give out some good farms to spetiall persons, y^t^ would promise to live at Plimoth, and lickly to be helpfull to y^e^ church or comonewelth, and so tye y^e^ lands to

Plimoth as farmes for the same; and ther they might keepe their catle & tillage by some servants, and retaine their dwellings here. And so some spetiall lands were granted at a place generall, called Greens Harbor, wher no allotments had been in y^e^ former divission, a plase very weell meadowed, and fitt to keep & rear catle, good store. But alass! this remedy proved worse then y^e^ disease; for w^th^in a few years those that had thus gott footing ther rente them selves away, partly by force, and partly wearing y^e^ rest with importunitie and pleas of necessitie, so as they must either suffer them to goe, or live in continuall opposition and contention. And others still, as y^ey^ conceived them selves straitened, or to want accom̄odation, break away under one pretence or other, thinking their owne conceived necessitie, and the example of others, a warrente sufficente for them. And this, I fear, will be y^e^ ruine of New-England, at least of y^e^ churches of God ther, & will provock y^e^ Lords displeasure against them.

[193] This year, M^r^. William Perce came into y^e^ cuntry, & brought goods and passengers, in a ship caled y^e^ Lyon, which belonged cheefly to M^r^. Sherley, and y^e^ rest of y^e^ London partners, but these hear had nothing to doe with her. In this ship (besides beaver which they had sent home before) they sent upwards of 800^li^. in her, and some otter skines; and also y^e^ coppies of M^r^. Allertons accounts, desiring that they would also peruse & examene them, and rectifie shuch

things as they should find amise in them; and rather because they were better acquaynted with y^e^ goods bought ther, and y^e^ disbursments made, then they could bee here; yea, a great part were done by them selves, though M^r^. Allerton brougt in y^e^ accounte, and sundry things seemed to them obscure and had need of clearing. Also they sente a booke of exceptions against his accounts, in such things as they could manifest, and doubted not but they might adde more therunto. And also shewed them how much M^r^. Allerton was debtor to y^e^ accounte; and desired, seeing they had now put y^e^ ship White-Angell, and all, wholy into his power, and tyed their hands here, that they could not call him to accounte for any thinge, till y^e^ time was expired which they had given him, and by that time other men would get their debts of him, (as sume had done already by suing him,) and he would make all away here quickly out of their reach; and therfore prayed them to looke to things, and gett paymente of him ther, as it was all y^e^ reason they should, seeing they keept all y^e^ bonds & covenants they made with him in their owne hands; and here they could doe nothing by y^e^ course they had taken, nor had any thing to show if they should goe aboute it. But it pleased God, this ship, being first to goe to Verginia before she wente home, was cast away on y^t^ coast, not farr from Virginia, and their beaver was all lost (which was y^e^ first loss they sustained in that

kind); but Mr. Peirce & ye men saved their lives, and also their leters, and gott into Virginia, and so safly home. Ye accounts were now sent from hence againe to them. And thus much of ye passages of this year.

A part of Mr. Peirce his leter from Virginia.*

It was dated in Des: 25. 1632. and came to their hand ye 7. of Aprill, before they heard any thing from England.

Dear freinds, &c. Ye bruit of this fatall stroke that ye Lord hath brought both on me and you all will come to your ears before this cōeth to your hands, (it is like,) and therfore I shall not need to inlarg in perticulers, &c. My whole estate (for ye most parte) is taken away; and so yours, in a great measure, by this and your former losses [he means by ye French & Mr. Allerton]. It is time to looke aboute us, before ye wrath of ye Lord breake forth to utter destruction. The good Lord give us all grace to search our harts and trie our ways, and turne unto ye Lord, and humble our selves under his mightie hand, and seeke atonemente, &c. Dear freinds, you may know yt all your beaver, and ye books of your accounts, are swallowed up in ye sea; your letters remaine with me, and shall be delivered, if God bring me home. But what should I more say? Have we lost our outward estates? yet a hapy loss if our soules may gaine; ther is yet more in ye Lord Jehova than ever we had yet in ye world. Oh that our foolish harts could yet be wained from ye things here below, which are vanity and vexation

* This letter was written on the reverse of folio 192 of the original manuscript, and may properly be inserted here.

of spirite; and yet we fooles catch after shadows, y^t^ flye away, & are gone in a momente, &c. Thus with my continuall remembrance of you in my poore desires to y^e^ throne of grace, beseeching God to renew his love & favoure towards you all, in & through y^e^ Lord Jesus Christ, both in spirituall & temporall good things, as may be most to the glory & praise of his name, and your everlasting good. So I rest,

Your afflicted brother in Christ,

WILLIAM PEIRCE.

Virginia, Des: 25. 1632.

Anno Dom: 1633.

THIS year M^r^. Ed: Winslow was chosen Governor.

By the first returne this year, they had leters from M^r^. Sherley of M^r^. Allertons further ill success, and y^e^ loss by M^r^. Peirce, with many sadd complaints; but litle hope of any thinge to be gott of M^r^. Allerton, or how their accounts might be either eased, or any way rectified by them ther; but now saw plainly y^t^ the burthen of all would be cast on their backs. The spetiall passages of his letters I shall here inserte, as shall be pertinente to these things; for though I am weary of this tedious & uncomfortable subjecte, yet for y^e^ clearing of y^e^ truth I am compelled to be more larg in y^e^ opening of these matters, upon w^ch^ [194] so much trouble hath insued, and so many hard censures have passed on both sids. I would not be partiall to either, but deliver y^e^ truth in all, and, as nere as I can, in their owne words and passages, and so leave it to the impartiall judgment of any that shall

EDWARD WINSLOW.

come to read, or veiw these things. His leters are as folow, dated June 24. 1633.

Loving friends, my last* was sente in y^e^ Mary & John, by M^r^. William Collier, &c. I then certified you of y^e^ great, & uncomfortable, and unseasonable loss you & we had, in y^e^ loss of M^r^. Peirce his ship, y^e^ Lyon; but y^e^ Lords holy name be blessed, who gives & taks as it pleaseth him; his will be done, Amen. I then related unto you y^t^ fearfull accidente, or rather judgmente, y^e^ Lord pleased to lay on London Bridge, by fire, and therin gave you a touch of my great loss; the Lord, I hope, will give me patience to bear it, and faith to trust in him, & not in these slipery and uncertaine things of this world.

I hope M^r^. Allerton is nere upon sayle with you by this; but he had many disasters here before he could gett away; yet y^e^ last was a heavie one; his ship, going out of y^e^ harbor at Bristoll, by stormie weather was so farr driven on y^e^ shore, as it cost him above 100^li^. before shee could be gott off againe. Verily his case was so lamentable as I could not but afford him some help therin (and so did some were strangers to him); besids, your goods were in her, and if he had not been supported, he must have broke off his viage, and so loss could not have been avoyded on all sides. When he first bought her, I thinke he had made a saving match, if he had then sunck her, and never set her forth. I hope he sees y^e^ Lords hand against him, and will leave of these viages. I thinke we did well in parting with her; she would have been but a clogge to y^e^ accounte from time to time, and now though we shall not gett much by way of satisfaction, yet we shall lose no more. And now, as before I have writte, I pray you finish all y^e^ accounts and reconings with him there; for here

* March 22.

he hath nothing, but many debtes that he stands ingaged to many men for. Besids, here is not a man y^t^ will spend a day, or scarce an hower, aboute y^e^ accounts but my selfe, and y^t^ bussines will require more time and help then I can afford. I shall not need to say any more; I hope you will doe y^t^ which shall be best & just, to which adde mercie, and consider his intente, though he failed in many perticulers, which now cannot be helped, &c.

To morrow, or next day at furthest, we are to pay 300^li^. and M^r^. Beachamp is out of y^e^ towne, yet y^e^ bussines I must doe. Oh the greefe & trouble y^t^ man, M^r^. Allerton, hath brought upon you and us! I cannot forgett it, and to thinke on it draws many a sigh from my harte, and teares from my eyes. And now y^e^ Lord hath visited me with an other great loss, yet I can undergoe it with more patience. But this I have follishly pulled upon my selfe, &c. [And in another, he hath this passage:] By M^r^. Allertons faire propositions and large [195] promises, I have over rune my selfe; verily, at this time greefe hinders me to write, and tears will not suffer me to see; wherfore, as you love those that ever loved you, and y^t^ plantation, thinke upon us. Oh what shall I say of that man, who hath abused your trust and wronged our loves! but now to complaine is too late, nither can I complaine of your backwardnes, for I am perswaded it lys as heavie on your harts, as it doth on our purses or credites. And had y^e^ Lord sent M^r^. Peirce safe home, we had eased both you and us of some of those debts; the Lord I hope will give us patience to bear these crosses; and that great God, whose care & providence is every where, and spetially over all those that desire truly to fear and serve him, direct, guid, prosper, & blesse you so, as y^t^ you may be able (as I perswade my selfe you are willing) to discharge & take off this great & heavie burthen which now lyes upon me for your saks; and I hope in y^e^ ende for y^e^ good of you, and many thou-

sands more; for had not you & we joyned & continued togeather, New-England might yet have been scarce knowne, I am perswaded, not so replenished & inhabited with honest English people, as it now is. The Lord increase & blesse them, &c. So, with my continuall praiers for you all, I rest

Your assured loving friend,

JAMES SHERLEY.

June 24. 1633.

By this it apperes when M^r^. Sherly sould him y^e^ ship & all her accounts, it was more for M^r^. Allertons advantage then theirs; and if they could get any there, well & good, for they were like to have nothing here. And what course was held to hinder them there, hath allready beene manifested. And though M^r^. Sherley became more sinsible of his owne condition, by these losses, and therby more sadly & plainly to complaine of M^r^. Allerton, yet no course was taken to help them here, but all left unto them selves; not so much as to examene & rectifie y^e^ accounts, by which (it is like) some hundereds of pounds might have been taken off. But very probable it is, the more they saw was taken off, y^e^ less might come unto them selves. But I leave these maters, & come to other things.

M^r^. Roger Williams (a man godly & zealous, having many precious parts, but very unsettled in judgmente) came over first to y^e^ Massachusets, but upon some discontente left y^t^ place, and came hither, (wher he was friēdly entertained, according to their poore abilitie,) and exercised his gifts amongst them, & after some

time was admitted a member of y^e^ church; and his teaching well approoved, for y^e^ benefite wherof I still blese God, and am thankfull to him, even for his sharpest admonitions & reproufs, so farr as they agreed with truth. He this year begane to fall into some strang oppiions, and from opinion to practise; which caused some controversie betweene y^e^ church & him, and in y^e^ end some discontente on his parte, by occasion wherof he left them some thing abruptly. Yet after wards sued for his dismission to y^e^ church of Salem, which was granted, with some caution to them concerning him, and what care they ought to have of him. But he soone fell into more things ther, both to their and y^e^ goverments troble and [196] disturbance. I shall not need to name perticulers, they are too well knowen now to all, though for a time y^e^ church here wente under some hard censure by his occasion, from some that afterwards smarted them selves. But he is to be pitied, and prayed for, and so I shall leave y^e^ matter, and desire y^e^ Lord to shew him his errors, and reduse him into y^e^ way of truth, and give him a setled judgment and constancie in y^e^ same; for I hope he belongs to y^e^ Lord, and y^t^ he will shew him mercie.

Having had formerly converse and famliarity with y^e^ Dutch, (as is before remembred,) they, seeing them seated here in a barren quarter, tould them of a river called by them y^e^ Fresh River, but now is known

by y^e^ name of Conightecute-River, which they often comended unto them for a fine place both for plantation and trade, and wished them to make use of it. But their hands being full otherwise, they let it pass. But afterwards ther coming a company of banishte Indeans into these parts, that were drivene out from thence by the potencie of y^e^ Pequents, which usurped upon them, and drive them from thence, they often sollisited them to goe thither, and they should have much trad, espetially if they would keep a house ther. And having now good store of comodities, and allso need to looke out wher they could advantage them selves to help them out of their great ingagments, they now begane to send that way to discover y^e^ same, and trade with y^e^ natives. They found it to be a fine place, but had no great store of trade; but y^e^ Indeans excused y^e^ same in regard of y^e^ season, and the fear y^e^ Indans were in of their enemise. So they tried diverce times, not with out profite, but saw y^e^ most certainty would be by keeping a house ther, to receive y^e^ trad when it came down out of y^e^ inland. These Indeans, not seeing them very forward to build ther, solisited them of y^e^ Massachusets in like sorte (for their end was to be restored to their countrie againe); but they in y^e^ Bay being but latly come, were not fitte for y^e^ same; but some of their cheefe made a motion to joyne w^th^ the partners here, to trad joyntly with them in y^t^ river, the which they were willing to imbrace, and so they

should have builte, and put in equall stock togeather. A time of meeting was appointed at y^e^ Massachusets, and some of y^e^ cheefe here was appointed to treat with them, and went accordingly; but they cast many fears of deanger & loss and the like, which was perceived to be the maine obstacles, though they alledged they were not provided of trading goods. But those hear offered at presente to put in sufficiente for both, provided they would become ingaged for y^e^ halfe, and prepare against y^e^ nexte year. They conffessed more could not be offered, but thanked them, and tould them they had no mind to it. They then answered, they hoped it would be no offence unto [197] them, if them sellves wente on without them, if they saw it meete. They said ther was no reason they should; and thus this treaty broake of, and those here tooke conveniente time to made a begining ther; and were y^e^ first English that both discovered that place, and built in y^e^ same, though they were litle better then thrust out of it afterward as may appeare.

But y^e^ Dutch began now to repente, and hearing of their purpose & preparation, indēoured to prevente them, and gott in a litle before them, and made a slight forte, and planted 2. peeces of ordnance, thretening to stopp their passage. But they having made a smale frame of a house ready, and haveing a great new-barke, they stowed their frame in her hold, & bords to cover & finishe it, having nayles & all other

provisions fitting for their use. This they did y^e^ rather that they might have a presente defence against y^e^ Indeans, who weare much offended that they brought home & restored y^e^ right Sachem of y^e^ place (called Natawanute); so as they were to incounter with a duble danger in this attempte, both y^e^ Dutch and y^e^ Indeans. When they came up y^e^ river, the Dutch demanded what they intended, and whither they would goe; they answered, up y^e^ river to trade (now their order was to goe and seat above them). They bid them strike, & stay, or els they would shoote them; & stood by ther ordnance ready fitted. They answered they had com̄ission from y^e^ Gov^r^ of Plimoth to goe up y^e^ river to such a place, and if they did shoote, they must obey their order and proceede; they would not molest them, but would goe one. So they passed along, and though the Dutch threatened them hard, yet they shoot not. Com̄ing to their place, they clapt up their house quickly, and landed their provissions, and left y^e^ companie appoynted, and sent the barke home; and afterwards palisadoed their house aboute, and fortified them selves better. The Dutch sent word home to y^e^ Monhatas what was done; and in proces of time, they sent a band of aboute 70. men, in warrlike maner, with collours displayed, to assaulte them; but seeing them strengtened, & that it would cost blood, they came to parley, and returned in peace. And this was their enterance ther, who deserved to have held it, and not

by freinds to have been thrust out, as in a sorte they were, as will after appere. They did y^e^ Dutch no wrong, for they took not a foote of any land they bought, but went to y^e^ place above them, and bought that tracte of land which belonged to these Indeans which they carried with them, and their friends, with whom y^e^ Dutch had nothing to doe. But of these matters more in another place.

It pleased y^e^ Lord to visite them this year with an infectious fevoure, of which many fell very sicke, and upward of 20. persons dyed, men and women, besids children, and sundry of them of their anciente friends which had lived in Holand; as Thomas Blossome, Richard Masterson, with sundry [198] others, and in y^e^ end (after he had much helped others) Samuell Fuller, who was their surgeon & phisition, and had been a great help and comforte unto them; as in his facultie, so otherwise, being a deacon of y^e^ church, a man godly, and forward to doe good, being much missed after his death; and he and y^e^ rest of their brethren much lamented by them, and caused much sadnes & mourning amongst them; which caused them to humble them selves, & seeke y^e^ Lord; and towards winter it pleased the Lord y^e^ sicknes ceased. This disease allso swept away many of y^e^ Indeans from all y^e^ places near adjoyning; and y^e^ spring before, espetially all y^e^ month of May, ther was such a quantitie of a great sorte of flies, like (for bignes)

to wasps, or bumble-bees, which came out of holes in y^e^ ground, and replenished all y^e^ woods, and eate y^e^ green-things, and made such a constante yelling noyes, as made all y^e^ woods ring of them, and ready to deafe y^e^ hearers. They have not by y^e^ English been heard or seen before or since. But y^e^ Indeans tould them y^t^ sicknes would follow, and so it did in June, July, August, and y^e^ cheefe heat of somer.

It pleased y^e^ Lord to inable them this year to send home a great quantity of beaver, besids paing all their charges, & debts at home, which good returne did much incourage their freinds in England. They sent in beaver 3366^li^. waight, and much of it coat beaver, which yeeled 20^s^. p^r^ pound, & some of it above; and of otter-skines * 346. sould also at a good prise. And thus much of y^e^ affairs of this year.

Anno Dom: 1634.

This year M^r^. Thomas Prence was chosen Gov^r^.

M^r^. Sherleys letters were very breefe in answer of theirs this year. I will forbear to coppy any part therof, only name a head or 2. therin. First, he desirs they will take nothing ill in what he formerly write, professing his good affection towards them as before, &c. 2^ly^. For M^r^. Allertons accounts, he is perswaded they must suffer, and y^t^ in no small sumes;

* The skin was sold at 14^s^. and 15. y^e^ pound.

and that they have cause enough to complaine, but it was now too late. And that he had failed them ther, those here, and him selfe in his owne aimes. And that now, having thus left them here, he feared God had or would leave him, and it would not be strang, but a wonder if he fell not into worse things, &c. 3ly. He blesseth God and is thankfull to them for ye good returne made this year. This is ye effecte of his letters, other things being of more private nature.

I am now to enter upon one of ye sadest things that befell them since they came; but before I begine, it will be needfull to premise such parte of their patente as gives them right and priviledge at Kenebeck; as followeth:

[199] The said Counsell hath further given, granted, barganed, sold, infeoffed, alloted, assigned, & sett over, and by these presents doe clearly and absolutly give, grante, bargane, sell, alliene, enffeofe, allote, assigne, and confirme unto ye said William Bradford, his heires, associates, and assignes, All that tracte of land or part of New-England in America afforesaid, which lyeth within or betweene, and extendeth it selfe from ye utmost limits of Cobiseconte, which adjoyneth to ye river of Kenebeck, towards the westerne ocean, and a place called ye falls of Nequamkick in America, aforsaid; and ye space of 15. English myles on each side of ye said river, commonly called Kenebeck River, and all ye said river called Kenebeck that lyeth within the said limits & bounds, eastward, westward, northward, & southward, last above mentioned; and all lands, grounds, soyles, rivers, waters, fishing, &c. And by vertue of ye authority to us de-

rived by his said late Ma^tis^ Lrēs patents, to take, apprehend, seise, and make prise of all such persons, their ships and goods, as shall attempte to inhabite or trade with y^e^ savage people of that countrie within y^e^ severall precincts and limits of his & their severall plantations, &c.

Now it so fell out, that one Hocking, belonging to y^e^ plantation of Pascataway, wente with a barke and cōmodities to trade in that river, and would needs press into their limites; and not only so, but would needs goe up y^e^ river above their house, (towards y^e^ falls of y^e^ river,) and intercept the trade that should come to them. He that was cheefe of y^e^ place forbad them, and prayed him that he would not offer them that injurie, nor goe aboute to infring their liberties, which had cost them so dear. But he answered he would goe up and trade ther in dispite of them, and lye ther as longe as he pleased. The other tould him he must then be forced to remove him from thence, or make seasure of him if he could. He bid him doe his worste, and so wente up, and anchored ther. The other tooke a boat & some men & went up to him, when he saw his time, and againe entreated him to departe by what perswasion he could. But all in vaine: he could gett nothing of him but ill words. So he considred that now was y^e^ season for trade to come downe, and if he should suffer him to lye, & take it from them, all ther former charge would be lost, and they had better throw up all. So, con-

sulting with his men, (who were willing thertoe,) he resolved to put him from his anchores, and let him drive downe y^e^ river with y^e^ streame; but com̄anded y^e^ men y^t^ none should shoote a shote upon any occasion, except he com̄anded them. He spoake to him againe, but all in vaine; then he sente a cuple in a canow to cutt his cable, the which one of them performes; but Hocking taks up a pece which he had layed ready, and as y^e^ barke shered by y^e^ canow, he shote [200] him close under her side, in y^e^ head, (as I take it,) so he fell downe dead instantly. One of his fellows (that loved him well) could not hold, but with a muskett shot Hocking, who fell downe dead and never speake word. This was y^e^ truth of y^e^ thing. The rest of y^e^ men carried home the vessell and y^e^ sad tidings of these things. Now y^e^ Lord Saye & y^e^ Lord Brooks, with some other great persons, had a hand in this plantation; they write home to them, as much as they could to exasperate them in y^e^ matter, leaveing out all y^e^ circomstances, as if he had been kild without any offenc of his parte, conceling y^t^ he had kild another first, and y^e^ just occasion that he had given in offering such wrong; at w^ch^ their Lords^ps^ were much offended, till they were truly informed of y^e^ mater.

The bruite of this was quickly carried all aboute, (and y^t^ in y^e^ worst maner,) and came into y^e^ Bay to their neighbours their. Their owne barke com̄ing home, and bringing a true relation of y^e^ matter, sundry

were sadly affected with y^e^ thing, as they had cause. It was not long before they had occasion to send their vessell into y^e^ Bay of y^e^ Massachusetts; but they were so prepossest with this matter, and affected with y^e^ same, as they comited M^r^. Alden to prison, who was in y^e^ bark, and had been at Kenebeck, but was no actore in y^e^ bussines, but wente to carie them supply. They dismist y^e^ barke aboute her bussines, but kept him for some time. This was thought strang here, and they sente Capten Standish to give them true information, (togeather with their letters,) and y^e^ best satisfaction they could, and to procure M^r^. Alden's release. I shall recite a letter or 2. which will show the passages of these things, as followeth.

Good S^r^:

I have received your ł^rē^s by Captaine Standish, & am unfainedly glad of Gods mercie towards you in y^e^ recovery of your health, or some way thertoo. For y^e^ bussines you write of, I thought meete to answer a word or 2. to your selfe, leaving the answer of your Gov^r^ ł^re^ to our courte, to whom y^e^ same, together with my selfe is directed. I conceive (till I hear new matter to y^e^ contrary) that your patente may warrente your resistance of any English from trading at Kenebeck, and y^t^ blood of Hocking, and y^e^ partie he slue, will be required at his hands. Yet doe I with your selfe & others sorrow for their deaths. I thinke likewise y^t^ your generall ł^rēs^ will satisfie our courte, and make them cease from any further inter medling in y^e^ mater. I have upon y^e^ same ł^re^ sett M^r^. Alden at liberty, and his sureties, and yet, least I should seeme to neglecte y^e^ opinion of our court

& y^e^ frequente speeches of others with us, I have bound Captaine Standish to appeare y^e^ 3. of June at our nexte courte, to make affidavid for y^e^ coppie of y^e^ patente, and to manifest the circumstances of Hockins provocations; both which will tend to y^e^ clearing of your inocencie. If any unkindnes hath ben taken from what we have done, let it be further & better considred of, I pray you; and I hope y^e^ more you thinke of it, the lesse blame you will impute to us. At least you ought to be just in differencing them, whose opinions concurr [201] with your owne, from others who were opposites; and yet I may truly say, I have spoken w^th^ no man in y^e^ bussines who taxed you most, but they are such as have many wayes heretofore declared ther good affections towards your plantation. I further referr my selfe to y^e^ reporte of Captaine Standish & M^r^. Allden; leaving you for this presente to Gods blessing, wishing unto you perfecte recovery of health, and y^e^ long continuance of it. I desire to be lovingly remembred to M^r^. Prence, your Gov^r^, M^r^. Winslow, M^r^. Brewster, whom I would see if I knew how. The Lord keepe you all. Amen.

Your very loving freind in our Lord Jesus,

THO: DUDLEY.

New-towne, y^e^ 22. of May, 1634.

Another of his about these things as followeth.

S^r^: I am right sorrie for y^e^ news that Captaine Standish & other of your neigbours and my beloved freinds will bring now to Plimoth, wherin I suffer with you, by reason of my opinion, which differeth from others, who are godly & wise, amongst us here, the reverence of whose judgments causeth me to suspecte myne owne ignorance; yet must I remaine in it untill I be convinced therof. I thought not to have shewed your letter written to me, but to have done my best

to have reconciled differences in y^e^ best season & maner I could; but Captaine Standish requiring an answer therof publickly in y^e^ courte, I was forced to produce it, and that made y^e^ breach soe wide as he can tell you. I propounded to y^e^ courte, to answer M^r^. Prences łre, your Gov^r^, but our courte said it required no answer, it selfe being an answer to a former łre of ours. I pray you certifie M^r^. Prence so much, and others whom it concerneth, that no neglecte or ill maners be imputed to me theraboute. The late łres I received from England wrought in me divere fears * of some trials which are shortly like to fall upon us; and this unhappie contention betweene you and us, and between you & Pascattaway, will hasten them, if God with an extraordinarie hand doe not help us. To reconcile this for y^e^ presente will be very difficulte, but time cooleth distempers, and a comone danger to us boath approaching, will necessitate our uniting againe. I pray you therfore, S^r^. set your wisdom & patience a worke, and exhorte others to y^e^ same, that things may not proceede from bad to worse, so making our contentions like y^e^ barrs of a pallace, but that a way of peace may be kepte open, wherat y^e^ God of peace may have enterance in his owne time. If you suffer wrong, it shall be your honor to bear it patiently; but I goe to farr in needles putting you in mind of these things. God hath done great things for you, and I desire his blessings may be multiplied upon you more & more. I will commite no more to writing, but comending my selfe to your prayers, doe rest,

Your truly loving freind in our Lord Jesus,

THO: DUDLEY.

June 4. 1634.

* Ther was cause enough of these feares, which arise by y^e^ underworking of some enemies to y^e^ churches here, by which this Comission following was procured from his Ma^tie^. (See this paper in appendix, No. 11.)

By these things it appars what troubls rise herupon, and how hard they were to be reconciled; for though they hear were hartily sorrie for what was fallen out, yet they conceived they were unjustly injuried, and provoked to what was done; and that their neigbours (haveing no jurisdiction over them) did more then was mete, thus to imprison one of theirs, and bind them to [202] their courte. But yet being assured of their Christian love, and perswaded what was done was out of godly zeale, that religion might not suffer, nor siñe any way covered or borne with, espetially y^e^ guilte of blood, of which all should be very consciencious in any whom soever, they did indeavore to appease & satisfie them y^e^ best they could; first, by informing them y^e^ truth in all circomstances aboute y^e^ matter; 2^ly^, in being willing to referr y^e^ case to any indifferante and equall hearing and judgmente of the thing hear, and to answere it els wher when they should be duly called therunto; and further they craved M^r^. Winthrops, & other of y^e^ reve^d^ magistrats ther, their advice & direction herein. This did mollifie their minds, and bring things to a good & comfortable issue in y^e^ end.

For they had this advice given them by M^r^. Winthrop, & others concurring with him, that from their courte, they should write to the neigboure plantations, & espetially that of y^e^ lords, at Pascataway, and theirs of y^e^ Massachusets, to appointe some to give

them meeting at some fitt place, to consulte & determine in this matter, so as y^e^ parties meeting might have full power to order & bind, &c. And that nothing be done to y^e^ infringing or prejudice of y^e^ liberties of any place. And for y^e^ clearing of conscience, y^e^ law of God is, y^t^ y^e^ preist lips must be consulted with, and therfore it was desired that y^e^ ministers of every plantation might be presente to give their advice in pointe of conscience. Though this course seemed dangerous to some, yet they were so well assured of y^e^ justice of their cause, and y^e^ equitie of their freinds, as they put them selves upon it, & appointed a time, of which they gave notice to y^e^ severall places a month before hand; viz. Massachusets, Salem, & Pascataway, or any other y^t^ they would give notice too, and disired them to produce any evidence they could in y^e^ case. The place for meeting was at Boston. But when y^e^ day & time came, none apered, but some of y^e^ magistrats and ministers of y^e^ Massachusets, and their owne. Seeing none of Passcataway or other places came, (haveing been thus desired, & conveniente time given them for y^t^ end,) M^r^. Winthrop & y^e^ rest said they could doe no more then they had done thus to requeste them, y^e^ blame must rest on them. So they fell into a fair debating of things them selves; and after all things had been fully opened & discussed, and y^e^ opinione of each one demanded, both magistrats, and ministers,

though they all could have wished these things had never been, yet they could not but lay y^e^ blame & guilt on Hockins owne head; and withall gave them such grave & godly exhortations and advice, as they thought meete, both for y^e^ presente & future; which they allso imbraced with love & thankfullnes, promising to indeavor to follow y^e^ same. And thus was this matter ended, and ther love and concord renewed; and also M^r^. Winthrop & M^r^. Dudley write in their behalfes to y^e^ Lord Ssay & other gentl-men that were interesed in y^t^ plantation, very effectually, w^th^ which, togeather with their owne leters, and M^r^. Winslows furder declaration of things unto them, they rested well satisfied.

[203] M^r^. Winslow was sente by them this year into England, partly to informe and satisfie y^e^ Lord Say & others, in y^e^ former matter, as also to make answer and their just defence for y^e^ same, if any thing should by any be prosecuted against them at Counsell-table, or els wher; but this matter tooke end, without any further trouble, as is before noted. And partly to signifie unto y^e^ partners in England, that the terme of their trade with y^e^ company here was out, and therfore he was sente to finishe y^e^ accounts with them, and to bring them notice how much debtore they should remaine on y^t^ accounte, and that they might know what further course would be best to hold. But y^e^ issue of these things will

appear in y^e^ next years passages. They now sente over by him a great returne, which was very acceptable unto them; which was in beaver 3738^li^. waight, (a great part of it, being coat-beaver, sould at 20^s^. p^r^ pound,) and 234. otter skines;* which alltogeather rise to a great sume of money.

This year (in y^e^ foreparte of y^e^ same) they sente forth a barke to trad at y^e^ Dutch-Plantation; and they mette ther with on Captaine Stone, that had lived in Christophers, one of y^e^ West-Ende Ilands, and now had been some time in Virginia, and came from thence into these parts. He kept company with y^e^ Dutch Gove^r^, and, I know not in what drunken fitt, he gott leave of y^e^ Gov^r^ to ceaise on their barke, when they were ready to come away, and had done their markett, haveing y^e^ valew of 500^li^. worth of goods abord her; having no occasion at all, or any collour of ground for such a thing, but having made y^e^ Gov^r^ drunck, so as he could scarce speake a right word; and when he urged him hear aboute, he answered him, *Als 't u beleeft.*† So he gat abord, (the cheefe of their men & marchant being ashore,) and with some of his owne men, made y^e^ rest of theirs waigh anchor, sett sayle, & carry her away towards Virginia. But diverse of y^e^ Dutch sea-men, which had bene often at Plimoth, and kindly entertayned ther, said one to another, Shall we suffer our freinds to be thus abused,

* And y^e^ skin at 14^s^.

† That is, "If you please."

and have their goods carried away, before our faces, whilst our Gov^r^ is drunke? They vowed they would never suffer it; and so gott a vessell or 2. and pursued him, & brought him in againe, and delivered them their barke & goods againe.

After wards Stone came into y^e^ Massachusets, and they sent & commensed suite against him for this facte; but by mediation of freinds it was taken up, and y^e^ suite lett fall. And in y^e^ company of some other gentle-men Stone came afterwards to Plimoth, and had freindly & civill entertainmente amongst them, with y^e^ rest; but revenge boyled within his brest, (though concelled,) for some conceived he had a purpose (at one time) to have staped the Gov^r^, and put his hand to his dagger for that end, but by Gods providence and y^e^ vigilance of some was prevented. He afterward returned to Virginia, in a pinass, with one Captaine Norton & some others; and, I know not for what occasion, they would needs goe up Coonigtecutt River; and how they carried themselves I know not, but y^e^ Indeans knoct him in y^e^ head, as he lay in his cabine, and had thrown y^e^ covering over his face (whether out of fear or desperation is uncertaine); this was his end. They likewise killed all y^e^ rest, but Captaine Norton defended him selfe a long time against them all in y^e^ cooke-roome, till by accidente the gunpowder tooke fire, which (for readynes) he had sett in an open thing before him, which did

so burne, & scald him, & blind his eyes, as he could make no longer resistance, but was slaine also by them, though they much comended his vallour. And having killed y^e^ men, they made a pray of what they had, and chafered away some of their things to y^e^ Dutch that lived their. But it was not longe before a quarell fell betweene the Dutch & them, and they would have cutt of their bark; but they slue y^e^ cheef sachem w^th^ y^e^ shott of a murderer.*

I am now to relate some strang and remarkable passages. Ther was a company of people lived in y^e^ country, up above in y^e^ river of Conigtecut, a great way from their trading house ther, and were enimise to those Indeans which lived aboute them, and of whom they stood in some fear (bing a stout people). About a thousand of them had inclosed them selves in a forte, which they had strongly palissadoed about. 3. or 4. Dutch men went up in y^e^ begining of winter to live with them, to gett their trade, and prevente them for bringing it to y^e^ English, or to fall into amitie with them; but at spring to bring all downe to their place. But their enterprise failed, for it pleased God to visite these Indeans with a great sickenes, and such a mortalitie that of a 1000. above 900. and a halfe of them dyed, and many of them did rott above ground for want of buriall, and y^e^ Dutch men

* The two paragraphs above were written on the reverse of folios 202 and 203 of the original manuscript, under this year.

allmost starved before they could gett away, for ise and snow. But about Feb: they got with much difficultie to their trading house; whom they kindly releeved, being allmost spente with hunger and could. Being thus refreshed by them diverce days, they got to their owne place, and y^e^ Dutch were very thankfull for this kindnes.

This spring, also, those Indeans that lived aboute their trading house there fell sick of y^e^ small poxe, and dyed most miserably; for a sorer disease cannot befall them; they fear it more then y^e^ plague; for usualy they that have this disease have them in abundance, and for wante of bedding & lin̄ing and other helps, they fall into a lamentable condition, as they lye on their hard matts, y^e^ poxe breaking and mattering, and runing one into another, their skin cleaving (by reason therof) to the matts they lye on; when they turne them, a whole side will flea of at once, [204] (as it were,) and they will be all of a gore blood, most fearfull to behold; and then being very sore, what with could and other distempers, they dye like rotten sheep. The condition of this people was so lamentable, and they fell downe so generally of this diseas, as they were (in y^e^ end) not able to help on another; no, not to make a fire, nor to fetch a litle water to drinke, nor any to burie y^e^ dead; but would strivie as long as they could, and when they could procure no other means to make fire, they

would burne y^e^ woden trayes & dishes they ate their meate in, and their very bowes & arrowes; & some would crawle out on all foure to gett a litle water, and some times dye by y^e^ way, & not be able to gett in againe. But those of y^e^ English house, (though at first they were afraid of y^e^ infection,) yet seeing their woefull and sadd condition, and hearing their pitifull cries and lamentations, they had compastion of them, and dayly fetched them wood & water, and made them fires, gott them victualls whilst they lived, and buried them when they dyed. For very few of them escaped, notwithstanding they did what they could for them, to y^e^ haszard of them selvs. The cheefe Sachem him selfe now dyed, & allmost all his freinds & kinred. But by y^e^ marvelous goodnes & providens of God not one of y^e^ English was so much as sicke, or in y^e^ least measure tainted with this disease, though they dayly did these offices for them for many weeks togeather. And this mercie which they shewed them was kindly taken, and thankfully acknowledged of all y^e^ Indeans that knew or heard of y^e^ same; and their m^rs^ here did much comend & reward them for y^e^ same.

Anno Dom: 1635.

M^r^. Winslow was very wellcome to them in England, and y^e^ more in regard of y^e^ large returne he brought with him, which came all safe to their hands,

and was well sould. And he was borne in hand, (at least he so apprehended,) that all accounts should be cleared before his returne, and all former differences ther aboute well setled. And so he writ over to them hear, that he hoped to cleare y^e^ accounts, and bring them over with him; and y^t^ the accounte of y^e^ White Angele would be taken of, and all things fairly ended. But it came to pass [205] that, being occasioned to answer some complaints made against the countrie at Counsell bord, more cheefly concerning their neigbours in y^e^ Bay then them selves hear, the which he did to good effecte, and further prosecuting such things as might tend to y^e^ good of y^e^ whole, as well them selves as others, aboute y^e^ wrongs and incroachments that the French & other strangers both had and were like further to doe unto them, if not prevented, he prefered this petition following to their Hon^rs^ that were deputed Comissioners for y^e^ Plantations.

To y^e^ right honorable y^e^ Lords Comissioners for y^e^ Plantations in America.

The humble petition of Edw: Winslow, on y^e^ behalfe of y^e^ plantations in New-England,

Humbly sheweth unto your Lordships, y^t^ wheras your petitioners have planted them selves in New England under his Ma^tis^ most gratious protection; now so it is, right Hon^bl^, that y^e^ French & Dutch doe indeaouer to devide y^e^ land betweene them; for which purpose y^e^ French have, on y^e^ east side, entered and seased upon one of our houses, and

carried away the goods, slew 2. of y^e^ men in another place, and tooke y^e^ rest prisoners with their goods. And y^e^ Dutch, on y^e^ west, have also made entrie upon Conigtecute River, within y^e^ limits of his Maj^ts^ łrs patent, where they have raised a forte, and threaten to expell your petitioners thence, who are also planted upon y^e^ same river, maintaining possession for his Ma^tie^ to their great charge, & hazard both of lives & goods.

In tender consideration hereof your petitioners humbly pray that your Lo^pps^ will either procure their peace w^th^ those foraine states, or else to give spetiall warrante unto your petitioners and y^e^ English Collonies, to right and defend them selves against all foraigne enimies. And your petitioners shall pray, &c.

This petition found good acceptation with most of them, and M^r^. Winslow was heard sundry times by them, and appointed further to attend for an answer from their Lo^pps^, espetially, having upon conferance with them laid downe a way how this might be doone without any either charge or trouble to y^e^ state; only by furnishing some of y^e^ cheefe of y^e^ cuntry hear with authoritie, who would undertake it at their owne charge, and in such a way as should be without any publick disturbance. But this crossed both S^r^ Ferdinandos Gorges' & Cap: Masons designe, and y^e^ archbishop of Counterberies by them; for S^r^ Ferd: Gorges (by y^e^ arch-pps favore) was to have been sent over generall Gov^r^ into y^e^ countrie, and to have had means from y^e^ state for y^t^ end, and was now upon dispatch and conclude of y^e^ bussines. And y^e^ arch-bishops

purposs & intente was, by his means, & some he should send with him, (to be furnished with Episcopall power,) [206] to disturbe y^e^ peace of y^e^ churches here, and to overthrow their proceedings and further growth, which was y^e^ thing he aimed at. But it so fell out (by Gods providence) that though he in y^e^ end crost this petition from taking any further effecte in this kind, yet by this as a cheefe means the plotte and whole bussines of his & S^r^ Ferdinandos fell to y^e^ ground, and came to nothing. When M^r^. Winslow should have had his suit granted, (as indeed upon y^e^ pointe it was,) and should have been confirmed, the arch-bishop put a stop upon it, and M^r^. Winslow, thinking to gett it freed, went to y^e^ bord againe; but y^e^ bishop, S^r^ Ferd: and Captine Masson, had, as it seemes, procured Morton (of whom mention is made before, & his base carriage) to complaine; to whose complaints M^r^. Winslow made answer to y^e^ good satisfaction of y^e^ borde, who checked Morton and rebuked him sharply, & allso blamed S^r^ Fer^d^ Gorges, & Masson, for countenancing him. But y^e^ bish: had a further end & use of his presence, for he now begane to question M^r^. Winslow of many things; as of teaching in y^e^ church publickly, of which Morton accused him, and gave evidence that he had seen and heard him doe it; to which M^r^. Winslow answered, that some time (wanting a minster) he did exercise his gifte to help y^e^ edification of his breethren, when

they wanted better means, w^ch^ was not often. Then aboute mariage, the which he also confessed, that, haveing been called to place of magistracie, he had sometimes maried some. And further tould their lord^ps^ y^t^ mariage was a civille thinge, & he found no wher in y^e^ word of God y^t^ it was tyed to ministrie. Again, they were necessitated so to doe, having for a long time togeather at first no minister; besids, it was no new-thing, for he had been so maried him selfe in Holand, by y^e^ magistrats in their Statt-house. But in y^e^ end (to be short), for these things, y^e^ bishop, by vemente importunity, gott y^e^ bord at last to consente to his comittemente; so he was comited to y^e^ Fleete, and lay ther 17. weeks, or ther aboute, before he could gett to be released. And this was y^e^ end of this petition, and this bussines; only y^e^ others designe was also frustrated hereby, with other things concurring, which was no smalle blessing to y^e^ people here.

But y^e^ charge fell heavie on them hear, not only in M^r^. Winslows expences, (which could not be smale,) but by y^e^ hinderance of their bussines both ther and hear, by his personall imploymente. For though this was as much or more for others then for them hear, and by them cheefly he was put on this bussines, (for y^e^ plantation kēwe nothing of it till they heard of his imprisonmente,) yet y^e^ whole charge lay on them.

Now for their owne bussines; whatsoever M^r^. Sherleys mind was before, (or M^r^. Winslow apprehension of y^e^ same,) he now declared him selfe plainly, that he would neither take of y^e^ White-Angell from y^e^ accounte, nor [207] give any further accounte, till he had received more into his hands; only a prety good supply of goods were sent over, but of y^e^ most, no note of their prises, or so orderly an invoyce as formerly; which M^r^. Winslow said he could not help, because of his restrainte. Only now M^r^. Sherley & M^r^. Beachamp & M^r^. Andrews sent over a letter of atturney under their hands & seals, to recovere what they could of M^r^. Allerton for y^e^ Angells accounte; but sent them neither y^e^ bonds, nor covenants, or such other evidence or accounts, as they had aboute these matters. I shall here inserte a few passages out of M^r^. Sherleys letters aboute these things.

Your leter of y^e^ 22. of July, 1634, by your trustie and our loving friend M^r^. Winslow, I have received, and your larg parcell of beaver and otter skines. Blessed be our God, both he and it came safly to us, and we have sould it in tow parcells; y^e^ skin at 14^s^. ħi. & some at 16.; y^e^ coate at 20^s^. y^e^ pound. The accounts I have not sent you them this year, I will referr you to M^r^. Winslow to tell you y^e^ reason of it; yet be assured y^t^ none of you shall suffer by y^e^ not having of them, if God spare me life. And wheras you say y^e^ 6. years are expired y^t^ y^e^ peopl put y^e^ trad into your & our hands for, for y^e^ discharge of y^t^ great debte w^ch^ M^r^. Allerton needlesly & unadvisedly ran you & us into; yet it was promised it should continue till our disbursments & in-

gagements were satisfied. You conceive it is done; we feele & know other wise, &c. I doubt not but we shall lovingly agree, notwithstanding all y^t^ hath been writen, on boath sids, aboute y^e^ Whit-Angell. We have now sent you a letter of atturney, therby giving you power in our names (and to shadow it y^e^ more we say for our uses) to obtaine what may be of M^r^. Allerton towards y^e^ satisfing of that great charge of y^e^ White Angell. And sure he hath bound him selfe, (though at present I cannot find it,) but he hath often affirmed, with great protestations, y^t^ neither you nor we should lose a peny by him, and I hope you shall find enough to discharg it, so as we shall have no more contesting aboute it. Yet, notwithstanding his unnaturall & unkind dealing with you, in y^e^ midest of justice remember mercie, and doe not all you may doe, &c. Set us out of debte, and then let us recone & reason togeither, &c. M^r^. Winslow hath undergone an unkind imprisonment, but I am perswaded it will turne much to all your good. I leave him to relate perticuleres, &c.

Your loving freind,

James Sherley.

London, Sep: 7. 1635.

This year they sustained an other great loss from y^e^ French. Monsier de Aulnay coming into y^e^ harbore of Penobscote, and having before gott some of y^e^ cheefe y^t^ belonged to y^e^ house abord his vessell, by sutlty coming upon them in their shalop, he gott them to pilote him in; and after getting y^e^ rest into his power, he tooke possession of y^e^ house in y^e^ name of y^e^ king of France; and partly by threatening, & other wise, made Mr. Willett (their agente ther) to approve of

y^e^ sale of y^e^ goods their unto him, of which he sett y^e^ price him selfe [208] in effecte, and made an inventory therof, (yett leaving out sundry things,) but made no paymente for them; but tould them in convenient time he would doe it if they came for it. For y^e^ house & fortification, &c. he would not alow, nor accounte any thing, saing that they which build on another mans ground doe forfite y^e^ same. So thus turning them out of all, (with a great deale of complemente, and many fine words,) he let them have their shalop and some victualls to bring them home. Coming home and relating all the passages, they here were much troubled at it, & haveing had this house robbed by y^e^ French once before, and lost then above 500^li^. (as is before remembred), and now to loose house & all, did much move them. So as they resolved to consulte with their freinds in y^e^ Bay, and if y^ey^ approved of it, (ther being now many ships ther,) they intended to hire a ship of force, and seeke to beat out y^e^ Frenche, and recover it againe. Ther course was well approved on, if them selves could bear y^e^ charge; so they hired a fair ship of above 300. tune, well fitted with ordnance, and agreed with y^e^ m^r^. (one Girling) to this effect: that he and his company should deliver them y^e^ house, (after they had driven out, or surprised y^e^ French,) and give them peacable possession therof, and of all such trading comodities as should ther be found; and give y^e^

French fair quarter & usage, if they would yeeld. In consideration wherof he was to have 700ᵗᵘ. of beaver, to be delivered him ther, when he had done yᵉ thing; but if he did not accomplish it, he was to loose his labour, and have nothing. With him they also sent their owne bark, and about 20. men, with Captaine Standish, to aide him (if neede weer), and to order things, if the house was regained; and then to pay him yᵉ beaver, which they keept abord their owne barke. So they with their bark piloted him thither, and brought him safe into yᵉ harbor. But he was so rash & heady as he would take no advice, nor would suffer Captaine Standish to have time to summone them, (who had cōmission & order so to doe,) neither would doe it him selfe; the which, it was like, if it had been done, & they come to affaire parley, seeing their force, they would have yeelded. Neither would he have patience to bring his ship wher she might doe execution, but begane to shoot at distance like a madd man, and did them no hurte at all; the which when those of yᵉ plantation saw, they were much greeved, and went to him & tould him he would doe no good if he did not lay his ship beter to pass (for she might lye within pistoll shott of yᵉ house). At last, when he saw his owne folly, he was perswaded, and layed her well, and bestowed a few shott to good purposs. But now, when he was in a way to doe some good, his powder was goone; for though he had

. . * peece of ordnance, it did now [209] appeare he had but a barrell of powder, and a peece; so he could doe no good, but was faine to draw of againe; by which means y^e^ enterprise was made frustrate, and y^e^ French incouraged; for all y^e^ while that he shot so unadvisedly, they lay close under a worke of earth, & let him consume him selfe. He advised with y^e^ Captaine how he might be supplyed with powder, for he had not to carie him home; so he tould him he would goe to y^e^ next plantation, and doe his indeour to procure him some, and so did; but understanding, by intelligence, that he intended to ceiase on y^e^ barke, & surprise y^e^ beaver, he sent him the powder, and brought y^e^ barke & beaver home. But Girling never assualted y^e^ place more, (seeing him selfe disapoyented,) but went his way; and this was y^e^ end of this bussines.

Upon y^e^ ill success of this bussines, the Gov^r^ and Assistants here by their leters certified their freinds in y^e^ Bay, how by this ship they had been abused and disapoynted, and y^t^ the French partly had, and were now likly to fortifie them selves more strongly, and likly to become ill neigbours to y^e^ English. Upon this they thus writ to them as followeth: —

Worthy S^rs^: Upon y^e^ reading of your leters, & consideration of y^e^ waightines of y^e^ cause therin mentioned, the

* Blank in the original.

courte hath joyntly expressed their willingnes to assist you with men & munition, for y^e^ accomplishing of your desires upon y^e^ French. But because here are none of yours y^t^ have authority to conclude of any thing herein, nothing can be done by us for y^e^ presente. We desire, therfore, that you would with all conveniente speed send some man of trust, furnished with instructions from your selves, to make such agreemente with us about this bussines as may be usefull for you, and equall for us. So in hast we comite you to God, and remaine

Your assured loving freinds,

John Haynes, Gov^r^.
Ri: Bellingham, Dep.
Jo: Winthrop.
Tho: Dudley.
Jo: Humfray.
W^m^: Coddington.
W^m^: Pinchon.
Atherton Houghe.
Increas Nowell.
Ric: Dumer.
Simon Bradstrete.

New-towne, Octo^r^ 9. 1635.

Upon the receite of y^e^ above mentioned, they presently deputed 2. of theirs to treate with them, giving them full power to conclude, according to the instructions they gave them, being to this purposs: that if they would afford such assistance as, togeather with their owne, was like to effecte the thing, and allso bear a considerable parte of y^e^ charge, they would goe on; if not, [210] they (having lost so much allready)

should not be able, but must desiste, and waite further opportunitie as God should give, to help them selves. But this came to nothing, for when it came to y^e^ issue, they would be at no charge, but sente them this letter, and referd them more at large to their owne messengers.

S^r^: Having, upon y^e^ consideration of your letter, with y^e^ message you sente, had some serious consultations aboute y^e^ great importance of your bussines with y^e^ French, we gave our answer to those whom you deputed to conferr w^th^ us aboute y^e^ viage to Penobscote. We shewed our willingnes to help, but withall we declared our presente condition, & in what state we were, for our abilitie to help; which we for our parts shall be willing to improve, to procure you sufficiente supply of men & munition. But for matter of moneys we have no authority at all to promise, and if we should, we should rather disapoynte you, then incourage you by y^t^ help, which we are not able to performe. We likewise thought it fitt to take y^e^ help of other Esterne plantations; but those things we leave to your owne wisdomes. And for other things we refer you to your owne comitties, who are able to relate all y^e^ passages more at large. We salute you, & wish you all good success in y^e^ Lord.

Your faithfull & loving friend,

RI: BELLINGHAM, Dep:

In y^e^ name of y^e^ rest of the Comities.

Boston, Octob^r^ 16. 1635.

This thing did not only thus breake of, but some of their merchants shortly after sent to trad with them, and furnished them both with provissions, &

poweder & shott; and so have continued to doe till this day, as they have seen opportunitie for their profite. So as in truth y^e^ English them selves have been the cheefest supporters of these French; for besids these, the plantation at Pemaquid (which lyes near unto them) doth not only supply them with what y^ey^ wante, but gives them continuall intelligence of all things that passes among y^e^ English, (espetially some of them,) so as it is no marvell though they still grow, & incroach more & more upon y^e^ English, and fill y^e^ Indeans with gunes & munishtion, to y^e^ great deanger of y^e^ English, who lye open & unfortified, living upon husbandrie; and y^e^ other closed up in their forts, well fortified, and live upon trade, in good securitie. If these things be not looked too, and remeady provided in time, it may easily be conjectured what they may come toe; but I leave them.

This year, y^e^ 14. or 15. of August (being Saturday) was such a mighty storme of wind & raine, as none living in these parts, either English or Indeans, ever saw. Being like (for y^e^ time it continued) to those Hauricanes and Tuffons that writers make mention of in y^e^ Indeas. It began in y^e^ morning, a litle before day, and grue not by degrees, but came with violence in y^e^ begining, to y^e^ great amasmente of many. It blew downe sundry [211] houses, & uncovered others; diverce vessells were lost at sea, and many more in extreme danger. It caused y^e^ sea to swell (to y^e^ south-

ward of this place) above 20. foote, right up & downe, and made many of the Indeans to clime into trees for their saftie; it tooke of y^e^ borded roofe of a house which belonged to the plantation at Manamet, and floted it to another place, the posts still standing in y^e^ ground; and if it had continued long without y^e^ shifting of y^e^ wind, it is like it would have drouned some parte of y^e^ cuntrie. It blew downe many hundered thowsands of trees, turning up the stronger by the roots, and breaking the hiegher pine trees of in the midle, and y^e^ tall yonge oaks & walnut trees of good biggnes were wound like a withe, very strang & fearfull to behould. It begane in y^e^ southeast, and parted toward y^e^ south & east, and vered sundry ways; but y^e^ greatest force of it here was from y^e^ former quarters. It continued not (in y^e^ extremitie) above 5. or 6. houers, but y^e^ violence begane to abate. The signes and marks of it will remaine this 100. years in these parts wher it was sorest. The moone suffered a great eclips the 2. night after it.

Some of their neighbours in y^e^ Bay, hereing of y^e^ fame of Conightecute River, had a hankering mind after it, (as was before noted,) and now understanding that y^e^ Indeans were swepte away with y^e^ late great mortalitie, the fear of whom was an obstacle unto them before, which being now taken away, they begane now to prosecute it with great egernes. The greatest differances fell betweene those of Dorchester

plantation and them hear; for they set their minde on that place, which they had not only purchased of y^e^ Indeans, but wher they had builte; intending only (if they could not remove them) that they should have but a smale moyety left to y^e^ house, as to a single family; whose doings and proceedings were conceived to be very injurious, to attempte not only to intrude them selves into y^e^ rights & possessions of others, but in effect to thrust them out of all. Many were y^e^ leters & passages that went betweene them hear aboute, which would be to long here to relate.

I shall here first inserte a few lines that was write by their own agente from thence.

S^r^: &c. Y^e^ Masschuset men are coming almost dayly, some by water, & some by land, who are not yet determined wher to setle, though some have a great mind to y^e^ place we are upon, and which was last bought. Many of them look at that which this river will not afford, excepte it be at this place which we have, namly, to be a great towne, and have comodious dwellings for many togeather. So as what they will doe I cannot yet resolve you; for this place ther is none of them say any thing to me, but what I hear from their servants (by whom I perceive their minds). I shall doe what I can to withstand them. I hope they will hear reason; as that we were here first, and entred with much difficulty and danger, [212] both in regard of y^e^ Dutch & Indeans, and bought y^e^ land, (to your great charge, allready disbursed,) and have since held here a chargable possession, and kept y^e^ Dutch from further incroaching, which would els long before this day have possessed all, and kept out all others, &c.

I hope these & such like arguments will stoppe them. It was your will we should use their persons & messengers kindly, & so we have done, and doe dayly, to your great charge; for y^e^ first company had well nie starved had it not been for this house, for want of victuals; I being forced to supply 12. men for 9. days togeather; and those which came last, I entertained the best we could, helping both them (& y^e^ other) with canows, & guids. They gott me to goe with them to y^e^ Dutch, to see if I could procure some of them to have quiet setling nere them; but they did peremtorily withstand them. But this later company did not once speak therof, &c. Also I gave their goods house roome according to their ernest request, and M^r^. Pinchons letter in their behalfe (which I thought good to send you, here inclosed). And what trouble & charge I shall be further at I know not; for they are coming dayly, and I expecte these back againe from below, whither they are gone to veiw y^e^ countrie. All which trouble & charg we under goe for their occasion, may give us just cause (in y^e^ judgmente of all wise & understanding men) to hold and keep that we are setled upon. Thus with my duty remembred, &c. I rest

Yours to be comanded

JOHNNATHA BREWSTER.

Matianuck, July 6. 1635.

Amongst y^e^ many agitations that pased betweene them, I shal note a few out of their last letters, & for y^e^ present omitte y^e^ rest, except upon other occasion I may have fitter opportunity. After their thorrow veiw of y^e^ place, they began to pitch them selves upon their land & near their house; which occasioned much expostulation betweene them. Some of which are such as follow.

Brethren, having latly sent 2. of our body unto you, to agitate & bring to an issue some maters in difference betweene us, about some lands at Conightecutt, unto which you lay challeng; upon which God by his providence cast us, and as we conceive in a faire way of providence tendered it to us, as a meete place to receive our body, now upon removall.

We shall not need to answer all y^e^ passages of your larg letter, &c. But wheras you say God in his providence cast you, &c., we tould you before, and (upon this occasion) must now tell you still, that our mind is other wise, and y^t^ you cast rather a partiall, if not a covetous eye, upon that w^ch^ is your neigbours, and not yours; and in so doing, your way could not be faire unto it. Looke y^t^ you abuse not Gods providence in such allegations.

Theirs.

Now allbeite we at first judged y^e^ place so free y^t^ we might with Gods good leave take & use it, without just offence to any man, it being the Lords [213] wast, and for y^e^ presente altogeather voyd of inhabitants, that indeede minded y^e^ imployemente therof, to y^e^ right ends for which land was created, Gen: 1. 28. and for future intentions of any, & uncertaine possibilities of this or that to be done by any, we judging them (in such a case as ours espetialy) not meete to be equalled with presente actions (such as ours was) much less worthy to be prefered before them; and therfore did we make some weake beginings in that good worke, in y^e^ place afforesaid.

Ans: Their answer was to this effecte. That if it was y^e^ Lords wast, it was them selves that found it so, & not they; and have since bought it of y^e^ right

oweners, and maintained a chargable possession upon it al this while, as them selves could not but know. And because of present ingagments and other hinderances which lay at presente upon them, must it therfore be lawfull for them to goe and take it from them? It was well known that they are upon a barren place, wher they were by necessitie cast; and neither they nor theirs could longe continue upon y^e^ same; and why should they (because they were more ready, & more able at presente) goe and deprive them of that which they had w^th^ charg & hazard provided, & intended to remove to, as soone as they could & were able?

They had another passage in their letter; they had rather have to doe with the lords in England, to whom (as they heard it reported) some of them should say that they had rather give up their right to them, (if they must part with it,) then to y^e^ church of Dorchester, &c. And that they should be less fearfull to offend y^e^ lords, then they were them.

Ans: Their answer was, that what soever they had heard, (more then was true,) yet y^e^ case was not so with them that they had need to give away their rights & adventurs, either to y^e^ lords, or them; yet, if they might measure their fear of offence by their practise, they had rather (in that poynte) they should deal with y^e^ lords, who were beter able to bear it, or help them selves, then they were.

But least I should be teadious, I will forbear other things, and come to the conclusion that was made in y^e^ endd. To make any forcible resistance was farr from their thoughts, (they had enough of y^t^ about Kenebeck,) and to live in continuall contention with their freinds & brethren would be uncomfortable, and too heavie a burden to bear. Therfore for peace sake (though they conceived they suffered much in this thing) they thought it better to let them have it upon as good termes as they could gett; and so they fell to treaty. The first thing y^t^ (because they had made so many & long disputs aboute it) they would have them to grante was, y^t^ they had right too it, or ells they would never treat aboute it. The * which being acknowledged, & yeelded unto by them, this was y^e^ conclusion they came unto in y^e^ end after much adoe: that they should retaine their house, and have the 16. parte of all they had bought of y^e^ Indeans; and y^e^ other should have all y^e^ rest of y^e^ land; leaveing such a moyety to those [214] of New-towne, as they reserved for them. This 16. part was to be taken in too places; one towards y^e^ house, the other towards Newtownes proporrtion. Also they were to pay according to proportion, what had been disbursed to y^e^ Indeans for y^e^ purchass. Thus was y^e^ controversie ended, but the unkindnes not so soone forgotten. They of Newtowne delt more fairly, desireing only what they could

* *They* in MS.

conveniently spare, from a competancie reserved for a plantation, for them selves; which made them the more carfull to procure a moyety for them, in this agreement & distribution.

Amongst y^e^ other bussinesses that M^r^. Winslow had to doe in England, he had order from y^e^ church to provid & bring over some able & fitt man for to be their minister. And accordingly he had procured a godly and a worthy * man, one M^r^. Glover; but it pleased God when he was prepared for the viage, he fell sick of a feaver and dyed. Afterwards, when he was ready to come away, he became acquainted with M^r^. Norton, who was willing to come over, but would not ingage him selfe to this place, otherwise then he should see occasion when he came hear; and if he liked better else wher, to repay y^e^ charge laid out for him, (which came to aboute 70^li^.) and to be at his liberty. He stayed aboute a year with them, after he came over, and was well liked of them, & much desired by them; but he was invited to Ipswich, wher were many rich & able men, and sundry of his aquaintance; so he wente to them, & is their minister. Aboute half of y^e^ charg was repayed, y^e^ rest he had for y^e^ pains he tooke amongst them.

* Before this word in the margin appears a capital *N*.

Anno Dom: 1636.

Mr. Ed: Winslow was chosen Govr this year.

In ye former year, because they perceived by Mr. Winslows later letters that no accounts would be sente, they resolved to keep ye beaver, and send no more, till they had them, or came to some further agreemente. At least they would forbear till Mr. Winslow came over, that by more full conferance with him they might better understand what was meete to be done. But when he came, though he brought no accounts, yet he perswaded them to send ye beaver, & was confident upon ye receite of yt beaver, & his letters, they should have accounts ye nexte year; and though they thought his grounds but weake, that gave him this hope, & made him so confidente, yet by his importunitie they yeelded, & sente ye same, ther being a ship at ye latter end of year, by whom they sente 1150li. waight of beaver, and 200. otter skins, besids sundrie small furrs, as 55. minks, 2. black foxe skins, &c. And this year, in ye spring, came in a Dutch man, who thought to have traded at ye Dutch-forte; [215] but they would not suffer him. He, having good store of trading goods, came to this place, & tendred them to sell; of whom they bought a good quantitie, they being very good & fitte for their turne, as Dutch roll, ketles, &c., which goods amounted to ye valew of 500li., for ye paymente of which they passed

bills to Mr. Sherley in England, having before sente ye forementioned parcell of beaver. And now this year (by another ship) sente an other good round parcell that might come to his hands, & be sould before any of these bills should be due. The quantity of beaver now sent was 1809li. waight, and of otters 10. skins, and shortly after (ye same year) was sent by another ship (Mr. Langrume maister), in beaver 0719li. waight, and of otter skins 199. concerning which Mr. Sherley thus writs.

Your leters I have received, with 8. hoggsheads of beaver by Ed: Wilkinson, mr. of ye Falcon. Blessed be God for ye safe coming of it. I have also seen & acceped 3. bills of exchainge, &c. But I must now acquainte you how the Lords heavie hand is upon this kingdom in many places, but cheefly in this cittie, with his judgmente of ye plague. The last weeks bill was 1200. & odd, I fear this will be more; and it is much feared it will be a winter sicknes. By reason wherof it is incredible ye number of people yt are gone into ye cuntry & left ye citie. I am perswaded many more then went out ye last sicknes; so as here is no trading, carriors from most places put downe; nor no receiving of any money, though long due. Mr. Hall ows us more then would pay these bills, but he, his wife, and all, are in ye cuntrie, 60. miles from London. I write to him, he came up, but could not pay us. I am perswaded if I should offer to sell ye beaver at 8s. pr pound, it would not yeeld money; but when ye Lord shall please to cease his hand, I hope we shall have better & quicker markets; so it shall lye by. Before I accepted ye bills, I acquainted Mr. Beachamp & Mr. Andrews with them, & how ther could be no money made nor

received; and that it would be a great discredite to you, which never yet had any turned back, and a shame to us, haveing 1800li. of beaver lying by us, and more oweing then ye bills come too, &c. But all was nothing; neither of them both will put too their finger to help. I offered to supply my 3. parte, but they gave me their answer they neither would nor could, &c. How ever, your bils shall be satisfied to ye parties good contente; but I would not have thought they would have left either you or me at this time, &c. You will and may expect I should write more, & answer your leters, but I am not a day in ye weeke at home at towne, but carry my books & all to Clapham; for here is ye miserablest time yt I thinke hath been known in many ages. I have knowñ 3. great sickneses, but none like this. And that which should be a means to pacifie ye Lord, & help us, that is taken away, preaching put downe in many places, not a sermone in Westminster on ye saboth, nor in many townes aboute us; ye Lord in mercie looke uppon us. In ye begining of ye year was a great [216] drought, & no raine for many weeks togeather, so as all was burnte up, haye, at 5li. a load; and now all raine, so as much sommer corne & later haye is spoyled. Thus ye Lord sends judgmente after judgmente, and yet we cannot see, nor humble our selves; and therfore may justly fear heavier judgments, unless we speedyly repente, & returne unto him, which ye Lord give us grace to doe, if it be his blessed will. Thus desiring you to remember us in your prayers, I ever rest Your loving friend,

James Sherley.

Sept: 14. 1636.

This was all ye answer they had from Mr. Sherley, by which Mr. Winslow saw his hops failed him. So they now resoloved to send no more beaver in yt way

which they had done, till they came to some issue or other aboute these things. But now came over letters from Mr. Andrews & Mr. Beachamp full of complaints, that they marveled yt nothing was sent over, by which any of their moneys should be payed in; for it did appear by ye accounte sente in Anº 1631. that they were each of them out, aboute a leven hundered pounds a peece, and all this while had not received one penie towards ye same. But now Mr. Sherley sought to draw more money from them, and was offended because they deneyed him; and blamed them hear very much that all was sent to Mr. Sherley, & nothing to them. They marvelled much at this, for they conceived that much of their moneis had been paid in, & yt yearly each of them had received a proportionable quantity out of ye larg returnes sent home. For they had sente home since yt accounte was received in Anº 1631. (in which all & more then all their debts, wth yt years supply, was charged upon them) these sumes following.

Novbr 18.	Anº 1631.	By Mr. Peirce	0400li.	waight of beaver, & otters	20.
July 13.	Anº 1632.	By Mr. Griffin	1348li.	beaver, & otters . .	147.
	Anº 1633.	By Mr. Graves	3366li.	bever, & otters . .	346.
	Anº 1634.	By Mr. Andrews	3738li.	beaver, & otters . .	234.
	Anº 1635.	By Mr. Babb	1150li.	beaver, & otters . .	200.
June 24.	Anº 1636.	By Mr. Willkinson	1809li.	beaver, & otters . .	010.
	Ibidem.	By Mr. Langrume	0719li.	beaver, & otters . .	199.
			12150li.*		1156.

* Not correctly cast; it should be 12530li.

All these sumes were safly rceived & well sould, as appears by leters. The coat beaver usualy at 20^{s}. p^{r} pound, and some at 24^{s}.; the skin at 15. & sometimes 16. I doe not remember any under 14. It may be y^{e} last year might be something lower, so also ther were some small furrs that are not recconed in this accounte, & some black beaver at higer rates, to make up y^{e} defects. [217] It was conceived that y^{e} former parcells of beaver came to litle less then 10000^{li}. sterling, and y^{e} otter skins would pay all y^{e} charge, & they wth other furrs make up besids if any thing wanted of y^{e} former sume. When y^{e} former accounte was passed, all their debts (those of White-Angelle & Frendship included) came but to 4770^{li}. And they could not estimate that all y^{e} supplies since sent them, & bills payed for them, could come to above 2000^{li}. so as they conceived their debts had been payed, with advantage or intrest. But it may be objected, how comes it that they could not as well exactly sett downe their receits, as their returnes, but thus estimate it. I answer, 2. things were y^{e} cause of it; the first & principall was, that y^{e} new accountante, which they in England would needs presse upon them, did wholy faile them, & could never give them any accounte; but trusting to his memorie, & lose papers, let things rune into such confusion, that neither he, nor any with him, could bring things to rights. But being often called upon to perfecte his

accounts, he desired to have such a time, and such a time of leasure, and he would doe it. In y^e^ intrime he fell into a great sicknes, and in conclusion it fell out he could make no accounte at all. His books were after a litle good begining left altogeather unperfect; and his papers, some were lost, & others so confused, as he knew not what to make of them him selfe, when they came to be searched & examined. This was not unknowne to M^r^. Sherley; and they came to smarte for it to purposs, (though it was not their faulte,) both thus in England, and also here; for they conceived they lost some hundreds of pounds for goods trusted out in y^e^ place, which were lost for want of clear accounts to call them in. Another reason of this mischeefe was, that after M^r^. Winslow was sente into England to demand accounts, and to excepte against y^e^ Whit-Angell, they never had any price sent with their goods, nor any certaine invoyce of them; but all things stood in confusion, and they were faine to guesse at y^e^ prises of them.

They write back to M^r^. Andrews & M^r^. Beachamp, and tould them they marveled they should write they had sent nothing home since y^e^ last accounts; for they had sente a great deale; and it might rather be marveled how they could be able to send so much, besids defraying all charg at home, and what they had lost by the French, and so much cast away at sea, when M^r^. Peirce lost his ship on y^e^ coast of Vir-

ginia. What they had sente was to them all, and to them selves as well as M^r^. Sherley, and if they did not looke after it, it was their owne falts; they must referr them to M^r^. Sherley, who had received [218] it, to demand it of him. They allso write to M^r^. Sherley to y^e^ same purposs, and what the others complaints were.

This year 2. shallops going to Coonigtecutt with goods from y^e^ Massachusetts of such as removed theither to plante, were in an easterly storme cast away in coming into this harbore in y^e^ night; the boats men were lost, and y^e^ goods were driven all alonge y^e^ shore, and strowed up & downe at high-water marke. But y^e^ Gov^r^ caused them to be gathered up, and drawn togeather, and appointed some to take an inventory of them, and others to wash & drie such things as had neede therof; by which means most of y^e^ goods were saved, and restored to y^e^ owners. Afterwards anotheir boate of theirs (going thither likwise) was cast away near unto Manoanscusett, and such goods as came a shore were preserved for them. Such crosses they mette with in their beginings; which some imputed as a correction from God for their intrution (to y^e^ wrong of others) into y^t^ place. But I dare not be bould with Gods judgments in this kind.

In y^e^ year 1634, the Pequents (a stoute and warlike people), who had made warrs with sundry of

their neigbours, and puft up with many victories, grue now at varience with y^e^ Narigansets, a great people bordering upon them. These Narigansets held correspondance and termes of freindship with y^e^ English of y^e^ Massachusetts. Now y^e^ Pequents, being conscious of y^e^ guilte of Captain-Stones death, whom they knew to be an-English man, as also those y^t^ were with him, and being fallen out with y^e^ Dutch, least they should have over many enemies at once, sought to make freindship with y^e^ English of y^e^ Massachusetts; and for y^t^ end sent both messengers & gifts unto them, as appears by some letters sent from y^e^ Gov^r^ hither.

Dear & worthy S^r^: &c. To let you know somwhat of our affairs, you may understand that y^e^ Pequents have sent some of theirs to us, to desire our freindship, and offered much wampam & beaver, &c. The first messengers were dismissed without answer; with y^e^ next we had diverce dayes conferance, and taking y^e^ advice of some of our ministers, and seeking the Lord in it, we concluded a peace & freindship with them, upon these conditions: that they should deliver up to us those men who were guilty of Stones death, &c. And if we desired to plant in Conightecute, they should give up their right to us, and so we would send to trade with them as our freinds (which was y^e^ cheefe thing we aimed at, being now in warr with y^e^ Dutch and y^e^ rest of their neigbours). To this they readily agreed; and that we should meadiate a peace betweene them and the Narigansetts; for which end they were contente we should give the Narigansets parte of y^t^ presente, they would bestow on us

(for they stood [219] * so much on their honour, as they would not be seen to give any thing of them selves). As for Captein Stone, they tould us ther were but 2. left of those who had any hand in his death; and that they killed him in a just quarell, for (say they) he surprised 2. of our men, and bound them, to make them by force to shew him y^e^ way up y^e^ river; † and he with 2. other coming on shore, 9. Indeans watched him, and when they were a sleepe in y^e^ night, they kiled them, to deliver their owne men; and some of them going afterwards to y^e^ pinass, it was suddainly blowne up. We are now preparing to send a pinass unto them, &c.

In an other of his, dated y^e^ 12. of y^e^ first month, he hath this.

Our pinass is latly returned from y^e^ Pequents; they put of but litle comoditie, and found them a very false people, so as they mean to have no more to doe with them. I have diverce other things to write unto you, &c.

Yours ever assured,

Jo: Winthrop.

Boston, 12. of y^e^ 1. month, 1634.

After these things, and, as I take, this year, John Oldom, (of whom much is spoken before,) being now an inhabitant of y^e^ Massachusetts, went w^th^ a small vessell, & slenderly mand, a trading into these south parts, and upon a quarell betweene him & y^e^ Indeans was cutt of by them (as hath been before noted) at an iland called by y^e^ Indeans Munisses, but since by

* 119 in MS.

† Ther is litle trust to be given to their relations in these things.

y^e^ English Block Iland. This, with y^e^ former about the death of Stone, and the baffoyling of y^e^ Pequents with y^e^ English of y^e^ Massachusetts, moved them to set out some to take revenge, and require satisfaction for these wrongs; but it was done so superfitially, and without their acquainting of those of Conightecute & other neighbours with y^e^ same, as they did litle good. But their neigbours had more hurt done, for some of y^e^ murderers of Oldome fled to y^e^ Pequents, and though the English went to y^e^ Pequents, and had some parley with them, yet they did but delude them, & y^e^ English returned without doing any thing to purpose, being frustrate of their oppertunitie by y^e^ others deceite. After y^e^ English were returned, the Pequents tooke their time and oppertunitie to cut of some of y^e^ English as they passed in boats, and went on fouling, and assaulted them the next spring at their habytations, as will appear in its place. I doe but touch these things, because I make no question they will be more fully & distinctly handled by them selves, who had more exacte knowledg of them, and whom they did more properly concerne.

This year M^r^. Smith layed downe his place of ministrie, partly by his owne willingnes, as thinking it too heavie a burthen, and partly at the desire, and by y^e^ perswasion, of others; and the church sought out for [220] * some other, having often been disap-

* 120 in MS.

pointed in their hops and desires heretofore. And it pleased the Lord to send them an able and a godly man,* and of a meeke and humble spirite, sound in y^e^ truth, and every way unreproveable in his life & conversation; whom, after some time of triall, they chose for their teacher, the fruits of whose labours they injoyed many years with much comforte, in peace, & good agreemente.

Anno Dom: 1637.

In y^e^ fore parte of this year, the Pequents fell openly upon y^e^ English at Conightecute, in y^e^ lower parts of y^e^ river, and slew sundry of them, (as they were at work in y^e^ feilds,) both men & women, to y^e^ great terrour of y^e^ rest; and wente away in great prid & triumph, with many high threats. They allso assalted a fort at y^e^ rivers mouth, though strong and well defended; and though they did not their prevaile, yet it struk them with much fear & astonishmente to see their bould attempts in the face of danger; which made them in all places to stand upon their gard, and to prepare for resistance, and ernestly to solissite their freinds and confederats in y^e^ Bay of Massachusets to send them speedy aide, for they looked for more forcible assaults. M^r^. Vane, being then Gov^r^, write from their Generall Courte to them hear, to joyne with them in this warr; to

* Mr. John Reinor.

which they were cordially willing, but tooke opportunitie to write to them aboute some former things, as well as presente, considerable hereaboute. The which will best appear in y^e^ Gov^r^ answer which he returned to y^e^ same, which I shall here inserte.

S^r^: The Lord having so disposed, as that your letters to our late Gov^r^ is fallen to my lott to make answer unto, I could have wished I might have been at more freedome of time & thoughts also, that I might have done it more to your & my owne satisfaction. But what shall be wanting now may be supplyed hereafter. For y^e^ matters which from your selfe & counsell were propounded & objected to us, we thought not fitte to make them so publicke as y^e^ cognizance of our Generall Courte. But as they have been considered by those of our counsell, this answer we thinke fitt to returne unto you. (1.) Wereas you signifie your willingnes to joyne with us in this warr against y^e^ Pequents, though you cannot ingage your selves without y^e^ consente of your Generall Courte, we acknowledg your good affection towards us, (which we never had cause to doubt of,) and are willing to attend your full resolution, when it may most seasonably be ripened. (2^ly^.) Wheras you make this warr to be our peopls, and not [221] to conceirne your selves, otherwise then by consequence, we do in parte consente to you therin; yet we suppose, that, in case of perill, you will not stand upon such terms, as we hope we should not doe towards you; and withall we conceive that you looke at y^e^ Pequents, and all other Indeans, as a comone enimie, who, though he may take occasion of y^e^ begining of his rage, from some one parte of y^e^ English, yet if he prevaile, will surly pursue his advantage, to y^e^ rooting out of y^e^ whole nation. Therfore when we desired your help, we did it not without

respecte to your owne saftie, as ours. (3^{ly}.) Wheras you desire we should be ingaged to aide you, upon all like occasions; we are perswaded you doe not doubte of it; yet as we now deale with you as a free people, and at libertie, so as we cannot draw you into this warr with us, otherwise then as reason may guid & provock you; so we desire we may be at y^{e} like freedome, when any occasion may call for help from us. And wheras it is objected to us, that we refused to aide you against y^{e} French; we conceive y^{e} case was not alicke; yet we cannot wholy excuse our failing in that matter. (4^{ly}.) Weras you objecte that we began y^{e} warr without your privitie, & managed it contrary to your advise; the truth is, that our first intentions being only against Block Iland, and y^{e} interprice seeming of small difficultie, we did not so much as consider of taking advice, or looking out for aide abroad. And when we had resolved upon y^{e} Pequents, we sent presently, or not long after, to you aboute it; but y^{e} answer received, it was not seasonable for us to chaing our counsells, excepte we had seen and waighed your grounds, which might have out wayed our owne.

(5^{ly}.) For our peoples trading at Kenebeck, we assure you (to our knowledge) it hath not been by any allowance from us; and what we have provided in this and like cases, at our last Courte, M^{r}. E. W. can certifie you.

And (6^{ly}); wheras you objecte to us y^{t} we should hold trade & correspondancie with y^{e} French, your enemise; we answer, you are misinformed, for, besids some letters which hath passed betweene our late Gov^{r} and them, to which we were privie, we have neither sente nor incouraged ours to trade with them; only one vessell or tow, for y^{e} better conveãce of our letters, had licens from our Gov^{r} to sayle thither.*

* But by this means they did furnish them, & have still continued to doe.

Diverce other things have been privatly objected to us, by our worthy freind, wherunto he received some answer; but most of them concerning y^e^ apprehention of perticuler discurteseis, or injueries from some perticuler persons amongst us. It concernes us not to give any other answer to them then this; that, if y^e^ offenders shall be brought forth in a right way, we shall be ready to doe justice as y^e^ case shall require. In the meane time, we desire you to rest assured, that such things are without our privity, and not a litle greeveous to us.

Now for y^e^ joyning with us in this warr, which indeed concerns us no other wise then it may your selves, viz.: the releeving of our freinds & Christian [222] breethren, who are now first in y^e^ danger; though you may thinke us able to make it good without you, (as, if y^e^ Lord please to be with us, we may,) yet 3. things we offer to your consideration, which (we conceive) may have some waight with you. (First) y^t^ if we should sinck under this burden, your opportunitie of seasonable help would be lost in 3. respects. 1. You cannot recover us, or secure your selves ther, with 3. times y^e^ charge & hazard which now y^e^ may. 2^ly^. The sorrowes which we should lye under (if through your neglect) would much abate of y^e^ acceptablenes of your help afterwards. 3^ly^. Those of yours, who are now full of courage and forwardnes, would be much damped, and so less able to undergoe so great a burden. The (2.) thing is this, that it concernes us much to hasten this warr to an end before y^e^ end of this somer, otherwise y^e^ newes of it will discourage both your & our freinds from coming to us next year; with what further hazard & losse it may expose us unto, your selves may judge.

The (3.) thing is this, that if y^e^ Lord shall please to blesse our endeaours, so as we end y^e^ warr, or put it in a hopefull way without you, it may breed such ill thoughts in our people towards yours, as will be hard to entertaine

such opinione of your good will towards us, as were fitt to be nurished among such neigbours & brethren as we are. And what ill consequences may follow, on both sids, wise men may fear, & would rather prevente then hope to redress. So with my harty salutations to you selfe, and all your counsell, and other our good freinds with you, I rest

Yours most assured in y^e^ Lord,

Jo: Winthrop.

Boston, y^e^ 20. of y^e^ 3. month, 1637.

In y^e^ mean time, the Pequents, espetially in y^e^ winter before, sought to make peace with y^e^ Narigansets, and used very pernicious arguments to move them therunto: as that y^e^ English were stranegers and begane to overspred their countrïe, and would deprive them therof in time, if they were suffered to grow & increse; and if y^e^ Narigansets did assist y^e^ English to subdue them, they did but make way for their owne overthrow, for if they were rooted out, the English would soone take occasion to subjugate them; and if they would harken to them, they should not neede to fear y^e^ strength of y^e^ English; for they would not come to open battle with them, but fire their houses, kill their katle, and lye in ambush for them as they went abroad upon their occasions; and all this they might easily doe without any or litle danger to them selves. The which course being held, they well saw the English could not long subsiste, but they would either be starved with hunger, or be forced to forsake the countrie; with many y^e^ like things; in-

somuch that y^e^ Narigansets were once wavering, and were halfe minded to have made peace with them, and joȳed against y^e^ English. But againe when they considered, how much wrong they had received from the Pequents, and what an oppertunitie they now had by y^e^ help of y^e^ English to right them selves, revenge was so sweete unto them, as it prevailed above all y^e^ rest; so as they resolved to joyne with y^e^ English against them, & did. [223] The Court here agreed forwith to send 50. men at their owne charg; and w^th^ as much speed as posiblie they could, gott them armed, and had made them ready under sufficiente leaders, and provided a barke to carrie them provisions & tend upon them for all occasions; but when they were ready to march (with a supply from y^e^ Bay) they had word to stay, for y^e^ enimy was as good as vanquished, and their would be no neede.

I shall not take upon me exactly to describe their proceedings in these things, because I expecte it will be fully done by them selves, who best know the carrage & circumstances of things; I shall therfore but touch them in generall. From Connightecute (who were most sencible of y^e^ hurt sustained, & y^e^ present danger), they sett out a partie of men, and an other partie mett them from y^e^ Bay, at y^e^ Narigansets, who were to joyne with them. Y^e^ Narigansets were ernest to be gone before y^e^ English were well rested and refreshte, espetially some of them which came last.

It should seeme their desire was to come upon y^e^ enemie sudenly, & undiscovered. Ther was a barke of this place, newly put in ther, which was come from Conightecutte, who did incourage them to lay hold of y^e^ Indeans forwardnes, and to shew as great forwardnes as they, for it would incorage them, and expedition might prove to their great advantage. So they went on, and so ordered their march, as the Indeans brought them to a forte of y^e^ enimies (in which most of their cheefe men were) before day. They approached y^e^ same with great silence, and surrounded it both with English & Indeans, that they might not breake out; and so assualted them with great courage, shooting amongst them, and entered y^e^ forte with all speed; and those y^t^ first entered found sharp resistance from the enimie, who both shott at & grapled with them; others rane into their howses, & brought out fire, and sett them on fire, which soone tooke in their matts, &, standing close togeather, with y^e^ wind, all was quickly on a flame, and therby more were burnte to death then was otherwise slain; it burnte their bowstrings, and made them unservisable. Those y^t^ scaped y^e^ fire were slaine with y^e^ sword; some hewed to peeces, others rune throw with their rapiers, so as they were quickly dispatchte, and very few escaped. It was conceived they thus destroyed about 400. at this time. It was a fearfull sight to see them thus frying in y^e^ fyer, and y^e^ streams of blood

quenching y^e^ same, and horrible was y^e^ stinck & sente ther of; but y^e^ victory seemed a sweete sacrifice, and they gave the prays therof to God, who had wrought so wonderfuly for them, thus to inclose their enimise in their hands, and give them so speedy a victory over so proud & insulting an enimie. The Narigansett Indeans, all this while, stood round aboute, but aloofe from all danger, and left y^e^ whole [224] execution to y^e^ English, exept it were y^e^ stoping of any y^t^ broke away, insulting over their enimies in this their ruine & miserie, when they saw them dancing in y^e^ flames, calling them by a word in their owne language, signifing, O brave Pequents! which they used familierly among them selves in their own prayes, in songs of triumph after their victories. After this servis was thus happily accomplished, they marcht to the water side, wher they mett with some of their vesells, by which they had refreishing with victualls & other necessaries. But in their march y^e^ rest of y^e^ Pequents drew into a body, and acoasted them, thinking to have some advantage against them by * reason of a neck of land; but when they saw the English prepare for them, they kept a loofe, so as they neither did hurt, nor could receive any. After their refreishing & repair to geather for further counsell & directions, they resolved to pursue their victory, and follow y^e^ warr against y^e^ rest, but y^e^ Narigansett Indeans

* *Be* in manuscript.

most of them forsooke them, and such of them as they had with them for guids, or otherwise, they found them very could and backward in y^e^ bussines, ether out of envie, or y^t^ they saw y^e^ English would make more profite of y^e^ victorie then they were willing they should, or els deprive them of such advantage as them selves desired by having them become tributaries unto them, or y^e^ like.

For y^e^ rest of this bussines, I shall only relate y^e^ same as it is in a leter which came from M^r^. Winthrop to y^e^ Gov^r^ hear, as followeth.

Worthy S^r^: I received your loving letter, and am much provocked to express my affections towards you, but straitnes of time forbids me; for my desire is to acquainte you with y^e^ Lords greate mercies towards us, in our prevailing against his & our enimies; that you may rejoyce and praise his name with us. About 80. of our men, haveing costed along towards y^e^ Dutch plantation, (some times by water, but most by land,) mett hear & ther with some Pequents, whom they slew or tooke prisoners. 2. sachems they tooke, & beheaded; and not hearing of Sassacous, (the cheefe sachem,) they gave a prisoner his life, to goe and find him out. He wente and brought them word where he was, but Sassacouse, suspecting him to be a spie, after he was gone, fled away with some 20. more to y^e^ Mowakes, so our men missed of him. Yet, deviding them selves, and ranging up & downe, as y^e^ providence of God guided them (for y^e^ Indeans were all gone, save 3. or 4. and they knew not whither to guid them, or els would not), upon y^e^ 13. of this month, they light upon a great company of them, viz. 80. strong men, & 200. women & children, in a small Indean

towne, fast by a hideous swamp, which they all slipped into before our men could gett to them. Our captains were not then come togeither, but ther was M^r. Ludlow and Captaine Masson, with some 10. [225] of their men, & Captaine Patrick with some 20. or more of his, who, shooting at y^e Indeans, Captaine Trask with 50. more came soone in at y^e noyse. Then they gave order to surround y^e swampe, it being aboute a mile aboute; but Levetenante Davenporte & some 12. more, not hearing that com̄and, fell into y^e swampe among y^e Indeans. The swampe was so thicke with shrub-woode, & so boggie with all, that some of them stuck fast, and received many shott. Levetenant Davenport was dangerously wounded aboute his armehole, and another shott in y^e head, so as, fainting, they were in great danger to have been taken by y^e Indeans. But Sargante Rigges, & Jeffery, and 2. or 3. more, rescued them, and slew diverse of y^e Indeans with their swords. After they were drawne out, the Indeans desired parley, & were offered (by Thomas Stanton, our interpretour) that, if they would come out, and yeeld them selves, they should have their lives, all that had not their hands in y^e English blood. Wherupon y^e sachem of y^e place came forth, and an old man or 2. & their wives and children, and after that some other women & children, and so they spake 2. howers, till it was night. Then Thomas Stanton was sente into them againe, to call them forth; but they said they would selle their lives their, and so shott at him so thicke as, if he had not cried out, and been presently rescued, they had slaine him. Then our men cutt of a place of y^e swampe with their swords, and cooped the Indeans into so narrow a compass, as they could easier kill them throw y^e thickets. So they continued all y^e night, standing aboute 12. foote one from an other, and y^e Indeans, coming close up to our men, shot their arrows so thicke, as they pierced their hatte brimes, & their sleeves,

& stockins, & other parts of their cloaths, yet so miraculously did the Lord preserve them as not one of them was wounded, save those 3. who rashly went into y^e^ swampe. When it was nere day, it grue very darke, so as those of them which were left dropt away betweene our men, though they stood but 12. or 14. foote assunder; but were presenly discovered, & some killed in y^e^ pursute. Upon searching of y^e^ swampe, y^e^ next morning, they found 9. slaine, & some they pulled up, whom y^e^ Indeans had buried in y^e^ mire, so as they doe thinke that, of all this company, not 20. did escape, for they after found some who dyed in their flight of their wounds received. The prisoners were devided, some to those of y^e^ river, and the rest to us. Of these we send y^e^ male children to Bermuda,* by M^r^. William Peirce, & y^e^ women & maid children are disposed aboute in y^e^ townes. Ther have been now slaine & taken, in all, aboute 700. The rest are dispersed, and the Indeans in all quarters so terrified as all their friends are affraid to receive them. 2. of y^e^ sachems of Long Iland came to M^r^. Stoughton and tendered them selves to be tributaries under our protection. And 2. of y^e^ Neepnett sachems have been with me to seeke our frendship. Amonge the prisoners we have y^e^ wife & children of Mononotto, a womon of a very modest countenance and behaviour. It was by her mediation that the † 2. English [226] maids were spared from death, and were kindly used by her; so that I have taken charge of her. One of her first requests was, that the English would not abuse her body, and that her children might not be taken from her. Those which were wounded were fetched of soone by John Galopp, who came with his shalop in a happie houre, to bring them victuals, and to carrie their wounded men to y^e^ pi̅nass, wher our cheefe surgeon was, w^th^ M^r^.

* But y^ey^ were carried to y^e^ West-Indeas.

† *They* in the manuscript.

Willson, being aboute 8. leagues off. Our people are all in health, (y^e^ Lord be praised,) and allthough they had marched in their armes all y^e^ day, and had been in fight all y^e^ night, yet they professed they found them selves so fresh as they could willingly have gone to such another bussines.

This is y^e^ substance of that which I received, though I am forced to omite many considerable circomstances. So, being in much straitnes of time, (the ships being to departe within this 4. days, and in them the Lord Lee and M^r^. Vane,) I hear breake of, and with harty saluts to, &c., I rest

Yours assured,

Jo: WINTHROP.

The 28. of y^e^ 5. month, 1637.

The captains reporte we have slaine 13. sachems; but Sassacouse & Monotto are yet living.

That I may make an end of this matter: this Sassacouse (y^e^ Pequents cheefe sachem) being fled to y^e^ Mowhakes, they cutt of his head, with some other of y^e^ cheefe of them, whether to satisfie y^e^ English, or rather y^e^ Narigansets, (who, as I have since heard, hired them to doe it,) or for their owne advantage, I well know not; but thus this warr tooke end. The rest of y^e^ Pequents were wholy driven from their place, and some of them submitted them selves to y^e^ Narigansets, & lived under them; others of them betooke them selves to y^e^ Monhiggs, under Uncass, their sachem, w^th^ the approbation of y^e^ English of Conightecutt, under whose protection Uncass lived, and he and his men had been faithful to them in this warr, & done them very good service. But this did so vexe

the Narrigansetts, that they had not y^e^ whole sweay over them, as they have never ceased plotting and contriving how to bring them under, and because they cannot attaine their ends, because of y^e^ English who have protected them, they have sought to raise a generall conspiracie against y^e^ English, as will appear in an other place.

They had now letters againe out of England from M^r^. Andrews & M^r^. Beachamp, that M^r^. Sherley neither had nor would pay them any money, or give them any accounte, and so with much discontent desired them hear to send them some, much blaming them still, that they had sent all to M^r^. Sherley, & none to them selves. Now, though they might have justly referred them to their former answer, and insisted ther upon, & some wise men counselled them so to doe, yet because they beleeved that [227] they were realy out round sumes of money, (espetialy M^r^. Andrews,) and they had some in their hands, they resolved to send them what bever they had.* M^r^. Sherleys letters were to this purpose: that, as they had left him in y^e^ paiment of y^e^ former bills, so he had tould them he would leave them in this, and beleeve it, they should find it true. And he was as good as his word, for they could never gett peney from him, nor bring him to any accounte, though M^r^. Beachamp sued him in y^e^ Chancerie. But they all of them turned their com-

* But staid it till y^e^ next year.

plaints against them here, wher ther was least cause, and who had suffered most unjustly; first from Mr. Allerton & them, in being charged with so much of yt which they never had, nor drunke for; and now in paying all, & more then all (as they conceived), and yet still thus more demanded, and that with many heavie charges. They now discharged Mr. Sherley from his agencie, and forbad him to buy or send over any more goods for them, and prest him to come to some end about these things.

Anno Dom: 1638.

This year Mr. Thomas Prence was chosen Govr.

Amongst other enormities that fell out amongst them, this year 3. men were (after due triall) executed for robery & murder which they had committed; their names were these, Arthur Peach, Thomas Jackson, and Richard Stinnings; ther was a 4., Daniel Crose, who was also guilty, but he escaped away, and could not be found. This Arthur Peach was ye cheefe of them, and ye ring leader of all ye rest. He was a lustie and a desperate yonge man, and had been one of ye souldiers in ye Pequente warr, and had done as good servise as ye most ther, and one of ye forwardest in any attempte. And being now out of means, and loath to worke, and falling to idle courses & company, he intended to goe to ye Dutch plantation; and had alured these 3., being other mens servants and apprentices,

to goe with him. But another cause ther was allso of his secret going away in this maner; he was not only rune into debte, but he had gott a maid with child, (which was not known till after his death,) a mans servante in y^e^ towne, and fear of punishmente made him gett away. The other 3. complotting with him, rañe away from their maisters in the night, and could not be heard of, for they went not y^e^ ordinarie way, but shaped such a course as they thought to avoyd y^e^ pursute of any [228]. But falling into y^e^ way that lyeth betweene y^e^ Bay of Massachusetts and the Narrigansets, and being disposed to rest them selves, struck fire, and took tobaco, a litle out of y^e^ way, by y^e^ way side. At length ther came a Narigansett Indean by, who had been in y^e^ Bay a trading, and had both cloth & beads aboute him. (They had meett him y^e^ day before, & he was now returning.) Peach called him to drinke tobaco with them, and he came & sate downe with them. Peach tould y^e^ other he would kill him, and take what he had from him. But they were some thing afraid; but he said, Hang him, rogue, he had killed many of them. So they let him alone to doe as he would; and when he saw his time, he tooke a rapier and rane him through the body once or twise, and tooke from him 5. fathume of wampam, and 3. coats of cloath, and wente their way, leaving him for dead. But he scrabled away, when they were gone, and made shift to gett home, (but dyed within

a few days after,) by which means they were discovered; and by subtilty the Indeans tooke them. For they desiring a canow to sett them over a water, (not thinking their facte had been known,) by y^e^ sachems com̄and they were carried to Aquidnett Iland, & ther accused of y^e^ murder, and were examēd & comitted upon it by y^e^ English ther. The Indeans sent for M^r^. Williams, & made a greeveous complainte; his freinds and kinred were ready to rise in armes, and provock the rest therunto, some conceiving they should now find y^e^ Pequents words trew: that y^e^ English would fall upon them. But M^r^. Williams pacified them, & tould them they should see justice done upon y^e^ offenders; & wente to y^e^ man, & tooke M^r^. James, a phisition, with him. The man tould him who did it, & in what maner it was done; but y^e^ phisition found his wounds mortall, and that he could not live, (as he after testified upon othe, before y^e^ jurie in oppen courte,) and so he dyed shortly after, as both M^r^. Williams, M^r^. James, & some Indeans testified in courte. The Gov^rt^ in y^e^ Bay were aquented with it, but refferrd it hither, because it was done in this jurisdiction;* but pressed by all means y^t^ justice might be done in it; or els y^e^ countrie must rise & see justice done, otherwise it would raise a warr. Yet some of y^e^ rude & ignorante sorte murmured that any

* And yet afterwards they laid claime to those parts in y^e^ controversie about Seacunk.

English should be put to death for y^e^ Indeans. So at last they of y^e^ iland brought them hither, and being often examened, and y^e^ evidence prodused, they all in the end freely confessed in effect all y^t^ the Indean accused them of, & that they had done it, in y^e^ maner afforesaid; and so, upon y^e^ forementioned evidence, were cast by y^e^ jurie, & condemned, & executed for the same. And some of y^e^ Narigansett Indeans, & of y^e^ parties freinds, were presente when it was done, which gave them & all y^e^ countrie good satisfaction. But it was a matter of much sadnes to them hear, and was y^e^ 2. execution which they had since they came; being both for wilfull murder, as hath bene before related. Thus much of this mater.

[229] They received this year more letters from England full of reneued complaints, on y^e^ one side, that they could gett no money nor accounte from M^r^. Sherley; & he againe, y^t^ he was pressed therto, saying he was to accounte with those hear, and not with them, &c. So, as was before resolved, if nothing came of their last letters, they would now send them what they could, as supposing, when some good parte was payed them, that M^r^. Sherley & they would more easily agree aboute y^e^ remainder.

So they sent to M^r^. Andrews and M^r^. Beachamp, by M^r^. Joseph Yonge, in y^e^ Mary & Anne, 1325^li^. waight of beaver, devided betweene them. M^r^. Beachamp returned an accounte of his moyety, that he made 400^li^.

starling of it, fraight and all charges paid. But Mr. Andrews, though he had ye more and beter parte, yet he made not so much of his, through his owne indiscretion; and yet turned ye loss * upon them hear, but without cause.

They sent them more by bills & other paimente, which was received & acknowledged by them, in money † & ye like; which was for katle sould of Mr. Allertons, and ye price of a bark sold, which belonged to ye stock, and made over to them in money, 434li. sterling. The whole sume was 1234li. sterling, save what Mr. Andrews lost in ye beaver, which was otherwise made good. But yet this did not stay their clamors, as will apeare here after more at large.

It pleased God, in these times, so to blesse ye cuntry with such access & confluance of people into it, as it was therby much inriched, and catle of all kinds stood at a high rate for diverce years together. Kine were sould at 20li. and some at 25li. a peece, yea, some times at 28li. A cow-calfe usually at 10li. A milch goate at 3li. & some at 4li. And femall kids at 30s. and often at 40s. a peece. By which means ye anciente planters which had any stock begane to grow in their estats. Corne also wente at a round rate, viz. 6s. a bushell. So as other trading begane to be neglected; and the old partners (having now forbidden Mr. Sherley to send them any more goods) broke of their trade at

* Being about 40li.

† And devided betweene them.

Kenebeck, and, as things stood, would follow it no longer. But some of them, (with other they joyned with,) being loath it should be lost by discontinuance, agreed with y^e^ company for it, and gave them aboute y^e^ 6. parte of their gaines for it; [230] * with y^e^ first fruits of which they builte a house for a prison; and the trade ther hath been since continued, to y^e^ great benefite of y^e^ place; for some well fore-sawe that these high prises of corne and catle would not long continue, and that then y^e^ comodities ther raised would be much missed.

This year, aboute y^e^ 1. or 2. of June, was a great & fearfull earthquake; it was in this place heard before it was felte. It came with a rumbling noyse, or low murmure, like unto remoate thunder; it came from y^e^ norward, & pased southward. As y^e^ noyse aproched nerer, they earth begane to shake, and came at length with that violence as caused platters, dishes, & such like things as stoode upon shelves, to clatter & fall downe; yea, persons were afraid of y^e^ houses them selves. It so fell oute y^t^ at y^e^ same time diverse of y^e^ cheefe of this towne were mett together at one house, conferring with some of their freinds that were upon their removall from y^e^ place, (as if y^e^ Lord would herby shew y^e^ signes of his displeasure, in their shaking a peeces & removalls one from an other.) How ever it was very terrible for y^e^ time, and as

* 130 in MS.

y^e^ men were set talking in y^e^ house, some women & others were without y^e^ dores, and y^e^ earth shooke with y^t^ violence as they could not stand without catching hould of y^e^ posts & pails y^t^ stood next them; but y^e^ violence lasted not long. And about halfe an hower, or less, came an other noyse & shaking, but nether so loud nor strong as y^e^ former, but quickly passed over; and so it ceased. It was not only on y^e^ sea coast, but y^e^ Indeans felt it within land; and some ships that were upon y^e^ coast were shaken by it. So powerfull is y^e^ mighty hand of y^e^ Lord, as to make both the earth & sea to shake, and the mountaines to tremble before him, when he pleases; and who can stay his hand? It was observed that y^e^ somers, for divers years togeather after this earthquake, were not so hotte & seasonable for y^e^ ripning of corne & other fruits as formerly; but more could & moyst, & subjecte to erly & untimly frosts, by which, many times, much Indean corne came not to maturitie; but whether this was any cause, I leave it to naturallists to judge.

Anno Dom: 1639. & *Anno Dom:* 1640.

These 2. years I joyne togeather, because in them fell not out many things more then y^e^ ordinary passages of their comone affaires, which are not needfull to be touched. [231] Those of this plantation having at sundrie times granted lands for severall

townships, and amongst y^e^ rest to y^e^ inhabitants of Sityate, some wherof issewed from them selves, and allso a large tracte of land was given to their 4. London partners in y^t^ place, viz. M^r^. Sherley, M^r^. Beacham, M^r^. Andrews, & M^r^. Hatherley. At M^r^. Hatherley's request and choys it was by him taken for him selfe and them in y^t^ place; for the other 3. had invested him with power & trust to chose for them. And this tracte of land extended to their utmoste limets that way, and bordered on their neigbours of y^e^ Massachusets, who had some years after seated a towne (called Hingam) on their lands next to these parts. So as now ther grue great differance betweene these 2. townships, about their bounds, and some meadow grownds that lay betweene them. They of Hingam presumed to alotte parte of them to their people, and measure & stack them out. The other pulled up their stacks, & threw them. So it grew to a controversie betweene the 2. goverments, & many letters and passages were betweene them aboute it; and it hunge some 2. years in suspense. The Courte of Massachusets appointed some to range their line according to y^e^ bounds of their patente, and (as they wente to worke) they made it to take in all Sityate, and I know not how much more. Againe, on y^e^ other hand, according to y^e^ line of y^e^ patente of this place, it would take in Hingame and much more within their bounds.

In y^e^ end boath Courts agreed to chose 2. comissioners of each side, and to give them full & absolute power to agree and setle y^e^ bounds betwene them; and what they should doe in y^e^ case should stand irrevocably. One meeting they had at Hingam, but could not conclude; for their comissioners stoode stiffly on a clawes in their graunte, That from Charles-river, or any branch or parte therof, they were to extend their limits, and 3. myles further to y^e^ southward; or from y^e^ most southward parte of y^e^ Massachusets Bay, and 3. mile further. But they chose to stand on y^e^ former termes, for they had found a smale river, or brooke rather, that a great way with in land trended southward, and issued into some part of y^t^ river taken to be Charles-river, and from y^e^ most southerly part of this, & 3. mile more southward of y^e^ same, they would rune a line east to y^e^ sea, aboute 20. mile; which will (say they) take in a part of Plimoth itselfe. Now it is to be knowne y^t^ though this patente & plantation were much the ancienter, yet this inlargemente of y^e^ same (in which Sityate stood) was granted after theirs, and so theirs were first to take place, before this inlargmente. Now their answer was, first, that, however according to their owne plan, they could noway come upon any part of their ancieante grante. [232] 2^ly^. They could never prove y^t^ to be a parte of Charles-river, for they knew not which was Charles-river, but as y^e^ people of this

place, which came first, imposed such a name upon y^t^ river, upon which, since, Charles-towne is builte (supposing y^t^ was it, which Captaine Smith in his mapp so named). Now they y^t^ first named it have best reason to know it, and to explaine which is it. But they only tooke it to be Charles river, as fare as it was by them navigated, and y^t^ was as farr as a boate could goe. But y^t^ every runlett or small brooke, y^t^ should, farr within land, come into it, or mixe their stremes with it, and were by y^e^ natives called by other & differente names from it, should now by them be made Charles-river, or parts of it, they saw no reason for it. And gave instance in Humber, in Old England, which had y^e^ Trente, Ouse, and many others of lesser note fell into it, and yet were not counted parts of it; and many smaler rivers & broks fell into y^e^ Trente, & Ouse, and no parts of them, but had nams aparte, and divisions & nominations of them selves. Againe, it was pleaded that they had no east line in their patente, but were to begine at y^e^ sea, and goe west by a line, &c. At this meeting no conclution was made, but things discussed & well prepared for an issue. The next year y^e^ same c̄missioners had their power continued or renewed, and mett at Sityate, and concluded y^e^ mater, as followeth.

The agreemente of y^e^ bounds betwixte Plimoth and Massachusetts.

Wheras ther were tow comissiones granted by y^e^ 2. jurisdictions, y^e^ one of Massachsets Govermente, granted unto John Endecott, gent: and Israell Stoughton, gent: the other of New-Plimoth Govermente, to William Bradford, Gov^r^, and Edward Winslow, gent: and both these for y^e^ setting out, setling, & determining of y^e^ bounds & limitts of y^e^ lands betweene y^e^ said jurisdictions, wherby not only this presente age, but y^e^ posteritie to come may live peaceably & quietly in y^t^ behalfe. And for as much as y^e^ said comissioners on both sids have full power so to doe, as appeareth by y^e^ records of both jurisdictions; we therfore, y^e^ said comissioners above named, doe hearby with one consente & agreemente conclude, detirmine, and by these presents declare, that all y^e^ marshes at Conahasett y^t^ lye of y^e^ one side of y^e^ river next to Hingam, shall belong to y^e^ jurisdition of Massachusetts Plantation; and all y^e^ marshes y^t^ lye on y^e^ other side of y^e^ river next to Sityate, shall be long to y^e^ jurisdiction of New-Plimoth; excepting 60. acers of marsh at y^e^ mouth of y^e^ river, on Sityate side next to the sea, which we doe herby agree, conclude, & detirmine shall belong to y^e^ jurisdition of Massachusetts. And further, we doe hearby agree, determine, and conclude, y^t^ the bounds of y^e^ limites betweene both y^e^ said jurisditions are as followeth, viz. from y^e^ mouth of y^e^ brook y^t^ runeth into Chonahasett marches (which we call by y^e^ name of Bound-brooke) with a stright & directe line to y^e^ midle of a great ponde, y^t^ lyeth on y^e^ right hand of y^e^ uper path, or commone way, y^t^ leadeth betweene Waimoth and Plimoth, close to y^e^ path as [233] we goe alonge, which was formerly named (and still we desire may be caled) Accord pond, lying aboute five or 6. myles from Weimoth southerley; and from thence with a straight line to

y^e^ souther-most part of Charles-river,* & 3. miles southerly, inward into y^e^ countrie, according as is expresed in y^e^ patente granted by his Ma^tie^ to y^e^ Company of y^e^ Massachusetts Plantation. Provided allways and never y^e^ less concluded & determined by mutuall agreemente betweene y^e^ said comissioners, y^t^ if it fall out y^t^ the said line from Accord-pond to y^e^ sothermost parte of Charles-river, & 3. myles southerly as is before expresed, straiten or hinder any parte of any plantation begune by y^e^ Gove^rt^ of New-Plimoth, or hereafter to be begune within 10. years after y^e^ date of these p̄s^nts^, that then, notwithstanding y^e^ said line, it shall be lawfull for y^e^ said Gov^rt^ of New-Plimoth to assume on y^e^ northerly side of y^e^ said line, wher it shall so intrench as afforesaid, so much land as will make up y^e^ quantity of eight miles square, to belong to every shuch plantation begune, or to [be] begune as afforesaid; which we agree, determine, & conclude to appertaine & belong to y^e^ said Gov^rt^ of New-Plimoth. And wheras y^e^ said line, from y^e^ said brooke which runeth into Choahassett saltmarshes, called by us Boundbrooke, and y^e^ pond called Accord-pond, lyeth nere y^e^ lands belonging to y^e^ tounships of Sityate & Hingam, we doe therfore hereby determine & conclude, that if any devissions allready made and recorded, by either y^e^ said townships, doe crose the said line, that then it shall stand, & be of force according to y^e^ former intents and purposes of y^e^ said townes granting them (the marshes formerly agreed on exepted). And y^t^ no towne in either jurisdiction shall hereafter exceede, but containe them selves within y^e^ said lines expressed. In witnes wherof we, the comissioners of both jurisdictions, doe by these presents indented set our hands & seales y^e^ ninth day of y^e^ 4. month in 16. year of our soveraine lord, king Charles; and in y^e^ year of our Lord, 1640.

WILLIAM BRADFORD, Gov^r^. JO: ENDECOTT.
ED: WINSLOW. ISRAELL STOUGHTON.

* Which is Charles River may still be questioned.

Wheras y^e^ patente was taken in y^e^ name of William Bradford, (as in trust,) and rane in these termes: To him, his heires, and associats & assignes; and now y^e^ noumber of free-men being much increased, and diverce tounships established and setled in severall quarters of y^e^ govermente, as Plimoth, Duxberie, Sityate, Tanton, Sandwich, Yarmouth, Barnstable, Marchfeeld, and not longe after, Seacunke (called afterward, at y^e^ desire of y^e^ inhabitants, Rehoboth) and Nawsett, it was by y^e^ Courte desired that William Bradford should make a surrender of y^e^ same into their hands. The which he willingly did, in this maner following.

Wheras William Bradford, and diverce others y^e^ first instruments of God in the begiñing of this great work of plantation, togeather with such as y^e^ allordering hand of God in his providence soone added unto them, have been at very great charges to procure y^e^ lands, priviledges, & freedoms from all intanglments, as may appeare by diverse & sundrie deeds, inlargments of grants, purchases, and payments of debts, &c., by reason wherof y^e^ title to y^e^ day of these presents [234] remaineth in y^e^ said William Bradford, his heires, associats, and assignes: now, for y^e^ better setling of y^e^ estate of the said lands (contained in y^e^ grant or pattente), the said William Bradford, and those first instruments termed & called in sondry orders upon publick recorde, Y^e^ Purchasers, or Old comers; witnes 2. in spetiall, the one bearing date y^e^ 3. of March, 1639. the other in Des: the 1. An^o^ 1640. wherunto these presents have spetiall relation & agreemente, and wherby they are distinguished from other y^e^ freemen & inhabitants of y^e^ said corporation. Be it knowne unto all men, therfore, by these presents, that the

said William Bradford, for him selfe, his heires, together with y^e^ said purchasers, doe only reserve unto them selves, their heires, and assignes those 3. tractes of land mentioned in y^e^ said resolution, order, and agreemente, bearing date y^e^ first of Des: 1640. viz. first, from y^e^ bounds of Yarmouth, 3. miles to y^e^ eastward of Naemschatet, and from sea to sea, crose the neck of land. The 2. of a place called Acoughcouss, which lyeth in y^e^ botome of y^e^ bay adjoyning to y^e^ west-side of Pointe Perill, and 2. myles to y^e^ westerne side of y^e^ said river, to an other place called Acushente river, which entereth at y^e^ westerne end of Nacata, and 2. miles to y^e^ eastward therof, and to extend 8. myles up into y^e^ countrie. The 3. place, from Sowansett river to Patucket river, (with Cawsumsett neck,) which is y^e^ cheefe habitation of y^e^ Indeans, & reserved for them to dwell upon,) extending into y^e^ land 8. myles through y^e^ whole breadth therof. Togeather with such other small parcells of lands as they or any of them are personally possessed of or intressed in, by vertue of any former titles or grante whatsoever. And y^e^ said William Bradford doth, by y^e^ free & full consente, approbation, and agreemente of y^e^ said old-planters, or purchasers, together with y^e^ liking, approbation, and acceptation of y^e^ other parte of y^e^ said corporation, surrender into y^e^ hands of y^e^ whole courte, consisting of y^e^ free-men of this corporation of New-Plimoth, all y^t^ other right & title, power, authority, priviledges, immunities, & freedomes granted in y^e^ said letters patents by y^e^ said right Honb^le^ Counsell for New-England; reserveing his & their personall right of freemen, together w^th^ the said old planters afforesaid, excepte y^e^ said lands before excepted, declaring the freemen of this corporation, togeather with all such as shal be legally admitted into y^e^ same, his associats. And y^e^ said William Bradford, for him, his heiers, & assignes, doe hereby further promise and grant to doe & performe whatsoever further thing or things, acte or actes, which in him lyeth, which shall be needfull and expediente for y^e^ better

confirming and establishing the said premises, as by counsel lerned in y^e^ lawes shall be reasonably advised and devised, when he shall be ther unto required. In witness wherof, the said William Bradford hath in publick courte surrendered the said letters patents actually into y^e^ hands & power of y^e^ said courte, binding him selfe, his heires, executors, administrators, and assignes to deliver up whatsoever spetialties are in his hands that doe or may concerne the same.

[235] In these 2. years they had sundry letters out of England to send one over to end the buissines and accounte with M^r^. Sherley; who now professed he could not make up his accounts without y^e^ help of some from hence, espetialy M^r^. Winslows. They had serious thoughts of it, and y^e^ most parte of y^e^ partners hear thought it best to send; but they had formerly written such bitter and threatening letters as M^r^. Winslow was neither willing to goe, nor y^t^ any other of y^e^ partners should; for he was perswaded, if any of them wente, they should be arested, and an action of such a sum̄e layed upon them as they should not procure baele, but must lye in prison, and then they would bring them to what they liste; or other wise they might be brought into trouble by y^e^ arch-bishops means, as y^e^ times then stood. But, notwithstanding, they weer much inclined to send, & Captaine Standish was willing to goe, but they resolved, seeing they could not all agree in this thing, and that it was waighty, and y^e^ consequence might prove dangerous, to take M^r^. Winthrops advise in y^e^ thing,

and y^e^ rather, because M^r^. Andrews had by many letters acquaynted him with y^e^ differences betweene them, and appoynted him for his assigne to receive his parte of y^e^ debte. (And though they deneyed to pay him any as a debte, till y^e^ controversie was ended, yet they had deposited 110^li^. in money in his hands for M^r^. Andrews, to pay to him in parte as soone as he would come to any agreement with y^e^ rest.) But M^r^. Winthrop was of M^r^. Winslows minde, and disswaded them from sending; so they broak of their resolution from sending, and returned this answer: that the times were dangerous as things stood with them, for they knew how M^r^. Winslow had suffered formerley, and for a small matter was clapte up in y^e^ Fleete, & it was long before he could gett out, to both his & their great loss and damage; and times were not better, but worse, in y^t^ respecte. Yet, that their equall & honest minds might appeare to all men, they made them this tender: to refferr y^e^ case to some gentle-men and marchants in y^e^ Bay of y^e^ Massachusetts, such as they should chuse, and were well knowne unto them selves, (as they perceived their wer many of their aquaintance and freinds ther, better knowne to them then y^e^ partners hear,) and let them be informed in y^e^ case by both sids, and have all y^e^ evidence y^t^ could be produsedd, in writing, or other wise; and they would be bound to stand to their determination, and make good their

award, though it should cost them all they had in y^e^ world. But this did not please them, but they were offended at it, without any great reasone for ought I know, (seeing nether side could give in clear accountes, y^e^ partners here could not, by reason they (to their smarte) were failed by y^e^ accountante they sent them, and M^r^. Sherley pretened he could not allso,) save as they conceived it a disparagmente to yeeld to their inferiours in respecte of y^e^ place and other concurring circomstances. So this came to nothing; and afterward M^r^. Sherley write, y^t^ if M^r^. Winslow would mett him in France, y^e^ Low-Countries, or Scotland, let y^e^ place be knowne, and he [236] come to him ther. But in regard of y^e^ troubles that now begane to arise in our owne nation, and other reasons, this did not come to any effecte. That which made them so desirous to bring things to an end was partly to stope y^e^ clamours and aspertions raised & cast upon them hereaboute; though they conceived them selves to sustaine the greatest wrong, and had most cause of complainte; and partly because they feared y^e^ fall of catle, in which most parte of their estats lay. And this was not a vaine feare; for they fell indeede before they came to a conclusion, and that so souddanly, as a cowe that but a month before was worth 20^li^., and would so have passed in any paymente, fell now to 5^li^. and would yeeld no more; and a goate that wente at 3^li^. or 50^s^.

would now yeeld but 8. or 10^{s}. at most. All men feared a fall of catle, but it was thought it would be by degrees; and not to be from y^{e} highest pitch at once to y^{e} lowest, as it did, which was greatly to y^{e} damage of many, and y^{e} undoing of some. An other reason was, they many of them grew aged, (and indeed a rare thing it was that so many partners should all live together so many years as these did,) and saw many changes were like to befall; so as they were loath to leave these intanglments upon their children and posteritie, who might be driven to remove places, as they had done; yea, them selves might doe it yet before they dyed. But this bussines must yet rest; y^{e} next year gave it more ripnes, though it rendred them less able to pay, for y^{e} reasons afforesaid.

Anno Dom: 1641.

M^{R}. Sherley being weary of this controversie, and desirous of an end, (as well as them selves,) write to M^{r}. John Atwode and M^{r}. William Collier, 2. of y^{e} inhabitants of this place, and of his speatiall aquaintance, and desired them to be a means to bring this bussines to an end, by advising & counselling the partners hear, by some way to bring it to a composition, by mutuall agreemente. And he write to them selves allso to y^{t} end, as by his letter may apear; so much therof as concernse y^{e} same I shall hear relate.

S^r^. My love remembered, &c. I have writte so much concerning y^e^ ending of accounts betweexte us, as I profess I know not what more to write, &c. If you desire an end, as you seeme to doe, ther is (as I conceive) but 2. waise; that is, to parfecte all accounts, from y^e^ first to y^e^ last, &c. Now if we find this difficulte, and tedious, haveing not been so stricte & carefull as we should and oughte to have done, as for my owne parte I doe confess I have been somewhat to remisse, and doe verily thinke so are you, &c. I fear you can never make a perfecte accounte of all your pety viages, out, & home too & againe, &c.* So then y^e^ second way must be, by biding, or [237] compounding; and this way, first or last, we must fall upon, &c. If we must warr at law for it, doe not you expecte from me, nether will I from you, but to cleave y^e^ heare, and then I dare say y^e^ lawyers will be most gainers, &c. Thus let us set to y^e^ worke, one way or other, and end, that I may not allways suffer in my name & estate. And you are not free; nay, y^e^ gospell suffers by your delaying, and causeth y^e^ professors of it to be hardly spoken of, that you, being many, & now able, should combine & joyne togeather to oppress & burden me, &c. Fear not to make a faire & reasonable offer; beleeve me, I will never take any advantage to plead it against you, or to wrong you; or else let M^r^. Winslow come over, and let him have such full power & authority as we may ende by compounding; or else, y^e^ accounts so well and fully made up, as we may end by reconing. Now, blesed be God, y^e^ times be much changed here, I hope to see many of you returne to you^r^ native countrie againe, and have such freedome & libertie as y^e^ word of God prescribs. Our bishops were never so near a downfall as now; God hath miraculously confounded them, and turned all their popish &

* This was but to pretend advantage, for it could not be done, neither did it need.

Machavillian plots & projects on their owne heads, &c. Thus you see what is fitt to be done concerning our perticulere greevances. I pray you take it seriously into consideration; let each give way a litle that we may meete, &c. Be you and all yours kindly saluted, &c. So I ever rest,

Your loving friend,

JAMES SHERLEY.

Clapham, May 18. 1641.

Being thus by this leter, and allso by M^r^. Atwodes & M^r^. Colliers mediation urged to bring things to an end, (and y^e^ continuall clamors from y^e^ rest,) and by none more urged then by their own desires, they tooke this course (because many scandals had been raised upon them). They apoynted these 2. men before mentioned to meet on a certaine day, and called some other freinds on both sids, and M^r^. Free-man, brother in law to M^r^. Beachamp, and having drawne up a collection of all y^e^ remains of y^e^ stock, in what soever it was, as housing, boats, bark, and all implements belonging to y^e^ same, as they were used in y^e^ time of y^e^ trad, were they better or worce, with y^e^ remaines of all comodities, as beads, knives, hatchetts, cloth, or any thing els, as well y^e^ refuse as y^e^ more vendible, with all debts, as well those y^t^ were desperate as others more hopefull; and having spent diverce days to bring this to pass, having y^e^ helpe of all bookes and papers, which either any of them selves had, or Josias Winslow, who was their accountante; and they found y^e^ sume in all to arise (as y^e^ things were valued) to

aboute 1400li. And they all of them tooke a voluntary but a sollem oath, in ye presence one of an other, and of all their frends, ye persons abovesaid yt were now presente, that this was all that any of them knew of, or could remember; and Josias Winslow did ye like for his parte. But ye truth is they wrongd them selves much in ye valuation, for they reconed some catle as they were taken of Mr. Allerton, as for instance a cowe in ye hands of one cost 25li. and so she was valued in this accounte; but when she came to be past away in parte of paymente, after ye agreemente, she would be accepted but at 4li. 15s. [238] Also, being tender of their oaths, they brought in all they knew owing to ye stock; but they had not made ye like diligente search what ye stocke might owe to any, so as many scattering debts fell upon afterwards more then now they knew of.

Upon this they drew certaine articles of agreemente betweene Mr Atwode, on Mr. Sherleys behalfe, and them selves. The effecte is as followeth.

Articles of agreemente made and concluded upon ye 15. *day of October*, 1641. *&c.*

Imp: Wheras ther was a partnership for diverce years agreed upon betweene James Sherley, John Beacham, and Richard Andrews, of London, marchants, and William Bradford, Edward Winslow, Thomas Prence, Myles Standish, William Brewster, John Aldon, & John Howland, wth Isaack Allerton, in a trade of beaver skines & other furrs arising

in New-England; the terme of which said partnership being expired, and diverse sum̄es of money in goods adventured into New-England by y^e^ said James Sherley, John Beachamp, & Richard Andrews, and many large returnes made from New-England by y^e^ said William Bradford, Ed: Winslow, &c.; and differance arising aboute y^e^ charge of 2. ships, the one called y^e^ White Angele, of Bristow, and y^e^ other y^e^ Frindship, of Barnstable, and a viage intended in her, &c.; which said ships & their viages, y^e^ said William Bradford, Ed: W. &c. conceive doe not at all appertaine to their accounts of partnership; and weras y^e^ accounts of y^e^ said partnership are found to be confused, and cannot orderley appeare (through y^e^ defaulte of Josias Winslow, y^e^ booke keeper); and weras y^e^ said W. B. &c. have received all their goods for y^e^ said trade from the foresaid James Sherley, and have made most of their returnes to him, by consente of y^e^ said John Beachamp & Richard Andrews; and wheras also y^e^ said James Sherley hath given power & authoritie to M^r^. John Atwode, with y^e^ advice & consente of William Collier, of Duxborow, for and on his behalfe, to put such an absolute end to y^e^ said partnership, with all and every accounts, reconings, dues, claimes, demands, whatsoever, to y^e^ said James Sherley, John Beacham, & Richard Andrews, from y^e^ said W. B. &c. for and concerning y^e^ said beaver trade, & also y^e^ charge y^e^ said 2. ships, and their viages made or pretended, whether just or unjuste, from y^e^ worlds begining to this presente, as also for y^e^ paimente of a purchas of 1800^li^. made by Isaack Allerton, for and on y^e^ behalfe of y^e^ said W. B., Ed: W., &c., and of y^e^ joynt stock, shares, lands, and adventurs, what soever in New-England aforesaid, as apeareth by a deede bearing date y^e^ 6. Nov^br^. 1627; and also for and from such sume and sumes of money or goods as are received by William Bradford, Tho: Prence, & Myles Standish, for y^e^ recovery of dues, by accounts betwexte them, y^e^ said James Sherly, John Bea-

champ, & Richard Andrews, and Isaack Allerton, for y^e^ ship caled y^e^ White Angell. Now y^e^ said John Attwode, with advice & counsell of y^e^ said William Collier, having had much comunication & spente diverse days in agitation of all y^e^ said differances & accounts with y^e^ said W. B., E. W., &c.; and y^e^ said W. B., E. W., &c. have also, with y^e^ said book-keeper spente much time in collecting & gathering togeither y^e^ remainder of y^e^ stock of partnership for y^e^ said trade, and what soever hath beene received, or is due by y^e^ said attorneyship before expresed, and all, and all manner of goods, debts, and dues therunto belonging, as well those debts that are weake and doubtfull [239] and desperate, as those y^t^ are more secure, which in all doe amounte to y^e^ sume of 1400^li^. or ther aboute; and for more full satisfaction of y^e^ said James Sherley, John Beachamp, & Richard Andrews, the said W. B. and all y^e^ rest of y^e^ abovesaid partners, togeither with Josias Winslow y^e^ booke keeper, have taken a voluntarie oath, y^t^ within y^e^ said sume of 1400^li^. or theraboute, is contained whatsoever they knew, to y^e^ utmost of their rememberance.

In consideration of all which matters & things before expressed, and to y^e^ end y^t^ a full, absolute, and finall end may be now made, and all suits in law may be avoyded, and love & peace continued, it is therfore agreed and concluded betweene y^e^ said John Attwode, with y^e^ advice & consent of y^e^ said William Colier, for & on y^e^ behalfe of y^e^ said James Sherley, to and with y^e^ said W. B., &c. in maner and forme following: viz. that y^e^ said John Attwode shall procure a sufficiente release and discharge, under y^e^ hands & seals of y^e^ said James Sherley, John Beachamp, & Richard Andrews, to be delivered fayer & unconcealed unto y^e^ said William Bradford, &c., at or before y^e^ last day of August, next insuing y^e^ date hereof, whereby y^e^ said William Bradford &c., their heires, executors, & administrators, &

every of them shall be fully and absolutly aquited & discharged of all actions, suits, reconings, accounts, claimes, and demands whatsoever concerning y^e^ generall stock of beaver trade, paymente of y^e^ said 1800^li^. for y^e^ purchass, and all demands, reckonings, and accounts, just or unjuste, concerning the tow ships Whit-Angell and Frendship aforesaid, togeather with whatsoever hath been received by y^e^ said William Bradford, of y^e^ goods or estate of Isaack Allerton, for satisfaction of y^e^ accounts of y^e^ said ship called y^e^ Whit Angele, by vertue of a ł're of attourney to him, Thomas Prence, & Myles Standish, directed from y^e^ said James Sherley, John Beachamp, & Richard Andrews, for y^t^ purpose as afforesaid.

It is also agreed & concluded upon betweene the said parties to these presents, that the said W. B., E. W., &c. shall now be bound in 2400^li^. for paymente of 1200^li^. in full satisfaction of all demands as afforesaid; to be payed in maner & forme following; that is to say, 400^li^. within 2. months next after y^e^ receite of the aforesaid releases and discharges, one hundred and ten pounds wherof is allready in y^e^ hands of John Winthrop senior of Boston, Esquire, by the means of M^r^. Richard Andrews afforesaid, and 80^li^. waight of beaver now deposited into y^e^ hands of y^e^ said John Attwode, to be both in part of paimente of y^e^ said 400^li^. and y^e^ other 800^li^. to be payed by 200^li^. p^r^ anume, to such assignes as shall be appointed, inhabiting either in Plimoth or Massachusetts Bay, in such goods & comodities, and at such rates, as the countrie shall afford at y^e^ time of delivery & paymente; and in y^e^ mean time y^e^ said bond of 2400^li^. to be deposited into y^e^ hands of y^e^ said John Attwode. And it is agreed upon by & betweene y^e^ said parties to these presents, that if y^e^ said John Attwode shall not or cannot procure such said releases & discharges as afforesaid from y^e^ said James Sherley, John Bachamp, &

Richard Andrews, at or before y^e^ last day of August next insuing y^e^ date hear of, y^t^ then y^e^ said John Attwode shall, at y^e^ said day precisely, redeliver, or cause to [240] be delivered unto y^e^ said W. B., E. W., &c. their said bond of 2400^li^. and y^e^ said 80^li^. waight of beaver, or y^e^ due valew therof, without any fraud or further delay; and for performance of all & singuler y^e^ covenants and agreements hearin contained and expressed, which on y^e^ one parte and behalfe of y^e^ said James Sherley are to be observed & performed, shall become bound in y^e^ sume of 2400^li^. to them, y^e^ said William Bradford, Edward Winslow, Thomas Prence, Myles Standish, William Brewster, John Allden, and John Howland. And it is lastly agreed upon betweene y^e^ said parties, that these presents shall be left in trust, to be kepte for boath parties, in y^e^ hands of Mr. John Reanour, teacher of Plimoth. In witnes wherof, all y^e^ said parties have hereunto severally sett their hands, y^e^ day and year first above writen.

JOHN ATWODE, WILLIAM BRADFORD, EDWARD WINSLOW, &c.
In y^e^ presence of EDMOND FREEMAN,
WILLIAM THOMAS,
WILLIAM PADY,
NATHANIELL SOUTHER.

The nexte year this long and tedious bussines came to some issue, as will then appeare, though not to a finall ende with all y^e^ parties; but this much for y^e^ presente.

I had forgoten to inserte in its place how y^e^ church here had invited and sent for M^r^. Charles Chansey,* a

* M^r^. Chancey came to them in y^e^ year 1638. and staid till y^e^ later part of this year 1641.

reverend, godly, and very larned man, intending upon triall to chose him pastor of y^e^ church hear, for y^e^ more comfortable performance of y^e^ ministrie with M^r^. John Reinor, the teacher of y^e^ same. But ther fell out some differance aboute baptising, he holding it ought only to be by diping, and putting y^e^ whole body under water, and that sprinkling was unlawfull. The church yeelded that immersion, or dipping, was lawfull, but in this could countrie not so conveniente. But they could not nor durst not yeeld to him in this, that sprinkling (which all y^e^ churches of Christ doe for y^e^ most parte use at this day) was unlawfull, & an humane invention, as y^e^ same was prest; but they were willing to yeeld to him as far as y^ey^ could, & to y^e^ utmost; and were contented to suffer him to practise as he was perswaded; and when he came to minister that ordnance, he might so doe it to any y^t^ did desire it in y^t^ way, provided he could peacably suffer M^r^. Reinor, and such as desired to have theirs otherwise baptised by him, by sprinkling or powering on of water upon them; so as ther might be no disturbance in y^e^ church hereaboute. But he said he could not yeeld herunto. Upon which the church procured some other ministers to dispute y^e^ pointe with him publikly; as M^r^. Ralfe Partrich, of Duxberie, who did it sundrie times, very ablie and sufficently, as allso some other ministers within this govermente. But he was not satisfied; so y^e^ church sent to many other

churches to crave their help and advise in [241] this mater, and, with his will & consente, sent them his arguments writen under his owne hand. They sente them to y^e^ church at Boston in y^e^ Bay of Massachusets, to be comunicated with other churches ther. Also they sent the same to y^e^ churches of Conightecutt and New-Haven, with sundrie others; and received very able & sufficent answers, as they conceived, from them and their larned ministers, who all concluded against him. But him selfe was not satisfied therw^th^. Their answers are too large hear to relate. They conceived y^e^ church had done what was meete in y^e^ thing, so M^r^. Chansey, having been y^e^ most parte of 3. years here, removed him selfe to Sityate, wher he now remaines a minister to y^e^ church ther. Also about these times, now y^t^ catle & other things begane greatly to fall from their former rates, and persons begane to fall into more straits, and many being allready gone from them, (as is noted before,) both to Duxberie, Marshfeeld, and other places, & those of y^e^ cheefe sorte, as M^r^. Winslow, Captaine Standish, Mr. Allden, and many other, & stille some dropping away daly, and some at this time, and many more unsetled, it did greatly weaken y^e^ place, and by reason of y^e^ straitnes and barrennes of y^e^ place, it sett y^e^ thoughts of many upon removeall; as will appere more hereafter.

Anno Dom: 1642.

Marvilous it may be to see and consider how some kind of wickednes did grow & breake forth here, in a land wher the same was so much witnesed against, and so narrowly looked unto, & severly punished when it was knowne; as in no place more, or so much, that I have known or heard of; insomuch as they have been somewhat censured, even by moderate and good men, for their severitie in punishments. And yet all this could not suppress y^e^ breaking out of sundrie notorious sins, (as this year, besids other, gives us too many sad presidents and instances,) espetially drunkennes and unclainnes; not only incontinencie betweene persons unmaried, for which many both men & women have been punished sharply enough, but some maried persons allso. But that which is worse, even sodomie and bugerie, (things fearfull to name,) have broak forth in this land, oftener then once. I say it may justly be marveled at, and cause us to fear & tremble at the consideration of our corrupte natures, which are so hardly bridled, subdued, & mortified; nay, cannot by any other means but y^e^ powerfull worke & grace of Gods spirite. But (besids this) one reason may be, that y^e^ Divell may carrie a greater spite against the churches of Christ and y^e^ gospell hear, by how much y^e^ more they indeaour to preserve holynes and puritie amongst them, and strictly punisheth the contrary

when it ariseth either in church or comone wealth; that he might cast a [242] blemishe & staine upon them in y^e^ eyes of [y^e^] world, who use to be rash in judgmente. I would rather thinke thus, then that Satane hath more power in these heathen lands, as som have thought, then in more Christian nations, espetially over Gods servants in them.

2. An other reason may be, that it may be in this case as it is with waters when their streames are stopped or dam̄ed up, when they gett passage they flow with more violence, and make more noys and disturbance, then when they are suffered to rune quietly in their owne chanels. So wikednes being here more stopped by strict laws, and y^e^ same more nerly looked unto, so as it cannot rune in a comone road of liberty as it would, and is inclined, it searches every wher, and at last breaks out wher it getts vente.

3. A third reason may be, hear (as I am verily perswaded) is not more evills in this kind, nor nothing nere so many by proportion, as in other places; but they are here more discoverd and seen, and made publick by due serch, inquisition, and due punishment; for y^e^ churches looke narrowly to their members, and y^e^ magistrats over all, more strictly then in other places. Besids, here the people are but few in comparison of other places, which are full & populous, and lye hid, as it were, in a wood or thickett, and many horrible evills by y^t^ means are never seen nor

knowne; wheras hear, they are, as it were, brought into y^e^ light, and set in y^e^ plaine feeld, or rather on a hill, made conspicuous to y^e^ veiw of all.

But to proceede; ther came a letter from y^e^ Gov^r^ in y^e^ Bay to them here, touching matters of y^e^ fore-mentioned nature, which because it may be usefull I shall hear relate it, and y^e^ passages ther aboute.

S^r^: Having an opportunitie to signifie y^e^ desires of our Generall Court in toow things of spetiall importance, I willingly take this occasion to imparte them to you, y^t^ you may imparte them to y^e^ rest of your magistrats, and also to your Elders, for counsell; and give us your advise in them. The first is concerning heinous offences in point of uncleannes; the perticuler cases, with y^e^ circomstances, and y^e^ questions ther upon, you have hear inclosed. The 2. thing is concerning y^e^ Ilanders at Aquidnett; y^t^ seeing the cheefest of them are gone from us, in offences, either to churches, or comone welth, or both; others are dependants on them, and y^e^ best sorte are such as close with them in all their rejections of us. Neither is it only in a faction y^t^ they are devided from us, but in very deed they rend them selves from all y^e^ true churches of Christ, and, many of them, from all y^e^ powers of majestracie. We have had some experience hereof by some of their underworkers, or emissaries, who have latly come amongst us, and have made publick defiance against magistracie, ministrie, churches, & church covenants, &c. as anti-christian; secretly also sowing y^e^ seeds of Familisme, and Anabaptistrie, to y^e^ infection of some, and danger of others; so that we are not willing to joyne with them in any league or confederacie at all, but rather that you would consider & advise with us how we may avoyd them, and keep ours from being infected by them. Another thing I should mention

to you, for y^e^ maintenance of y^e^ trad of beaver; if ther be not a company to order it in every jurisdition among y^e^ English, which companies should agree in generall of their way in trade, I supose that y^e^ trade will be overthrowne, and y^e^ Indeans will abuse us. For this cause we have latly put it into order amongst us, hoping of incouragmente from you (as we have had) y^t^ we may continue y^e^ same. Thus not further to trouble you, I rest, with my loving remembrance to your selfe, &c.

Your loving friend,

RI: BELLINGHAM.

Boston, 28. (1.) 1642.

The note inclosed follows on y^e^ other side.*

[244] Worthy & beloved S^r^:

Your letter (with y^e^ questions inclosed) I have comunicated with our Assistants, and we have refered y^e^ answer of them to such Revē^d^ Elders as are amongst us, some of whose answers thertoo we have here sent you inclosed, under their owne hands; from y^e^ rest we have not yet received any. Our farr distance hath bene y^e^ reason of this long delay, as also y^t^ they could not conferr their counsells togeather.

For our selves, (you know our breedings & abillities,) we rather desire light from your selves, & others, whom God hath better inabled, then to presume to give our judgments in cases so difficulte and of so high a nature. Yet under correction, and submission to better judgments, we propose this one thing to your prudent considerations. As it seems to us, in y^e^ case even of willfull murder, that though a man did smite or wound an other, with a full pourpose or desire to kill him, (w^ch^ is murder in a high degree, before God,) yet if he

* A leaf is here wanting in the original manuscript, it having been cut out.

did not dye, the magistrate was not to take away y^e^ others life.* So by proportion in other grosse & foule sines, though high attempts & nere approaches to y^e^ same be made, and such as in the sight & account of God may be as ill as y^e^ accomplishmente of y^e^ foulest acts of y^t^ sine, yet we doute whether it may be safe for y^e^ magistrate to proceed to death; we thinke, upon y^e^ former grounds, rather he may not. As, for instance, in y^e^ case of adultrie, (if it be admitted y^t^ it is to be punished w^th^ death, which to some of us is not cleare,) if y^e^ body be not actually defiled, then death is not to be inflicted. So in sodomie, & beastialitie, if ther be not penetration. Yet we confess foulnes of circomstances, and frequencie in y^e^ same, doth make us remaine in y^e^ darke, and desire further light from you, or any, as God shall give.

As for y^e^ 2. thing, concerning y^e^ Ilanders? we have no conversing with them, nor desire to have, furder then necessitie or humanity may require.

And as for trade? we have as farr as we could ever therin held an orderly course, & have been sory to see y^e^ spoyle therof by others, and fear it will hardly be recovered. But in these, or any other things which may concerne y^e^ com̄one good, we shall be willing to advise & concure with you in what we may. Thus w^th^ my love remembered to your selfe, and y^e^ rest of our worthy friends, your Assistants, I take leave, & rest,

Your loving friend,

W. B.

Plim: 17. 3. month, 1642.

Now follows y^e^ ministers answers. And first M^r^. Reynors.

* Exod: 21. 22. Deu: 19. 11. Num: 35. 16. 18.

Qest: What sodmiticall acts are to be punished with death, & what very facte (ipso facto) is worthy of death, or, if y^e^ fact it selfe be not capitall, what circomstances concurring may make it capitall?

Ans: In y^e^ judiciall law (y^e^ moralitie wherof concerneth us) it is manyfest y^t^ carnall knowledg of man, or lying w^th^ man, as with woman, cum penetratione corporis, was sodomie, to be punished with death; what els can be understood by Levit: 18. 22. & 20. 13. & Gen: 19. 5? 2^ly^. It seems allso y^t^ this foule sine might be capitall, though ther was not penitratio corporis, but only contactus & fricatio usq ad effusionem seminis, for these reasons: [245] 1. Because it was sin to be punished with death, Levit. 20. 13. in y^e^ man who was lyen withall, as well as in him y^t^ lyeth with him; now his sin is not mitigated wher ther is not penitration, nor augmented wher it is; wheras its charged upon y^e^ women, y^t^ they were guilty of this unnaturall sine, as well as men, Rom. 1. 26. 27. Y^e^ same thing doth furder apeare, 2. because of y^t^ proportion betwexte this sin & beastialitie, wherin if a woman did stand before, or aproach to, a beast, for y^t^ end, to lye downe therto, (whether penetration was or not,) it was capitall, Levit: 18. 23. & 20. 16. 3^ly^. Because something els might be equivalent to penetration wher it had not been, viz. y^e^ fore mentioned acts with frequencie and long continuance with a high hand, utterly extinguishing all light of nature; besids, full intention and bould attempting of y^e^ foulest acts may seeme to have been capitall here, as well as coming presumptuously to slay with guile was capitall. Exod: 21. 14.

Yet it is not so manyfest y^t^ y^e^ same acts were to be punished with death in some other sines of uncleannes, w^ch^ yet by y^e^ law of God were capitall crimes; besids other reasons, (1.) because sodomie, & also beastialitie, is more against y^e^ light of nature then some other capitall crimes of unclainnes, which reason is to be attended unto, as y^t^ which most of all

made this sin capitall; (2.) because it might be comited with more secrecie & less suspition, & therfore needed ye more to be restrained & suppresed by ye law; (3ly) because ther was not ye like reason & degree of sining against family & posteritie in this sin as in some other capitall sines of uncleannes.

2. Quest: How farr a magistrate may extracte a confession from a delinquente, to acuse him selfe of a capitall crime, seeing Nemo tenetur prodere seipsum.

Ans: A majestrate cannot without sin neglecte diligente inquision into ye cause brought before him. Job 29. 16. Pro: 24. 11. 12. & 25. 2. (2ly.) If it be manifest yt a capitall crime is committed, & yt comone reporte, or probabilitie, suspition, or some complainte, (or ye like,) be of this or yt person, a magistrate ought to require, and by all due means to procure from ye person (so farr allready bewrayed) a naked confession of ye fact, as apears by yt which is morall & of perpetuall equitie, both in ye case of uncertaine murder, Deut: 21. 1. 9. and slander, Deut: 22. 13. 21; for though nemo tenetur prodere seipsum, yet by that wch may be known to ye magistrat by ye forenamed means, he is bound thus to doe, or els he may betray his countrie & people to ye heavie displeasure of God, Levit: 18. 24. 25. Jos: 22. 18. Psa: 106. 30; such as are inocente to ye sinfull, base, cruell lusts of ye profane, & such as are delinquents, and others with them, into ye hands of ye stronger temptations, & more bouldness, & hardnes of harte, to comite more & worse villany, besids all ye guilt & hurt he will bring upon him selfe. (3ly.) To inflicte some punishmente meerly for this reason, to extracte a confession of a capitall crime, is contrary to ye nature of vindictive justice, which always hath respecte to a knowe crime comitited by ye person punished; and it will therfore, for any thing which can before be knowne, be ye provocking and forcing of wrath, compared to ye wringing of ye nose, Pro: 30. 33. which is as well forbiden ye fathers of ye countrie as

of y^e^ family, Ephe. 6. 4. as produsing many sad & dangerous effects. That an oath (ex officio) for such a purpose is no due means, hath been abundantly proved by y^e^ godly learned, & is well known.

Q. 3. In what cases of capitall crimes one witnes with other circomstances shall be sufficiente to convince? or is ther no conviction without 2. witneses?

Ans: In taking away y^e^ life of man, one witnes alone will not suffice, ther must be tow, or y^t^ which is instar; y^e^ texts are manifest, Numb: 35. 30. Deut: 17. 6. & 19. 15. 2^ly^. Ther may be conviction by one witnes, & some thing y^t^ hath y^e^ force of another, as y^e^ evidencie of y^e^ fact done by such an one, & not an other; unforced confession when ther was no fear or danger of suffering for y^e^ fact, hand writings acknowledged & confessed.

JOHN REYNOR.

[246] *M^r^. Partrich his writing, in ans: to y^e^ questions.*

What is y^t^ sodomiticall acte which is to be punished with death?

Though I conceive probable y^t^ a voluntary effusion of seed per modum concubitus of man with man, as of a man with woman, though in concubitu ther be not penetratio corporis, is y^t^ sin which is forbiden, Levit: 18. 22. & adjudged to be punished with death, Levit: 20. 13. because, though ther be not penetratio corporis, yet ther may be similitudo concubitus muliebris, which is y^t^ the law specifieth; yet I dar not be con-* (1.) because, Gen: 19. 5. y^e^ intended acte of y^e^ Sodomits (who were y^e^ first noted maisters of this unnaturall act of more then brutish filthines) is expressed by carnall copulation of man with woman: Bring them out unto us, y^t^ we may know them; (2^ly^.) because it is observed among y^e^ nations wher this unnaturall unclainnes is co̅mited, it is w^th^ penetration of y^e^ body; (3^ly^.) because, in y^e^ judiciall pro-

* "Confident"?

ceedings of y^e^ judges in England, y^e^ indict: so rune (as I have been informed).

Q. How farr may a magistrat extracte a confession of a capitall crime from a suspected and an accused person?

Ans. I conceive y^t^ a magistrate is bound, by carfull examenation of circomstances & waighing of probabilities, to sifte y^e^ accused, and by force of argumente to draw him to an acknowledgment of y^e^ truth; but he may not extracte a confession of a capitall crime from a suspected person by any violent means, whether it be by an oath imposed, or by any punishmente inflicted or threatened to be inflicted, for so he may draw forth an acknowledgmente of a crime from a fearfull inocente; if guilty, he shall be compelled to be his owne accuser, when no other can, which is against y^e^ rule of justice.

Q. In what cases of capitall crimes one witnes with other circomstances shall be sufficente to convicte; or is ther no conviction without two witnesses?

Ans: I conceive y^t^, in y^e^ case of capitall crimes, ther can be no safe proceedings unto judgmente without too witnesses, as Numb: 35. 30. Deut: 19. 15. excepte ther can some evidence be produsedas aveilable & firme to prove y^e^ facte as a witnes is, then one witnes may suffice; for therin y^e^ end and equitie of y^e^ law is attained. But to proceede unto sentence of death upon presumptions, wher probably ther may subesse falsum, though ther be y^e^ testimony of one wittnes, I supose it cannot be a safe way; better for such a one to be held in safe custodie for further triall, I conceive.

Ralph Partrich.

The Answer of M^r^. Charles Chancy.

An contactus et fricatio usq ad seminis effusiõem sine penetratione corporis sit sodomia morte plectenda?

Q. The question is what sodomiticall acts are to be pun-

ished w^th^ death, & what very facte comitted, (ipso facto,) is worthy of death, or if y^e^ facte it selfe be not capitall, what circomstances concuring may make it capitall. The same question may be asked of rape, inceste, beastialitie, unnaturall sins, presumtuous sins. These be y^e^ words of y^e^ first question.

Ans: The answer unto this I will lay downe (as God shall directe by his word & spirite) in these following conclusions: (1.) That y^e^ judicials of Moyses, that are appendances to y^e^ morall law, & grounded on y^e^ law of nature, or y^e^ decalogue, are imutable, and ppetuall, w^ch^ all orthodox devines acknowledge; see y^e^ authors following. Luther, Tom. 1. Whitenberge: fol. 435. & fol. 7. Melancthon, in loc: com loco de conjugio. Calvin, l. 4. Institu. c. 4. sect. 15. Junious de politia Moysis, thes. 29. & 30. Hen: Bulin: Decad. 3. sermo. 8. Wolf: Muscu. loc: com: in 6. precepti explicaci: Bucer de regno Christi, l. 2. c. 17. Theo: Beza, vol: 1. de hereti: puniendis, fol. 154. Zanch: in 3. præcept: Ursin: Pt. 4. explicat. contra John. Piscat: in Aphorismi Loc. de lege dei aphorism. 17. And more might be added. I forbear, for brevities sake, to set downe their very words; this being y^e^ constante & generall oppinion of y^e^ best devines, I will rest in this as undoubtedly true, though much more might be said to confirme it.

2. That all y^e^ sines mentioned in y^e^ question were punished with death by y^e^ judiciall law of Moyses, as adultry, Levit: 20. 10. Deut: 22. 22. Esech: 16. 38. Jhon. 8. 5. which is to be understood not only of double adultrie, when as both parties are maried, (as some conceive,) but whosoever (besids her husband) lyes with a married woman, whether y^e^ man be maried or not, as in y^e^ place, Deut: 22. 22. or whosoever, being a maried man, lyeth with another woman (besids his wife), as P. Martire saith, loc: com: which in diverce respects maks y^e^ sine worse on y^e^ maried

mans parte; for y^e^ Lord in this law hath respect as well to publick honesty, (the sin being so prejudicall to y^e^ church & state,) as y^e^ private wrongs (saith Junious). So incest is to be punished with death, Levit: 20. 11. 22. Beastiality likwise, Lev: 20. 15. Exod: 22. 19. Raps in like maner, Deut: 22. 25. Sodomie in like sort, Levit: 18. 22. & 20. 13. And all presumptuous sins, Numb: 15. 30. 31.

3. That y^e^ punishmente of these foule sines w^th^ death is grounded on y^e^ law of nature, & is agreeable to the morall law. (1.) Because y^e^ reasons anexed shew them to be perpetuall. Deut. 22. 22. So shalt thou put away evill. Incest, beastiality, are caled confusion, & wickednes. (2.) Infamie to y^e^ whole humane nature, Levit: 22. 12. Levit: 18. 23. Raps are as murder, Deut: 22. 25. Sodomie is an abomination, Levit: 22. 22. [247] No holier & juster laws can be devised by any man or angele then have been by y^e^ Judg of all y^e^ world, the wisdome of y^e^ Father, by whom kings doe raigne, &c. (3.) Because, before y^e^ giving of y^e^ Law, this punishmente was anciently practised, Gen: 26. 11. 38. 29. 39. 20. & even by the heathen, by y^e^ very light of nature, as P. Martire shews. (4^ly^.) Because y^e^ land is defiled by such sins, and spews out y^e^ inhabitants, Levit: 18. 24, 25. & that in regard of those nations y^t^ were not acquainted w^th^ the law of Moyses. 5. All y^e^ devins above specified consent in this, that y^e^ unclean acts punishable with death by y^e^ law of God are not only y^e^ grose acts of uncleannes by way of carnall copulation, but all y^e^ evidente attempts therof, which may appeare by those severall words y^t^ are used by y^e^ spirite of God, expressing y^e^ sins to be punished with death; as y^e^ discovering of nakednes, Levit: 18. 20. which is retegere pudenda, as parts p^r^ euphemismum (saith Junius), or detegere ad cubandum (saith Willett), to uncover y^e^ shamefull parts of y^e^ body (saith Ainsworth), which, though it reaches to y^e^ grose acts, yet it is plaine it

doth comprehend y^e^ other foregoing immodest attempts, as contactum, fricationem, &c.; likwise y^e^ phrase of lying with, so often used, doth not only signifie carnall copulation, but other obscene acts, p^r^ceding y^e^ same, is implyed in Pauls word ἀρσενοκοῖται, 1. Cor: 6. 9. & men lying with men, 1. Tim: 1. 9. men defiling them selves w^th^ mankind, men burning with lust towards men, Rom: 1. 26. & Levit: 18.* 22. sodom & sin going after strange flesh, Jud: v. 7. 8. and lying with mankind as with a woman, Levit: 18. 22. Abulentis says y^t^ it signifies omnes modos quibus masculus masculo abutatur, changing y^e^ naturall use into y^t^ which is against nature, Rom: 1. 26. arrogare sibi cubare, as Junius well translats Levit: 20. 15. to give consente to lye withall, so approaching to a beast, & lying downe therto, Levit: 20. 16. ob solum conatū † (saith Willett) or for going about to doe it. Add to this a notable speech of Zepperus de legibus (who hath enough to end controversies of this nature). L. 1. he saith: In crimine adulterii voluntas (understanding manifeste) sine effectu subsecuto de jure attenditur; and he proves it out of good laws, in these words: Solicitatores ‡ alienum nuptiām itemq matrimonium interpellatores, etsi effectu sceleris potiri non possunt, propter voluntatem tamen perniciosæ libidinis extra ordinem puniuntur; nam generale est quidem affectū sine effectu [non] puniri, sed contrarium observatur in atrocioribus & horum similibus.

5. In concluding punishments from y^e^ judiciall law of Moyses y^t^ is perpetuall, we must often p^r^ceed by analogicall proportion & interpretation, as a paribus similibus, minore ad majus, &c.; for ther will still fall out some cases, in every comone-wealth, which are not in so many words extante in holy write, yet y^e^ substance of y^e^ matter in every kind (I conceive under correction) may be drawne and concluded out of y^e^ scripture by good consequence of an equeva-

* *8* in MS. † *Contiō* in MS. ‡ *Solicitations* in MS.

lent nature; as, for example, ther is no express law against destroying conception in y^e^ wombe by potions, yet by anologie with Exod: 21. 22, 23. we may reason y^t^ life is to be given for life. Againe, y^e^ question, An contactus & fricatio, &c., and methinks y^t^ place Gen: 38. 9. in y^e^ punishmente of Onans sin, may give some cleare light to it; it was (saith Pareus) beluina crudelitas quam Deus pari loco cum parricidio habuit, nam semen corrumpere, quid fuit aliud quam hominem ex semine generandum occidere? Propterea juste a Deo occisus est. Observe his words. And againe, Discamus quantopere Deus abominetur omnem seminis genitalis abusum, illicitā effusionem, & corruptionē, &c., very pertinente to this case. That allso is considerable, Deut: 25. 11, 12. God comanded y^t^, if any wife drue nigh to deliver her husband out of y^e^ hand of him y^t^ smiteth him, &c., her hand should be cutt off. Yet such a woman in y^t^ case might say much for her selfe, y^t^ what she did was in trouble & perplexitie of her minde, & in her husbands defence; yet her hand must be cutt of for such impuritie (and this is morall, as I conceive). Then we may reason from y^e^ less to y^e^ greater, what greevous sin in y^e^ sight of God it is, by y^e^ instigation of burning lusts, set on fire of hell, to proceede to contactum & fricationem ad emissionem seminis, &c., & y^t^ contra naturam, or to attempte y^e^ grosse acts of unnaturall filthines. Againe, if y^t^ unnaturall lusts of men with men, or woman with woman, or either with beasts, be to be punished with death, then a pari naturall lusts of men towards children under age are so to be punished.

6. Circumstantiæ variant vis e actiunes, (saith y^e^ lawiers,) & circomstances in these cases cannot possibly be all reckēd up; but God hath given laws for those causes & cases that are of greatest momente, by which others are to be judged of, as in y^e^ differance betwixte chanc medley, & willfull murder; so in y^e^ sins of uncleannes, it is one thing to doe

an acte of uncleannes by sudden temptation, & another to lye in waite for it, yea, to make a comune practise of it; this mightily augments & multiplies y^e^ sin. Againe, some sines of this nature are simple, others compound, as y^t^ is simple adultrie, or inceste, or simple sodomie; but when ther is a mixture of diverce kinds of lust, as when adultery & sodomie & p^r^ditio seminis goe togeather in y^e^ same acte of uncleannes, this is capitall, double, & trible. Againe, when adultrie or sodomie is comited by pfessors or church members, I fear it coms too near y^e^ sine of y^e^ preists daughters, forbidden, & comanded to be punished, Levit: 21. 9. besids y^e^ presumption of y^e^ sines of such. Againe, when uncleannes is comited with those whose chastity they are bound to pserve, this coms very nere the incestious copulation, I feare; but I must hasten to y^e^ other questions.

[248] 2. Question y^e^ second, upon y^e^ pointe of examination, how farr a magistrate may extracte a confession from a delinquente to accuse him selfe in a capitall crime, seeing Nemo tenetur prodere seipsum.

Ans: The words of y^e^ question may be understood of extracting a confession from a delinquente either by oath or bodily tormente. If it be mente of extracting by requiring an oath, (ex officio, as some call it,) & that in capitall crimes, I fear it is not safe, nor warented by Gods word, to extracte a confession from a delinquente by an oath in matters of life and death. (1.) Because y^e^ practise in y^e^ Scripturs is other wise, as in y^e^ case of Achan, Jos: 7. 19. Give, I pray y^e^, glorie to y^e^ Lord God of Israll, and make a confession to him, & tell me how thou hast done. He did not compell him to sweare. So when as Johnathans life was indangered, 1. Sam. 14. 43. Saule said unto Johnathan, Tell me what thou hast done; he did not require an oath. And notable is y^t^, Jer: 38. 14. Jeremiah was charged by Zedechias, who said, I will aske the a thing, hide it not

from me; & Jeremiah said, If I declare it unto y^e^, wilt thou not surely put me to death? impling y^t^, in case of death, he would have refused to answer him. (2.) Reason shews it, & experience; Job: 2. 4. Skin for skin, &c. It is to be feared y^t^ those words (whatsoever a man hath) will comprehend also y^e^ conscience of an oath, and y^e^ fear of God, and all care of religion; therfore for laying a snare before y^e^ guiltie, I think it ought not to be donn. But now, if y^e^ question be mente of inflicting bodyly torments to extracte a confession from a mallefactor, I conceive y^t^ in maters of higest consequence, such as doe conceirne y^e^ saftie or ruine of stats or countries, magistrats may proceede so farr to bodily torments, as racks, hote-irons, &c., to extracte a confession, espetially wher presumptions are strounge; but otherwise by no means. God sometims hids a sinner till his wickednes is filled up.

Question 3. In what cases of capitall crimes, one witnes with other circumstances shall be sufficente to convicte, or is ther no conviction without 2. witneses?

Deut: 19. 25. God hath given an express rule y^t^ in no case one witness shall arise in judgmente, espetially not in capitall cases. God would not put our lives into y^e^ power of any one toungue. Besids, by y^e^ examination of more wittneses agreeing or disagreeing, any falshood ordenarilly may be discovered; but this is to be understood of one witnes of another; but if a man witnes against him selfe, his owne testimony is sufficente, as in y^e^ case of y^e^ Amalakite, 2. Sam: 1. 16. Againe, when ther are sure & certaine signes & evidences by circumstances, ther needs no witnes in this case, as in y^e^ bussines of Adoniah desiring Abishage y^e^ Shunamite to wife, that therby he might make way for him selfe unto y^e^ kingdome, 1. King: 2. 23, 24. Againe, probably by many concurring circumstances, if probabillity may have y^e^ strength of a witnes, somthing may be this

way gathered, me thinks, from Sallomons judging betweexte y^e^ true mother, and y^e^ harlote, 1. King. 3. 25. Lastly, I see no cause why in waighty matters, in defecte of witneses & other proofes, we may not have recourse to a lott, as in y^e^ case of Achan, Josu: 7. 16. which is a clearer way in such doubtfull cases (it being solemnely & religiously performed) then any other that I know, if it be made y^e^ last refuge. But all this under correction.

The Lord in mercie directe & prosper y^e^ desires of his servants that desire to walk before him in truth & righteousnes in the administration of justice, and give them wisdome and largnes of harte.

CHARLES CHANNCY.

Besids y^e^ occation before mentioned in these writings concerning the abuse of those 2. children, they had aboute y^e^ same time a case of buggerie fell out amongst them, which occasioned these questions, to which these answers have been made.

And after y^e^ time of y^e^ writ̄g of these things befell a very sadd accidente of the like foule nature in this govermente, this very year, which I shall now relate. Ther was a youth whose name was Thomas Granger; he was servant to an honest man of Duxbery, being aboute 16. or 17. years of age. (His father & mother lived at the same time at Sityate.) He was this year detected of buggery (and indicted for y^e^ same) with a mare, a cowe, tow goats, five sheep, 2. calves, and a turkey. Horrible [249] it is to mention, but y^e^ truth of y^e^ historie requires it. He was first discovered by one y^t^ accidentally

saw his lewd practise towards the mare. (I forbear perticulers.) Being upon it examined and comitted, in y^e^ end he not only confest y^e^ fact with that beast at that time, but sundrie times before, and at severall times with all y^e^ rest of y^e^ forenamed in his indictmente; and this his free-confession was not only in private to y^e^ magistrats, (though at first he strived to deney it,) but to sundrie, both ministers & others, and afterwards, upon his indictmente, to y^e^ whole court & jury; and confirmed it at his execution. And wheras some of y^e^ sheep could not so well be knowne by his description of them, others with them were brought before him, and he declared which were they, and which were not. And accordingly he was cast by y^e^ jury, and condemned, and after executed about y^e^ 8. of Sept^r^, 1642. A very sade spectakle it was; for first the mare, and then y^e^ cowe, and y^e^ rest of y^e^ lesser catle, were kild before his face, according to y^e^ law, Levit: 20. 15. and then he him selfe was executed. The catle were all cast into a great & large pitte that was digged of purposs for them, and no use made of any part of them.

Upon y^e^ examenation of this person, and also of a former that had made some sodomiticall attempts upon another, it being demanded of them how they came first to y^e^ knowledge and practice of such wickednes, the one confessed he had long used it in old England; and this youth last spoaken of said he was taught it

by an other that had heard of such things from some in England when he was ther, and they kept catle togeather. By which it appears how one wicked person may infecte many; and what care all ought to have what servants they bring into their families.

But it may be demanded how came it to pass that so many wicked persons and profane people should so quickly come over into this land, & mixe them selves amongst them? seeing it was religious men y^{t} begane y^{e} work, and they came for religions sake. I confess this may be marveilled at, at least in time to come, when the reasons therof should not be knowne; and y^{e} more because here was so many hardships and wants mett withall. I shall therfore indeavor to give some answer hereunto. And first, according to y^{t} in y^{e} gospell, it is ever to be remembred that wher y^{e} Lord begins to sow good seed, ther y^{e} envious man will endeavore to sow tares. 2. Men being to come over into a wildernes, in which much labour & servise was to be done aboute building & planting, &c., such as wanted help in y^{t} respecte, when they could not have such as y^{ey} would, were glad to take such as they could; and so, many untoward servants, sundry of them proved, that were thus brought over, both men & women kind; who, when their times were expired, became families of them selves, which gave increase hereunto. 3. An other and a maine reason hearof was, that men, find-

ing so many godly disposed persons willing to come into these parts, some begane to make a trade of it, to transeport passengers & their goods, and hired ships for that end; and then, to make up their fraight and advance their profite, cared not who y^e^ persons were, so they had money to pay them. And by this means the cuntrie became pestered with many unworthy persons, who, being come over, crept into one place or other. 4. Againe, the Lords blesing usually following his people, as well in outward as spirituall things, (though afflictions be mixed with-all,) doe make many to adhear to y^e^ people of God, as many followed Christ, for y^e^ loaves sake, Iohn 6. 26. and a mixed multitud came into y^e^ willdernes with y^e^ people of God out of Eagipte of old, Exod. 12. 38; so allso ther were sente by their freinds some under hope y^t^ they would be made better; others that they might be eased of such burthens, and they kept from shame at home y^t^ would necessarily follow their dissolute courses. And thus, by one means or other, in 20. years time, it is a question whether y^e^ greater part be not growne y^e^ worser.

[250] I am now come to y^e^ conclusion of that long & tedious bussines betweene y^e^ partners hear, & them in England, the which I shall manifest by their owne letters as followeth, in such parts of them as are pertinente to y^e^ same.

Mr. Sherleys to Mr. Attwood.

Mr. Attwood, my approved loving freind: Your letter of ye 18. of October last I have received, wherin I find you have taken a great deall of paines and care aboute yt troublesome bussines betwixte our Plimoth partners & freinds, & us hear, and have deeply ingaged your selfe, for which complements & words are no reall satisfaction, &c. For ye agreemente you have made with Mr. Bradford, Mr. Winslow, & ye rest of ye partners ther, considering how honestly and justly I am perswaded they have brought in an accounte of ye remaining stock, for my owne parte I am well satisfied, and so I thinke is Mr. Andrewes, and I supose will be Mr. Beachampe, if most of it might acrew to him, to whom ye least is due, &c. And now for peace sake, and to conclud as we began, lovingly and freindly, and to pass by all failings of all, the conclude is accepted of; I say this agreemente yt you have made is condesended unto, and Mr. Andrews hath sent his release to Mr. Winthrop, with such directions as he conceives fitt; and I have made bould to trouble you with mine, and we have both sealed in ye presence of Mr. Weld, and Mr. Peeters, and some others, and I have also sente you an other, for the partners ther, to seale to me; for you must not deliver mine to them, excepte they seale & deliver one to me; this is fitt and equall, &c.

Yours to comand in what I may or can,

James Sherley.

June 14. 1642.

His to ye partners as followeth.

Loving freinds,

Mr. Bradford, Mr. Winslow, Mr. Prence, Captaine Standish, Mr. Brewster, Mr. Alden, & Mr. Howland, give me leave to joyne you all in one letter, concerning ye finall end

& conclude of y^t^ tedious & troublsome bussines, & I thinke I may truly say uncomfurtable & unprofitable to all, &c. It hath pleased God now to put us upon a way to sease all suits, and disquieting of our spirites, and to conclude with peace and love, as we began. I am contented to yeeld & make good what M^r^. Attwood and you have agreed upon; and for y^t^ end have sente to my loving freind, M^r^. Attwood, an absolute and generall release unto you all, and if ther wante any thing to make it more full, write it your selves, & it shall be done, provided y^t^ all you, either joyntly or severally, seale y^e^ like discharge to me. And for y^t^ end I have drawne one joyntly, and sent it to M^r^. Attwood, with y^t^ I have sealed to you. M^r^. Andrews hath sealed an aquitance also, & sent it to M^r^. Winthrop, whith such directions as he conceived fitt, and, as I hear, hath given his debte, which he maks 544^li^. unto y^e^ gentlemen of y^e^ Bay. Indeed, M^r^. Welld, M^r^. Peters, & M^r^. Hibbens have taken a great deale of paines with Mr. Andrews, M^r^. Beachamp, & my selfe, to bring us to agree, and to y^t^ end we have had many meetings and spent much time aboute it. But as they are very religious & honest gentle-men, yet they had an end y^t^ they drove at & laboured to accomplish (I meane not any private end, but for y^e^ generall good of their patente). It had been very well you had sent one over. M^r^. Andrew wished you might have one 3. parte of y^e^ 1200^li^. & y^e^ Bay 2. thirds; but then we 3. must have agreed togeather, which were a hard mater now. But M^r^. Weld, M^r^. Peters, & M^r^. Hibbens, & I, have agreed, they giving you bond (so to compose with M^r^. Beachamp, as) to procure his generall release, & free you from all trouble & charge y^t^ he may put you too; which indeed is nothing, for I am perswaded M^r^. Weld will in time gaine him to give them all that is dew to [251] him, which in some sorte is granted allready; for though his demands be great, yet M^r^. Andrewes hath taken some paines in it, and makes it appear to be less then I thinke he will consente to give them for so good an

use; so you neede not fear, that for taking bond ther to save you harmles, you be safe and well. Now our accord is, y^t^ you must pay to y^e^ gentle-men of y^e^ Bay 900^li^. ; they are to bear all chargs y^t^ may any way arise concerning y^e^ free & absolute clearing of you from us three. And you to have y^e^ other 300^li^. &c.

Upon y^e^ receiving of my release from you, I will send you your bonds for y^e^ purchass money. I would have sent them now, but I would have M^r^. Beachamp release as well as I, because you are bound to him in them. Now I know if a man be bound to 12. men, if one release, it is as if all released, and my discharge doth cutt them of; wherfore doubte you not but you shall have them, & your comission, or any thing els that is fitt. Now you know ther is tow years of y^e^ purchass money, that I would not owne, for I have formerley certified you y^t^ I would but pay 7. years; but now you are discharged of all, &c.

Your loving and kind friend in what I may or can,

JAMES SHERLEY.

June 14. 1642.

The coppy of his release is as followeth.

Wheras diverce questions, differences, & demands have arisen & depended betweene William Bradford, Edward Winslow, Thomas Prence, Mylest Standish, William Brewster, John Allden, and John Howland, gent: now or latly inhabitants or resident at New-Plimoth, in New-England, on y^e^ one party, and James Sherley of London, marchante, and others, in th' other parte, for & concerning a stocke & partable trade of beaver & other comodities, and fraighting of ships, as y^e^ White Angell, Frindship, or others, and y^e^ goods of Isaack Allerton which were seazed upon by vertue of a leter of atturney made by y^e^ said James Sherley and John Beachamp and Richard Andrews, or any other maters concerning y^e^ said

trade, either hear in Old-England or ther in New-England or elsewher, all which differences are since by mediation of freinds composed, compremissed, and all y^e^ said parties agreed. Now know all men by these presents, that I, the said James Sherley, in performance of y^e^ said compremise & agreemente, have remised, released, and quite claimed, & doe by these presents remise, release, and for me, myne heires, executors, & Administrators, and for every of us, for ever quite claime unto y^e^ said William Bradford, Edward Winslow, Thomas Prence, Myles Standish, William Brewster, John Allden, & John Howland, and every of them, their & every of their heires, executors, and administrators, all and all maner of actions, suits, debts, accounts, rekonings, comissions, bonds, bills, specialties, judgments, executions, claimes, challinges, differences, and demands whatsoever, with or against y^e^ said William Bradford, Edward Winslow, Thomas Prence, Myles Standish, William Brewster, John Allden, and John Howland, or any of them, ever I had, now have, or in time to come can, shall, or may have, for any mater, cause, or thing whatsoever from y^e^ begining of y^e^ world untill y^e^ day of y^e^ date of these presents. In witnes wherof I have hereunto put my hand & seale, given y^e^ second day of June, 1642, and in y^e^ eighteenth year of y^e^ raigne of our soveraigne lord, king Charles, &c.

JAMES SHERLEY.

Sealed and delivered
in y^e^ presence of THOMAS WELD,
HUGH PETERS,
WILLIAM HIBBINS.
ARTHUR TIRREY, Scr.
THO: STURGS, his servante.

M^r^. Andrews his discharg was to y^e^ same effecte; he was by agreemēte to have 500^li^. of y^e^ money, the which

he gave to them in y^e^ Bay, who brought his discharge and demanded y^e^ money. And they tooke in his release and paid y^e^ money according to agreemēte, viz. one third of the 500^li^. they paid downe in hand, and y^e^ rest in 4. equall payments, to be paid yearly, for which they gave their bonds. And wheras 44^li^. was more demanded, they conceived they could take it of with M^r^. Andrews, and therfore it was not in the bonde. [252] But M^r^. Beachamp would not parte with any of his, but demanded 400^li^. of y^e^ partners here, & sent a release to a friend, to deliver it to them upon y^e^ receite of y^e^ money. But his relese was not perfecte, for he had left out some of y^e^ partners names, with some other defects; and besids, the other gave them to understand he had not near so much due. So no end was made with him till 4. years after; of which in it plase. And in y^t^ regard, that them selves did not agree, I shall inserte some part of M^r^. Andrews letter, by which he conceives y^e^ partners here were wronged, as followeth. This leter of his was write to M^r^. Edmond Freeman, brother in law to M^r^. Beachamp.

M^r^. Freeman,

My love remembred unto you, &c. I then certified y^e^ partners how I found M^r^. Beachamp & M^r^. Sherley, in their perticuler demands, which was according to mens principles, of getting what they could; allthough y^e^ one will not shew any accounte, and y^e^ other a very unfaire and unjust one; and both of them discouraged me from sending y^e^ partners my accounte, M^r^. Beachamp espetially. Their reason, I have

cause to conceive, was, y^t^ allthough I doe not, nor ever intended to, wrong y^e^ partners or y^e^ bussines, yet, if I gave no accounte, I might be esteemed as guiltie as they, in some degree at least; and they might seeme to be y^e^ more free from taxation in not delivering their accounts, who have both of them charged y^e^ accounte with much intrest they have payed forth, and one of them would likwise for much intrest he hath not paid forth, as appeareth by his accounte, &c. And seeing y^e^ partners have now made it appear y^t^ ther is 1200^li^. remaining due between us all, and that it may appear by my accounte I have not charged y^e^ bussines with any intrest, but doe forgive it unto y^e^ partners, above 200^li^. if M^r^. Sherley & M^r^. Beachamp, who have betweene them wronged y^e^ bussines so many 100^li^. both in principall & intrest likwise, and have therin wronged me as well and as much as any of y^e^ partners; yet if they will not make & deliver faire & true accounts of y^e^ same, nor be contente to take what by computation is more then can be justly due to either, that is, to M^r^. Beachamp 150^li^. as by M^r^. Allertons accounte, and M^r^. Sherleys accounte, on oath in chancerie; and though ther might be nothing due to M^r^. Sherley, yet he requirs 100^li^. &c. I conceive, seing y^e^ partners have delivered on their oaths y^e^ sume remaining in their hands, that they may justly detaine y^e^ 650^li^. which may remaine in their hands, after I am satisfied, untill M^r^. Sherley & M^r^. Beachamp will be more fair & just in their ending, &c. And as I intend, if y^e^ partners fayrly end with me, in satisfing in parte and ingaging them selves for y^e^ rest of my said 544^li^. to returne back for y^e^ poore my parte of y^e^ land at Sityate, so likwise I intend to relinquish my right & intrest in their dear patente, on which much of our money was laid forth, and also my right & intrest in their cheap purchass, the which may have cost me first & last 350^li^.* But I doubte whether other men have not

* This he means of y^e^ first adventures, all which were lost, as hath before been shown; and what he here writs is probable at least.

charged or taken on accounte what they have disbursed in y^e^ like case, which I have not charged, neither did I conceive any other durst so doe, untill I saw y^e^ accounte of the one and heard y^e^ words of y^e^ other; the which gives me just cause to suspecte both their accounts to be unfaire; for it seemeth they consulted one with another aboute some perticulers therin. Therfore I conceive y^e^ partners ought y^e^ rather to require just accounts from each of them before they parte with any money to either of them. For marchants understand how to give an acounte; if they mean fairley, they will not deney to give an accounte, for they keep memorialls to helpe them to give exacte acounts in all perticulers, and memoriall cannot forget his charge, if y^e^ man will remember. I desire not to wrong M^r^. Beachamp or M^r^. Sherley, nor may be silente in such apparente probabilities of their wronging y^e^ partners, and me likwise, either in deneying to deliver or shew any accounte, or in delivering one very unjuste in some perticulers, and very suspitious in many more; either of which, being from understanding marchants, cannot be from weaknes or simplisitie, and therfore y^e^ more unfaire. So comending you & yours, and all y^e^ Lord's people, unto y^e^ gratious protection and blessing of y^e^ Lord, and rest your loving friend,

RICHARD ANDREWES.

Aprill 7. 1643.

This leter was write y^e^ year after y^e^ agreement, as doth appear; and what his judgmente was herein, y^e^ contents doth manifest, and so I leave it to y^e^ equall judgmente of any to consider, as they see cause.

Only I shall adde what M^r^. Sherley furder write in a leter of his, about y^e^ same time, and so leave this bussines. His is as followeth on y^e^ other side.*

* Being the conclusion, as will be seen, of page 252 of the original.

[253] Loving freinds, M^r^. Bradford, M^r^. Winslow, Cap: Standish, M^r^. Prence, and y^e^ rest of y^e^ partners w^th^ you; I shall write this generall leter to you all, hoping it will be a good conclude of a generall, but a costly & tedious bussines I thinke to all, I am sure to me, &c.

I received from M^r^. Winslow a letter of y^e^ 28. of Sept: last, and so much as concernes y^e^ generall bussines I shall answer in this, not knowing whether I shall have opportunitie to write perticuler letters, &c. I expected more letters from you all, as some perticuler writs,* but it seemeth no fitt opportunity was offered. And now, though y^e^ bussines for y^e^ maine may stand, yet some perticulers is alltered; I say my former agreemente with M^r^. Weld & M^r^. Peters, before they † could conclude or gett any grante of M^r^. Andrews, they sought to have my release; and ther upon they sealed me a bond for a 110^li^. So I sente my acquittance, for they said without mine ther would be no end made (& ther was good reason for it). Now they hoped, if y^ey^ ended with me, to gaine M^r^. Andrews parte, as they did holy, to a pound, (at which I should wonder, but y^t^ I observe some passages,) and they also hoped to have gotten M^r^. Beachamps part, & I did thinke he would have given it them. But if he did well understand him selfe, & that acounte, he would give it; for his demands make a great sound.‡ But it seemeth he would not parte with it, supposing it too great a sume, and y^t^ he might easily gaine it from you. Once he would have given them 40^li^. but now they say he will not doe that, or rather I suppose they will not take it; for if they doe, & have M^r^. Andrewses, then they must pay me their bond of 110^li^. 3 months hence. Now it will fall out farr better for you, y^t^ they deal not with M^r^. Beachamp, and also for me, if you

* Perhaps *write*, for *wrote*.

† *The* in the manuscript.

‡ This was a misterie to them, for they heard nothing hereof from any side y^e^ last year, till now y^e^ conclution was past, and bonds given.

be as kind to me as I have been & will be to you; and y^t^ thus, if you pay M^r^. Andrews, or y^e^ Bay men, by his order, 544^li^. which is his full demande; but if looked into, perhaps might be less. The man is honest, & in my conscience would not wittingly doe wronge, yett he may forgett as well as other men; and M^r^. Winslow may call to minde wherin he forgetts; (but some times it is good to buy peace.) The gentlemen of y^e^ Bay may abate 100^li^. and so both sids have more right & justice then if they exacte all, &c. Now if you send me a 150^li^. then say M^r^. Andrews full sume, & this, it is nere 700^li^. M^r^. Beachamp he demands 400^li^. and we all know that, if a man demands money, he must shew wherfore, and make proofe of his debte; which I know he can never make good proafe of one hunderd pound dew unto him as principall money; so till he can, you have good reason to keep y^e^ 500^li^. &c. This I proteste I write not in malice against M^r^. Beachamp, for it is a reall truth. You may partly see it by M^r^. Andrews making up his accounte, and I think you are all perswaded I can say more then M^r^. Andrews concerning that accounte. I wish I could make up my owne as plaine & easily, but because of former discontents, I will be sparing till I be called; & you may injoye y^e^ 500^li^. quietly till he begine; for let him take his course hear or ther, it shall be all one, I will doe him no wronge; and if he have not on peney more, he is less loser then either M^r^. Andrews or I. This I conceive to be just & honest; y^e^ having or not having of his release matters not; let him make such proafe of his debte as you cannot disprove, and according to your first agreemente you will pay it, &c.

Your truly affectioned freind,

JAMES SHERLEY.

London, Aprill 27. 1643.

Anno Dom: 1643.

I AM to begine this year whith that which was a mater of great saddnes and moūring unto them all. Aboute y^e^ 18. of Aprill dyed their Reve^d^ Elder, and my dear & loving friend, M^r^. William Brewster; a man that had done and suffered much for y^e^ Lord Jesus and y^e^ gospells sake, and had bore his parte in well and woe with this poore persecuted church above 36. years [254] in England, Holand, and in this wildernes, and done y^e^ Lord & them faithfull service in his place & calling. And notwithstanding y^e^ many troubls and sorrows he passed throw, the Lord upheld him to a great age. He was nere fourskore years of age (if not all out) when he dyed. He had this blesing added by y^e^ Lord to all y^e^ rest, to dye in his bed, in peace, amongst y^e^ mids of his freinds, who mourned & wepte over him, and ministered what help & comforte they could unto him, and he againe re-comforted them whilst he could. His sicknes was not long, and till y^e^ last day therof he did not wholy keepe his bed. His speech continued till somewhat more then halfe a day, & then failed him; and aboute 9. or 10. a clock that evīng he dyed, without any pangs at all. A few howers before, he drew his breath shorte, and some few minuts before his last, he drew his breath long, as a man falen into a sound slepe, without any pangs or gaspings, and so sweetly departed this life unto a better.

I would now demand of any, what he was y^e^ worse for any former sufferings? What doe I say, worse? Nay, sure he was y^e^ better, and they now added to his honour. *It is a manifest token* (saith y^e^ Apostle, 2. Thes: 1. 5, 6, 7.) *of y^e^ righeous judgmente of God y^t^ ye may be counted worthy of y^e^ kingdome of God, for which ye allso suffer; seing it is a righteous thing with God to recompence tribulation to them y^t^ trouble you: and to you who are troubled, rest with us, when y^e^ Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven, with his mighty angels.* 1. Pet. 4. 14. *If you be reproached for y^e^ name of Christ, hapy are ye, for y^e^ spirite of glory and of God resteth upon you.* What though he wanted y^e^ riches and pleasurs of y^e^ world in this life, and pompous monuments at his funurall? yet y^e^ memoriall of y^e^ just shall be blessed, when y^e^ name of y^e^ wicked shall rott (with their marble monuments). Pro: 10. 7.

I should say something of his life, if to say a litle were not worse then to be silent. But I cannot wholy forbear, though hapily more may be done hereafter. After he had attained some learning, viz. y^e^ knowledg of y^e^ Latine tongue, & some insight in y^e^ Greeke, and spent some small time at Cambridge, and then being first seasoned with y^e^ seeds of grace and vertue, he went to y^e^ Courte, and served that religious and godly gentlman, M^r^. Davison, diverce years, when he was Secretary of State; who found him so discreete and faithfull

as he trusted him above all other that were aboute him, and only imployed him in all matters of greatest trust and secrecie. He esteemed him rather as a sonne then a servante, and for his wisdom & godlines (in private) he would converse with him more like a freind & familier then a maister. He attended his mr. when he was sente in ambassage by the Queene into ye Low-Countries, in ye Earle of Leicesters time, as for other waighty affaires of state, so to receive possession of the cautionary townes, and in token & signe therof the keyes of Flushing being delivered to him, in her matis name, he kepte them some time, and comitted them to this his servante, who kept them under his pilow, on which he slepte ye first night. And, at his returne, ye States honoured him with a gould chaine, and his maister comitted it to him, and comanded him to wear it when they arrived in England, as they ridd thorrow the country, till they came to ye Courte. He afterwards remained with him till his troubles, that he was put from his place aboute ye death of ye Queene of Scots; and some good time after, doeing him manie faithfull offices of servise in ye time of his troubles. Afterwards he wente and lived in ye country, in good esteeme amongst his freinds and ye gentle-men of those parts, espetially the godly & religious. He did much good in ye countrie wher he lived, in promoting and furthering religion, not only by his practiss & example, and provocking and incouraging of others, but by procuring

of good preachers to y^e^ places theraboute, and drawing on of others to assiste & help forward in such a worke; he him selfe most comonly deepest in y^e^ charge, & some times above his abillitie. And in this state he continued many years, doeing y^e^ best good he could, and walking according to y^e^ light he saw, till y^e^ Lord reveiled further unto him. And in y^e^ end, by y^e^ tirrany of y^e^ bishops against godly preachers & people, in silenceing the one & persecuting y^e^ other, he and many more of those times begane to looke further into things, and to see into y^e^ unlawfullnes of their callings, and y^e^ burthen of many anti-christian corruptions, which both he and they endeavored to cast of; as y^ey^ allso did, as in y^e^ begining of this treatis is to be seene. [255] After they were joyned togither in comunion, he was a spetiall stay & help unto them. They ordinarily mett at his house on y^e^ Lords day, (which was a manor of y^e^ bishops,) and with great love he entertained them when they came, making provission for them to his great charge. He was y^e^ cheefe of those that were taken at Boston, and suffered y^e^ greatest loss; and of y^e^ seven that were kept longst in prison, and after bound over to y^e^ assises. Affter he came into Holland he suffered much hardship, after he had spente y^e^ most of his means, haveing a great charge, and many children; and, in regard of his former breeding & course of life, not so fitt for many imployments as others were, espetially such as were toylesume &

laborious. But yet he ever bore his condition with much cherfullnes and contentation. Towards y^e^ later parte of those 12. years spente in Holland, his outward condition was mended, and he lived well & plentifully; for he fell into a way (by reason he had y^e^ Latine tongue) to teach many students, who had a disire to lerne y^e^ English tongue, to teach them English; and by his method they quickly attained it with great facilitie; for he drew rules to lerne it by, after y^e^ Latine maner; and many gentlemen, both Danes & Germans, resorted to him, as they had time from other studies, some of them being great mens sōnes. He also had means to set up printing, (by y^e^ help of some freinds,) and so had imployemente inoughg, and by reason of many books which would not be alowed to be printed in England, they might have had more then they could doe. But now removeing into this countrie, all these things were laid aside againe, and a new course of living must be framed unto; in which he was no way unwilling to take his parte, and to bear his burthen with y^e^ rest, living many times without bread, or corne, many months together, having many times nothing but fish, and often wanting that also; and drunke nothing but water for many years togeather, yea, till within 5. or 6. years of his death. And yet he lived (by y^e^ blessing of God) in health till very old age. And besids y^t^, he would labour with his hands in y^e^ feilds as long as he was able; yet when the

church had no other minister, he taught twise every Saboth, and y^t^ both powerfully and profitably, to y^e^ great contentment of y^e^ hearers, and their comfortable edification; yea, many were brought to God by his ministrie. He did more in this behalfe in a year, then many that have their hundreds a year doe in all their lives. For his personall abilities, he was qualified above many; he was wise and discreete and well spoken, having a grave & deliberate utterance, of a very cherfull spirite, very sociable & pleasante amongst his freinds, of an humble and modest mind, of a peaceable disposition, under vallewing him self & his owne abilities, and some time over valewing others; inoffencive and iñocente in his life & conversation, w^ch^ gained him y^e^ love of those without, as well as those within; yet he would tell them plainely of their faults & evills, both publickly & privatly, but in such a maner as usually was well taken from him. He was tender harted, and compassionate of such as were in miserie, but espetialy of such as had been of good estate and ranke, and were fallen unto want & poverty, either for goodnes & religions sake, or by y^e^ injury & oppression of others; he would say, of all men these deserved to be pitied most. And none did more offend & displease him then such as would hautily and proudly carry & lift up themselves, being rise from nothing, and haveing litle els in them to comend them but a few fine cloaths, or a litle riches more then others. In

teaching, he was very moving & stirring of affections, also very plaine & distincte in what he taught; by which means he became y^e^ more profitable to y^e^ hearers. He had a singuler good gift in prayer, both publick & private, in ripping up y^e^ hart & conscience before God, in y^e^ humble confession of sinne, and begging y^e^ mercies of God in Christ for y^e^ pardon of y^e^ same. He always thought it were better for ministers to pray oftener, and devide their prears, then be longe & tedious in y^e^ same (excepte upon sollemne & spetiall occations, as in days of humiliation & y^e^ like). His reason was, that y^e^ harte & spirits of all, espetialy y^e^ weake, could hardly continue & stand bente (as it were) so long towards God, as they ought to doe in y^t^ duty, without flagging and falling of. For y^e^ govermente of y^e^ church, (which was most [256] proper to his office,) he was carfull to preserve good order in y^e^ same, and to preserve puritie, both in y^e^ doctrine & comunion of y^e^ same; and to supress any errour or contention that might begine to rise up amongst them; and accordingly God gave good success to his indeavors herein all his days, and he saw y^e^ fruite of his labours in that behalfe. But I must breake of, having only thus touched a few, as it were, heads of things.

I cannot but here take occasion, not only to mention, but greatly to admire y^e^ marvelous providence of God, that notwithstanding y^e^ many changes and

hardships that these people wente throwgh, and y^e^ many enemies they had and difficulties they mette with all, that so many of them should live to very olde age! It was not only this reve^d^ mans condition, (for one swallow maks no summer, as they say,) but many more of them did y^e^ like, some dying aboute and before this time, and many still living, who attained to 60. years of age, and to 65. diverse to 70. and above, and some nere 80. as he did. It must needs be more then ordinarie, and above naturall reason, that so it should be; for it is found in experience, that chaing of aeir, famine, or unholsome foode, much drinking of water, sorrows & troubls, &c., all of them are enimies to health, causes of many diseaces, consumers of naturall vigoure and y^e^ bodys of men, and shortners of life. And yet of all these things they had a large parte, and suffered deeply in y^e^ same. They wente from England to Holand, wher they found both worse air and dyet then that they came from; from thence (induring a long imprisonmente, as it were, in y^e^ ships at sea) into New-England; and how it hath been with them hear hath allready beene showne; and what crosses, troubls, fears, wants, and sorrowes they had been lyable unto, is easie to conjecture; so as in some sorte they may say with y^e^ Apostle, 2. Cor: 11. 26, 27. they were *in journeyings often, in perils of waters, in perills of robers, in perills of their owne nation, in perils among y^e^ heathen, in perills in y^e^ willdernes, in perills in y^e^ sea,*

in perills among false breethern; in wearines & painfullnes, in watching often, in hunger and thirst, in fasting often, in could and nakednes. What was it then that upheld them? It was Gods vissitation that preserved their spirits. Job 10. 12. *Thou hast given me life and grace, and thy vissitation hath preserved my spirite.* He that upheld y^e^ Apostle upheld them. *They were persecuted, but not forsaken, cast downe, but perished not.* 2. Cor: 4. 9. *As unknowen, and yet knowen; as dying, and behold we live; as chastened, and yett not kiled.* 2. Cor: 6. 9. God, it seems, would have all men to behold and observe such mercies and works of his providence as these are towards his people, that they in like cases might be incouraged to depend upon God in their trials, & also blese his name when they see his goodnes towards others. Man lives not by bread only, Deut: 8. 3. It is not by good & dainty fare, by peace, & rest, and harts ease, in injoying y^e^ contentments and good things of this world only, that preserves health and prolongs life. God in such examples would have y^e^ world see & behold that he can doe it without them; and if y^e^ world will shut ther eyes, and take no notice therof, yet he would have his people to see and consider it. Daniell could be better liking with pulse then others were with y^e^ kings dainties. Jaacob, though he wente from one nation to another people, and passed thorow famine, fears, & many afflictions, yet he lived till old age, and

dyed sweetly, & rested in y^e^ Lord, as infinite others of Gods servants have done, and still shall doe, (through Gods goodnes,) notwithstanding all y^e^ malice of their enemies; *when y^e^ branch of y^e^ wicked shall be cut of before his day*, Job. 15. 32. *and y^e^ bloody and deceitfull men shall not live out halfe their days.* Psa: 55. 23.

By reason of y^e^ plottings of the Narigansets, (ever since y^e^ Pequents warr,) the Indeans were drawne into a generall conspiracie against y^e^ English in all parts, as was in part discovered y^e^ yeare before; and now made more plaine and evidente by many discoveries and free-conffessions of sundrie Indeans (upon severall occasions) from diverse places, concuring in one; with such other concuring circomstances as gave them suffissently to understand the trueth therof, and to thinke of means how to prevente y^e^ same, and secure them selves. Which made them enter into this more nere union & confederation following.

[257] Articles of Conffederation betweene y^e^ Plantations under y^e^ Govermente of Massachusets, y^e^ Plantations under y^e^ Govermente of New-Plimoth, y^e^ Plantations under y^e^ Govermente of Conightecute, and y^e^ Govermente of New-Haven, with y^e^ Plantations in combination therwith.

Wheras we all came into these parts of America with one and y^e^ same end and aime, namly, to advance the kingdome of our Lord Jesus Christ, & to injoye y^e^ liberties of y^e^ Gospell in puritie with peace; and wheras in our setling (by a wise providence of God) we are further disperced upon y^e^ sea

coasts and rivers then was at first intended, so y^t^ we cannot, according to our desires, with conveniencie comunicate in one govermente & jurisdiction; and wheras we live encompassed with people of severall nations and strang languages, which hereafter may prove injurious to us and our posteritie; and for as much as y^e^ natives have formerly comitted sundrie insolencies and outrages upon severall plantations of y^e^ English, and have of late combined them selves against us; and seeing, by reason of those distractions in England (which they have heard of) and by which they know we are hindered from y^t^ humble way of seeking advice or reaping those comfurtable fruits of protection which at other times we might well expecte; we therfore doe conceive it our bounden duty, without delay, to enter into a presente consociation amongst our selves, for mutuall help & strength in all our future concernments. That as in nation and religion, so in other respects, we be & continue one, according to y^e^ tenor and true meaning of the insuing articles. (1) Wherfore it is fully agreed and concluded by & betweene y^e^ parties or jurisdictions above named, and they joyntly & severally doe by these presents agree & conclude, that they all be and henceforth be called by y^e^ name of The United Colonies of New-England.

2. The said United Collonies, for them selves & their posterities, doe joyntly & severally hereby enter into a firme & perpetuall league of frendship & amitie, for offence and defence, mutuall advice and succore upon all just occasions, both for preserving & propagating y^e^ truth of y^e^ Gospell, and for their owne mutuall saftie and wellfare.

3. It is further agreed that the plantations which at presente are or hereafter shall be setled with[in] y^e^ limites of y^e^ Massachusets shall be for ever under y^e^ Massachusets, and shall have peculier jurisdiction amonge them selves in all cases, as an intire body. And y^t^ Plimoth, Conightecutt, and

New-Haven shall each of them have like peculier jurisdition and govermente within their limites and in refference to y^e^ plantations which allready are setled, or shall hereafter be erected, or shall setle within their limites, respectively; provided y^t^ no other jurisdition shall hereafter be taken in, as a distincte head or member of this confederation, nor shall any other plantation or jurisdiction in presente being, and not allready in combination or under y^e^ jurisdiction of any of these confederats, be received by any of them; nor shall any tow of y^e^ confederats joyne in one jurisdiction, without consente of y^e^ rest, which consẽte to be interpreted as is expresed in y^e^ sixte article ensewing.

4. It is by these conffederats agreed, y^t^ the charge of all just warrs, whether offencive or defencive, upon what parte or member of this confederation soever they fall, shall, both in men, provissions, and all other disbursments, be borne by all y^e^ parts of this confederation, in differente proportions, according to their differente abillities, in maner following: namely, y^t^ the comissioners for each jurisdiction, from time to time, as ther shall be occasion, bring a true accounte and number of all their males in every plantation, or any way belonging too or under their severall jurisdictions, of what qualitie or condition soever they be, from 16. years old to 60. being inhabitants ther; and y^t^ according to y^e^ differente numbers which from time to time shall be found in each jurisdiction upon a true & just accounte, the service of men and all charges of y^e^ warr be borne by y^e^ pole; each jurisdiction or plantation being left to their owne just course & custome of rating them selves and people according to their differente estates, with due respects to their qualities and exemptions amongst them selves, though the confederats take no notice of any such priviledg. And y^t^ according to their differente charge of each jurisdiction & plantation, the whole advantage of y^e^ warr, (if it please God to blesse their

indeaours,) whether it be in lands, goods, or persons, shall be proportionably devided amonge y^e^ said confederats.

5. It is further agreed, that if these jurisdictions, or any plantation under or in combynacion with them, be invaded by any enemie whomsoever, upon notice & requeste of any 3. [258] magistrats of y^t^ jurisdiction so invaded, y^e^ rest of y^e^ confederats, without any further meeting or expostulation, shall forthwith send ayde to y^e^ confederate in danger, but in differente proportion; namely, y^e^ Massachusets an hundred men sufficently armed & provided for such a service and journey, and each of y^e^ rest forty five so armed & provided, or any lesser number, if less be required according to this proportion. But if such confederate in danger may be supplyed by their nexte confederates, not exeeding y^e^ number hereby agreed, they may crave help ther, and seeke no further for y^e^ presente; y^e^ charge to be borne as in this article is exprest, and at y^e^ returne to be victuled & suplyed with powder & shote for their jurney (if ther be need) by y^t^ jurisdiction which imployed or sent for them. But none of y^e^ jurisdictions to exceede these numbers till, by a meeting of y^e^ comissioners for this confederation, a greater aide appear nessessarie. And this proportion to continue till upon knowlege of greater numbers in each jurisdiction, which shall be brought to y^e^ nexte meeting, some other proportion be ordered. But in such case of sending men for presente aide, whether before or after such order or alteration, it is agreed y^t^ at y^e^ meeting of y^e^ comissioners for this confederation, the cause of such warr or invasion be duly considered; and if it appeare y^t^ the falte lay in y^e^ parties so invaded, y^t^ then that jurisdiction or plantation make just satisfaction both to y^e^ invaders whom they have injured, and beare all y^e^ charges of y^e^ warr them selves, without requiring any allowance from y^e^ rest of y^e^ confederats towards y^e^ same. And further, y^t^ if any jurisdiction see any danger of any invasion

approaching, and ther be time for a meeting, that in such a case 3. magistrats of y^{t} jurisdiction may sum̄one a meeting, at such conveniente place as them selves shall thinke meete, to consider & provid against y^{e} threatened danger, provided when they are mett, they may remove to what place they please; only, whilst any of these foure confederats have but 3 magistrats in their jurisdiction, their requeste, or summons, from any 2. of them shall be accounted of equall force with y^{e} 3. mentioned in both the clauses of this article, till ther be an increase of majestrats ther.

6. It is also agreed y^{t}, for y^{e} managing & concluding of all affairs propper, & concerning the whole confederation, tow comissioners shall be chosen by & out of each of these 4. jurisdictions; namly, 2. for y^{e} Massachusets, 2. for Plimoth, 2. for Conightecutt, and 2. for New-Haven, being all in church fellowship with us, which shall bring full power from their severall Generall Courts respectively to hear, examene, waigh, and detirmine all affairs of warr, or peace, leagues, aids, charges, and numbers of men for warr, divissions of spoyles, & whatsoever is gotten by conquest; receiving of more confederats, or plantations into combination with any of y^{e} confederates, and all things of like nature, which are y^{e} proper concomitants or consequences of such a confederation, for amitie, offence, & defence; not intermedling with y^{e} govermente of any of y^{e} jurisdictions, which by y^{e} 3. article is preserved entirely to them selves. But if these 8. comissioners when they meete shall not all agree, yet it concluded that any 6. of the 8. agreeing shall have power to setle & determine y^{e} bussines in question. But if 6. doe not agree, that then such propositions, with their reasons, so farr as they have been debated, be sente, and referred to y^{e} 4. Generall Courts, viz. y^{e} Massachusets, Plimoth, Conightecutt, and New-haven; and if at all y^{e} said Generall Courts y^{e} bussines so referred be con-

cluded, then to be prosecuted by y^e^ confederats, and all their members. It was further agreed that these 8. comissioners shall meete once every year, besids extraordinarie meetings, (according to the fifte article,) to consider, treate, & conclude of all affaires belonging to this confederation, which meeting shall ever be y^e^ first Thursday in September. And y^t^ the next meeting after the date of these presents, which shall be accounted y^e^ second meeting, shall be at Boston in y^e^ Massachusets, the 3. at Hartford, the 4. at New-Haven, the 5. at Plimoth, and so in course successively, if in y^e^ meane time some midle place be not found out and agreed on, which may be comodious for all y^e^ jurisdictions.

7. It is further agreed, y^t^ at each meeting of these 8. comissioners, whether ordinarie, or extraordinary, they all 6. of them agreeing as before, may chuse a presidente out of them selves, whose office & work shall be to take care and directe for order, and a comly carrying on of all proceedings in y^e^ present meeting; but he shall be invested with no such power or respecte, as by which he shall hinder y^e^ propounding or progrese of any bussines, or any way cast y^e^ scailes otherwise then in y^e^ precedente article is agreed.

[259] 8. It is also agreed, y^t^ the comissioners for this confederation hereafter at their meetings, whether ordinary or extraordinarie, as they may have comission or opportunitie, doe indeaover to frame and establish agreements & orders in generall cases of a civill nature, wherin all y^e^ plantations are interessed, for y^e^ preserving of peace amongst them selves, and preventing as much as may be all occasions of warr or difference with others; as aboute y^e^ free & speedy passage of justice, in every jurisdiction, to all y^e^ confederats equally as to their owne; not receiving those y^t^ remove from one plantation to another without due

certificate; how all y^e^ jurisdictions may carry towards y^e^ Indeans, that they neither growe insolente, nor be injured without due satisfaction, least warr breake in upon the confederats through such miscarriages. It is also agreed, y^t^ if any servante rune away from his maister into another of these confederated jurisdictions, that in such case, upon y^e^ certificate of one magistrate in y^e^ jurisdiction out of which y^e^ said servante fledd, or upon other due proofe, the said servante shall be delivered, either to his maister, or any other y^t^ pursues & brings such certificate or proofe. And y^t^ upon y^e^ escape of any prisoner whatsoever, or fugitive for any criminall cause, whether breaking prison, or getting from y^e^ officer, or otherwise escaping, upon y^e^ certificate of 2. magistrats of y^e^ jurisdiction out of which y^e^ escape is made, that he was a prisoner, or such an offender at y^e^ time of y^e^ escape, they magistrats, or sume of them of y^t^ jurisdiction wher for y^e^ presente the said prisoner or fugitive abideth, shall forthwith grante such a warrante as y^e^ case will beare, for y^e^ apprehending of any such person, & y^e^ delivering of him into y^e^ hands of y^e^ officer, or other person who pursues him. And if ther be help required, for y^e^ safe returning of any such offender, then it shall be granted to him y^t^ craves y^e^ same, he paying the charges therof.

9. And for y^t^ the justest warrs may be of dangerous consequence, espetially to y^e^ smaler plantations in these United Collonies, it is agreed y^t^ neither y^e^ Massachusets, Plimoth, Conightecutt, nor New-Haven, nor any member of any of them, shall at any time hear after begine, undertake, or ingage them selves, or this confederation, or any parte therof, in any warr whatsoever, (sudden * exegents, with y^e^ necessary consequents therof excepted, which are also to be moderated as much as y^e^ case will permitte,)

* Substituted for *sundry* on the authority of the original MS. Records.

without y^e^ consente and agreemente of y^e^ forementioned 8. comissioners, or at y^e^ least 6. of them, as in y^e^ sixt article is provided. And y^t^ no charge be required of any of they confederats, in case of a defensive warr, till y^e^ said comissioners have mett, and approved y^e^ justice of y^e^ warr, and have agreed upon y^e^ sum̄e of money to be levied, which sume is then to be paid by the severall confederats in proportion according to y^e^ fourth article.

10. That in extraordinary occasions, when meetings are summoned by three magistrates of any jurisdiction, or 2. as in y^e^ 5. article, if any of y^e^ comissioners come not, due warning being given or sente, it is agreed y^t^ 4. of the comissioners shall have power to directe a warr which cannot be delayed, and to send for due proportions of men out of each jurisdiction, as well as 6. might doe if all mett; but not less then 6. shall determine the justice of y^e^ warr, or alow y^e^ demands or bills of charges, or cause any levies to be made for y^e^ same.

11. It is further agreed, y^t^ if any of y^e^ confederats shall hereafter breake any of these presente articles, or be any other ways injurious to any one of y^e^ other jurisdictions, such breach of agreemente or injurie shall be duly considered and ordered by y^e^ comissioners for y^e^ other jurisdiction; that both peace and this presente confederation may be intirly preserved without violation.

12. Lastly, this perpetuall confederation, and y^e^ severall articles therof being read, and seriously considered, both by y^e^ Generall Courte for y^e^ Massachusets, and by y^e^ comissioners for Plimoth, Conigtecute, & New-Haven, were fully alowed & confirmed by 3. of y^e^ forenamed confederats, namly, y^e^ Massachusets, Conightecutt, and New-Haven; only y^e^ comissioners for Plimoth haveing no com̄ission to conclude, desired respite till they might advise with their Generall Courte; wher upon it was agreed and concluded

by y^e^ said Courte of y^e^ Massachusets, and the comissioners for y^e^ other tow confederats, that, if Plimoth consente, then the whole treaty as it stands in these present articls is, and shall continue, firme & stable without alteration. But if Plimoth come not in, yet y^e^ other three confederats doe by these presents [260] confeirme y^e^ whole confederation, and y^e^ articles therof; only in September nexte, when y^e^ second meeting of y^e^ comissioners is to be at Boston, new consideration may be taken of y^e^ 6. article, which concerns number of comissioners for meeting & concluding the affaires of this confederation, to y^e^ satisfaction of y^e^ Courte of y^e^ Massachusets, and y^e^ comissioners for y^e^ other 2. confederats, but y^e^ rest to stand unquestioned. In y^e^ testimonie wherof, y^e^ Generall Courte of y^e^ Massachusets, by ther Secretary, and y^e^ comissioners for Conightecutt and New-Haven, have subscribed these presente articles this 19. of y^e^ third month, comonly called May, Anno Dom: 1643.

At a meeting of y^e^ comissioners for y^e^ confederation held at Boston y^e^ 7. of Sept: it appearing that the Generall Courte of New-Plimoth, and y^e^ severall towneshipes therof, have read & considered & approved these articles of confederation, as appeareth by comission from their Generall Courte bearing date y^e^ 29. of August, 1643. to M^r^. Edward Winslow and M^r^. William Collier, to ratifie and confirme y^e^ same on their behalfes. We, therfore, y^e^ Comissioners for y^e^ Massachusets, Conightecutt, & New Haven, doe also, for our severall goverments, subscribe unto them.

JOHN WINTHROP, Gov^r^. of y^e^ Massachusest.
THO: DUDLEY. THEOPH: EATON.
GEO: FENWICK. EDWA: HOPKINS.
THOMAS GREGSON.

These were y^e^ articles of agreemente in y^e^ union and confederation which they now first entered into; and in

this their first meeting, held at Boston y^e^ day & year abovesaid, amongst other things they had this matter of great consequence to considere on: the Narigansets, after y^e^ subduing of y^e^ Pequents, thought to have ruled over all y^e^ Indeans aboute them; but y^e^ English, espetially those of Conightecutt holding correspondencie & frenship with Uncass, sachem of y^e^ Monhigg Indeans which lived nere them, (as y^e^ Massachusets had done with y^e^ Narigansets,) and he had been faithfull to them in y^e^ Pequente warr, they were ingaged to supporte him in his just liberties, and were contented y^t^ such of y^e^ surviving Pequents as had submited to him should remaine with him and quietly under his protection. This did much increase his power and augmente his greatnes, which y^e^ Narigansets could not indure to see. But Myantinomo, their cheefe sachem, (an ambitious & politick man,) sought privatly and by trearchery (according to y^e^ Indean maner) to make him away, by hiring some to kill him. Sometime they assayed to poyson him; that not takeing, then in y^e^ night time to knock him on y^e^ head in his house, or secretly to shoot him, and such like attempts. But none of these taking effecte, he made open warr upon him (though it was against y^e^ covenants both betweene y^e^ English & them, as also betweene them selves, and a plaine breach of y^e^ same). He came suddanly upon him with 900. or 1000. men (never denouncing any warr before). Y^e^ others power at y^t^ presente was not above halfe so many;

but it pleased God to give Uncass y^e^ victory, and he slew many of his men, and wounded many more; but y^e^ cheefe of all was, he tooke Miantinomo prisoner. And seeing he was a greate man, and y^e^ Narigansets a potente people & would seeke revenge, he would doe nothing in y^e^ case without y^e^ advise of y^e^ English; so he (by y^e^ help & direction of those of Conightecutt) kept him prisoner till this meeting of y^e^ comissioners. The comissioners weighed y^e^ cause and passages, as they were clearly represented & sufficently evidenced betwixte Uncass and Myantinomo; and the things being duly considered, the comissioners apparently saw y^t^ Uncass could not be safe whilst Miantynomo lived, but, either by secrete trechery or open force, his life would still be in danger. Wherfore they thought he might justly put such a false & bloud-thirstie enimie to death; but in his owne jurisdiction, not in y^e^ English plantations. And they advised, in y^e^ maner of his death all mercy and moderation should be showed, contrary to y^e^ practise of y^e^ Indeans, who exercise torturs and cruelty. And, [261] Uncass having hitherto shewed him selfe a freind to y^e^ English, and in this craving their advise, if the Narigansett Indeans or others shall unjustly assaulte Uncass for this execution, upon notice and request, y^e^ English promise to assiste and protecte him as farr as they may agaīste such violence.

This was y^e^ issue of this bussines. The reasons and passages hereof are more at large to be seene in y^e^ acts

& records of this meeting of y^e^ comissioners. And Uncass followd this advise, and accordingly executed him, in a very faire maner, acording as they advised, with due respecte to his honour & greatnes. But what followed on y^e^ Narigansets parte will appear hear after.

Anno Dom: 1644.

M^R^. Edward Winslow was chosen Gov^r^ this year.

Many having left this place (as is before noted) by reason of y^e^ straightnes & barrennes of y^e^ same, and their finding of better accommodations elsewher, more sutable to their ends & minds; and sundrie others still upon every occasion desiring their dismissions, the church begane seriously to thinke whether it were not better joyntly to remove to some other place, then to be thus weakened, and as it were insensibly dissolved. Many meetings and much consultation was held hearaboute, and diverse were mens minds and opinions. Some were still for staying togeather in this place, aledging men might hear live, if they would be contente with their condition; and y^t^ it was not for wante or necessitie so much y^t^ they removed, as for y^e^ enriching of them selves. Others were resolute upon removall, and so signified y^t^ hear y^ey^ could not stay; but if y^e^ church did not remove, they must; insomuch as many were swayed, rather then ther should be a dissolution, to condescend to a removall, if a fitt place could be found, that might more conveniently and comforta-

blie receive y^e^ whole, with such accession of others as might come to them, for their better strength & subsistence; and some such like cautions and limitations. So as, with y^e^ afforesaide provissos, y^e^ greater parte consented to a removall to a place called Nawsett, which had been superficially veiwed and y^e^ good will of y^e^ purchassers (to whom it belonged) obtained, with some addition thertoo from y^e^ Courte. But now they begane to see their errour, that they had given away already the best & most cõmodious places to others, and now wanted them selves; for this place was about 50. myles from hence, and at an outside of y^e^ countrie, remote from all society; also, that it would prove so straite, as it would not be competente to receive y^e^ whole body, much less be capable of any addition or increase; so as (at least in a shorte time) they should be worse ther then they are now hear. The which, with sundery other like considerations and inconveniences, made them chaing their resolutions; but such as were before resolved upon removall tooke advantage of this agreemente, & wente on notwithstanding, neither could y^e^ rest hinder them, they haveing made some begiñing. And thus was this poore church left, like an anciente mother, growne olde, and forsaken of her children, (though not in their affections,) yett in regarde of their bodily presence and personall helpfullness. Her anciente members being most of them worne away by death; and these of later time being

like children translated into other families, and she like a widow left only to trust in God. Thus she that had made many rich became her selfe poore.

[262] *Some things handled, and pacified by y^e^ comissioner this year.*

Wheras, by a wise providence of God, tow of y^e^ jurisdictions in y^e^ westerne parts, viz. Conightecutt & New-haven, have beene latly exercised by sundrie insolencies & outrages from y^e^ Indeans; as, first, an Englishman, runing from his m^r^. out of y^e^ Massachusets, was murdered in y^e^ woods, in or nere y^e^ limites of Conightecute jurisdiction; and aboute 6. weeks after, upon discovery by an Indean, y^e^ Indean sagamore in these parts promised to deliver the murderer to y^e^ English, bound; and having accordingly brought him within y^e^ sight of Uncaway, by their joynte consente, as it is informed, he was ther unbound, and left to shifte for him selfe; wherupon 10. Englishmen forthwith coming to y^e^ place, being sente by M^r^. Ludlow, at y^e^ Indeans desire, to receive y^e^ murderer, who seeing him escaped, layed hold of 8. of y^e^ Indeans ther presente, amongst whom ther was a sagamore or 2. and kept them in hold 2. days, till 4. sagamors ingaged themselves within one month to deliver y^e^ prisoner. And about a weeke after this agreemente, an Indean came presumtuously and with guile, in y^e^ day time, and murtherously assalted an English woman in her house at Stamford, and by 3. wounds, supposed mortall, left her for dead, after he had robbed y^e^ house. By which passages y^e^ English were provoked, & called to a due consideration of their owne saftie; and y^e^ Indeans generally in those parts arose in an hostile maner, refused to come to y^e^ English to carry on treaties of peace, departed from their wigwames, left their corne unweeded, and shewed them selves tumultuously

about some of y^e^ English plantations, & shott of peeces within hearing of y^e^ towne; and some Indeans came to y^e^ English & tould them y^e^ Indeans would fall upon them. So y^t^ most of y^e^ English thought it unsafe to travell in those parts by land, and some of y^e^ plantations were put upon strong watchs and ward, night & day, & could not attend their private occasions, and yet distrusted their owne strength for their defence. Wherupon Hartford & New-Haven were sent unto for aide, and saw cause both to send into y^e^ weaker parts of their owne jurisdiction thus in danger, and New-Haven, for conveniencie of situation, sente aide to Uncaway, though belonging to Conightecutt. Of all which passages they presently acquainted y^e^ comissioners in y^e^ Bay, & had y^e^ allowance & approbation from y^e^ Generall Courte ther, with directions neither to hasten warr nor to bear such insolencies too longe. Which courses, though chargable to them selves, yet through Gods blessing they hope fruite is, & will be, sweete and wholsome to all y^e^ collonies; the murderers are since delivered to justice, the publick peace preserved for y^e^ presente, & probabillitie it may be better secured for y^e^ future.

Thus this mischeefe was prevented, and y^e^ fear of a warr hereby diverted. But now an other broyle was begune by y^e^ Narigansets; though they unjustly had made warr upon Uncass, (as is before declared,) and had, y^e^ winter before this, ernestly presed y^e^ Gove^r^ of y^e^ Massachusets that they might still make warr upon them to revenge y^e^ death of their sagamore, w^ch^, being taken prisoner, was by them put to death, (as before was noted,) pretending that they had first received and accepted his ransome, and then put him to death.

But y^e^ Gove^r^ refused their presents, and tould them y^t^ it was them selves had done y^e^ wronge, & broaken y^e^ conditions of peace; and he nor y^e^ English neither could nor would allow them to make any further warr upon him, but if they did, must assiste him, & oppose them; but if it did appeare, upon good proofe, that he had received a ransome for his life, before he put him to death, when y^e^ comissioners mett, they should have a fair hearing, and they would cause Uncass to returne y^e^ same. But notwithstanding, at y^e^ spring of y^e^ year they gathered a great power, and fell upon Uncass, and slue sundrie of his men, and wounded more, and also had some loss them selves. Uncass cald for aide from y^e^ English; they tould him what y^e^ Narigansets objected, he deney the same; they tould him it must come to triall, and if he was inocente, if y^e^ Narigansets would not desiste, they would aide & assiste him. So at this meeting they [263] sent both to Uncass & y^e^ Narrigansets, and required their sagamors to come or send to y^e^ comissioners now mete at Hartford, and they should have a faire & inpartiall hearing in all their greevances, and would endeavor y^t^ all wrongs should be rectified wher they should be found; and they promised that they should safly come and returne without any danger or molestation; and sundry y^e^ like things, as appears more at large in y^e^ messengers instructions. Upon w^ch^ the Narigansets sent one sagamore and some other deputies, with full

power to doe in y^e^ case as should be meete. Uncass came in person, accompanyed with some cheefe aboute him. After the agitation of y^e^ bussines, y^e^ issue was this. The comissioners declared to y^e^ Narigansett deputies as followeth.

1. That they did not find any proofe of any ransome agreed on.

2. It appeared not y^t^ any wampam had been paied as a ransome, or any parte of a ransome, for Myantinomos life.

3. That if they had in any measure proved their charge against Uncass, the comissioners would have required him to have made answerable satisfaction.

4. That if hereafter they can make satisfing profe, y^e^ English will consider y^e^ same, & proceed accordingly.

5. The comissioners did require y^t^ neither them selves nor y^e^ Nyanticks make any warr or injurious assaulte upon Unquass or any of his company untill they make profe of y^e^ ransume charged, and y^t^ due satisfaction be deneyed, unless he first assaulte them.

6. That if they assaulte Uncass, the English are engaged to assist him.

Hearupon y^e^ Narigansette sachim, advising with y^e^ other deputies, ingaged him selfe in the behalfe of y^e^ Narigansets & Nyanticks that no hostile acts should be comitted upon Uncass, or any of his, untill after y^e^ next planting of corne; and y^t^ after that, before they begine any warr, they will give 30. days warning to y^e^ Gove^r^ of the Massachusets or Conightecutt. The comissioners approving of this offer, and taking their ingagmente under their hands, required Uncass, as he expected y^e^ continuance of y^e^ favour of the English, to observe the same termes of peace with y^e^ Narigansets and theirs.

These foregoing conclusions were subscribed by y^e^ comissioners, for y^e^ severall jurisdictions, y^e^ 19. of Sept: 1644.

EDWA: HOPKINS, Presidente.
SIMON BRADSTREETE.
WILL^M^. HATHORNE.
EDW: WINSLOW.
JOHN BROWNE.
GEOR: FENWICK.
THEOPH: EATON.
THO: GREGSON.

The forenamed Narigansets deputies did further promise, that if, contrary to this agreemente, any of y^e^ Nyantick Pequents should make any assaulte upon Uncass, or any of his, they would deliver them up to y^e^ English, to be punished according to their demerits; and that they would not use any means to procure the Mowacks to come against Uncass during this truce.

These were their names subscribed with their marks.

WEETOWISH. CHINÑOUGH.
PAMPIAMETT. PUMMUNISH.

[264] *Anno Dom:* 1645.

THE comissioners this year were caled to meete togither at Boston, before their ordinarie time; partly in regard of some differances falen betweene y^e^ French and y^e^ govermente of y^e^ Massachusets, about their aiding of Munseire Latore against Munsseire de Aulney, and partly aboute y^e^ Indeans, who had broaken y^e^ former agreements aboute the peace concluded y^e^ last year. This meeting was held at Boston, y^e^ 28. of July.

Besids some underhand assualts made on both sids, the Narigansets gathered a great power, and fell upon Uncass, and slew many of his men, and wounded more, by reason y^t^ they farr exseeded him in number, and had gott store of peeces, with which they did him most hurte. And as they did this withoute y^e^ knowledg and consente of y^e^ English, (contrary to former agreemente,) so they were resolved to prosecute y^e^ same, notwithstanding any thing y^e^ English said or should doe against them. So, being incouraged by ther late victorie, and promise of assistance from y^e^ Mowaks, (being a strong, warlike, and desperate people,) they had allready devoured Uncass & his, in their hops; and surly they had done it in deed, if the English had not timly sett in for his aide. For those of Conightecute sent him 40. men, who were a garison to him, till y^e^ comissioners could meete and take further order.

Being thus mett, they forthwith sente 3. messengers, viz. Sargent John Davis, Benedicte Arnold, and Francis Smith, with full & ample instructions, both to y^e^ Narigansets and Uncass; to require them y^t^ they should either come in person or send sufficiente men fully instructed to deale in y^e^ bussines; and if they refused or delayed, to let them know (according to former agreements) y^t^ the English are engaged to assiste against these hostile invasions, and y^t^ they have sente their men to defend Uncass, and to know of y^e^ Narigansets whether they will stand to y^e^ former peace,

or they will assaulte y^e^ English also, that they may provid accordingly.

But y^e^ messengers returned, not only with a sleighting, but a threatening answer from the Narigansets (as will more appear hereafter). Also they brought a letter from M^r^. Roger Williams, wherin he assures them that y^e^ warr would presenly breake forth, & y^e^ whole country would be all of a flame. And y^t^ the sachems of y^e^ Narigansets had concluded a newtrality with y^e^ English of Providence and those of Aquidnett Iland. Wherupon y^e^ comissioners, considering y^e^ great danger & provocations offered, and y^e^ necessitie we should be put unto of making warr with y^e^ Narigansetts, and being also carfull, in a matter of so great waight & generall concernmente, to see y^e^ way cleared, and to give satisfaction to all y^e^ colonies, did thinke fitte to advise with such of y^e^ magistrats & elders of y^e^ Massachusets as were then at hand, and also with some of y^e^ cheefe millitary comanders ther; who being assembled, it was then agreed, —

First, y^t^ our ingagmente bound us to aide & defend Uncass. 2. That this ayde could not be intended only to defend him & his forte, or habitation, but (according to y^e^ comone acceptation of such covenants, or ingagments, considered with y^e^ grounds or occasion therof) so to ayde him as he might be preserved in his liberty and estate. 3^ly^. That this ayde [265] must be speedy, least he might be swalowed up in y^e^ mean time, and

so come to late. 4ly. The justice of this warr being cleared to our selves and ye rest then presente, it was thought meete yt the case should be stated, and ye reasons & grounds of ye warr declared and published. 5ly. That a day of humilliation should be apoynted, which was ye 5. day of ye weeke following. 6ly. It was then allso agreed by ye comissioners that ye whole number of men to be raised in all ye colonies should be 300. Wherof from ye Massachusets a 190. Plimoth, 40. Conightecute, 40. New-Haven, 30. And considering yt Uncass was in present danger, 40. men of this number were forthwith sente from ye Massachusets for his sucoure; and it was but neede, for ye other 40. from Conightecutt had order to stay but a month, & their time being out, they returned; and ye Narigansets, hearing therof, tooke the advantage, and came suddanly upon him, and gave him another blow, to his further loss, and were ready to doe ye like againe; but these 40. men being arrived, they returned, and did nothing.

The declaration which they sett forth I shall not transcribe, it being very larg, and put forth in printe, to which I referr those yt would see ye same, in which all passages are layed open from ye first. I shall only note their prowd carriage, and answers to ye 3. messengers sent from ye comissioners. They received them with scorne & contempte, and tould them they resolved to have no peace without Uncass his head; also they gave them this further answer: that it mattered not

who begane y^e^ warr, they were resolved to follow it, and that y^e^ English should withdraw their garison from Uncass, or they would procure y^e^ Mowakes against them; and withall gave them this threatening answer: that they would lay y^e^ English catle on heaps, as high as their houses, and y^t^ no English-man should sturr out of his dore to pisse, but he should be kild. And wheras they required guids to pass throw their countrie, to deliver their message to Uncass from y^e^ comissioners, they deneyed them, but at length (in way of scorne) offered them an old Pequente woman. Besids allso they conceived them selves in danger, for whilst y^e^ interpretour was speakeing with them about y^e^ answer he should returne, 3. men came & stood behind him with ther hatchets, according to their murderous maner; but one of his fellows gave him notice of it, so they broak of & came away; with sundry such like affrontes, which made those Indeans they carryed with them to rune away for fear, and leave them to goe home as they could.

Thus whilst y^e^ comissioners in care of y^e^ publick peace sought to quench y^e^ fire kindled amongst y^e^ Indeans, these children of strife breath out threatenings, provocations, and warr against y^e^ English them selves. So that, unless they should dishonour & provoak God, by violating a just ingagmente, and expose y^e^ colonies to contempte & danger from y^e^ barbarians, they cannot but exerciese force, when no other means will prevaile to

reduse y^e^ Narigansets & their confederats to a more just & sober temper.

So as here upon they went on to hasten y^e^ preparations, according to y^e^ former agreemente, and sent to Plimoth to send forth their 40. men with all speed, to lye at Seacunke, least any deanger should befalle it, before y^e^ rest were ready, it lying next y^e^ enemie, and ther to stay till y^e^ Massachusetts should joyne with them. Allso Conigtecute & Newhaven forces were to joyne togeather, and march with all speed, and y^e^ Indean confederats of those parts with them. All which was done accordingly; and the souldiers of this place were at Seacunk, the place of their rendevouze, 8. or 10. days before y^e^ rest were ready; they were well armed all with snaphance peeces, and wente under y^e^ camand of Captain [266] Standish. Those from other places were led likwise by able comanders,* as Captaine Mason for Conigtecute, &c.; and Majore Gibons was made generall over y^e^ whole, with such comissions & instructions as was meete.

Upon y^e^ suden dispatch of these souldiears, (the present necessitie requiring it,) the deputies of y^e^ Massachusetts Courte (being now assembled imediatly after y^e^ setting forth of their 40. men) made a question whether it was legally done, without their comission. It was answered, that howsoever it did properly belong to y^e^ authority of y^e^ severall jurisdictions (after

* *Comander* in the MS.

y^e^ warr was agreed upon by y^e^ comissioners, & the number of men) to provid y^e^ men & means to carry on y^e^ warr; yet in this presente case, the proceeding of y^e^ comissioners and y^e^ comission given was as sufficiente as if it had been done by y^e^ Generall Courte.

First, it was a case of such presente & urgente necessitie, as could not stay y^e^ calling of y^e^ Courte or Counsell. 2^ly^. In y^e^ Articles of Confederation, power is given to y^e^ comissioners to consult, order, & determine all affaires of warr, &c. And y^e^ word *determine* comprehends all acts of authority belonging therunto.

3^ly^. The comissioners are y^e^ judges of y^e^ necessitie of the expedition.

4^ly^. The Generall Courte have made their owne comissioners their sole counsell for these affires.

5^ly^. These counsels could not have had their due effecte excepte they had power to proceede in this case, as they have done; which were to make y^e^ comissioners power, and y^e^ maine end of y^e^ confederation, to be frustrate, and that mearly for observing a ceremony.

6^ly^. The comissioners haveing sole power to manage y^e^ warr for number of men, for time, place, &c., they only know their owne counsells, & *determinations*, and therfore none can grante comission to acte according to these but them selves.

All things being thus in readines, and some of y^e^ souldiers gone forth, and the rest ready to march, the comissioners thought it meete before any hostile acte was performed, to cause a presente to be returned, which had been sente to y^e^ Gover^r^ of the Massachusetts from y^e^ Narigansett sachems, but not by

him received, but layed up to be accepted or refused as they should carry them selves, and observe y^e^ covenants. Therfore they violating the same, & standing out thus to a warr, it was againe returned, by 2. messengers & an interpretour. And further to let know that their men already sent to Uncass (& other wher sent forth) have hitherto had express order only to stand upon his & their owne defence, and not to attempte any invasion of y^e^ Narigansetts country; and yet if they may have due reperation for what is past, and good securitie for y^e^ future, it shall appear they are as desirous of peace, and shall be as tender of y^e^ Narigansets blood as ever. If therefore Pessecuss, Innemo, with other sachemes, will (without further delay) come along with you to Boston, the comissioners doe promise & assure them, they shall have free liberty to come, and retourne without molestation or any just greevance from y^e^ English. But deputies will not now serve, nor may the preparations in hand be now stayed, or y^e^ directions given recalled, till y^e^ forementioned sagamors come, and some further order be taken. But if they will have nothing but warr, the English are providing, and will proceede accordingly.

Pessecouss, Mixano, & Witowash, 3. principall sachems of y^e^ Narigansett Indeans, and Awasequen, deputie for y^e^ Nyanticks, with a large traine of men, within a few days after came to Boston.

And to omitte all other circomstances and debats y^t^ past betweene them and the comissioners, they came to this conclusion following.

[267] 1. It was agreed betwixte y^e^ comissioners of y^e^ United Collonies, and y^e^ forementioned sagamores, & Niantick deputie, that y^e^ said Narigansets & Niantick sagamores should pay or cause to be payed at Boston, to y^e^ Massachusets comissioners, y^e^ full sume of 2000. fathome of good white wampame, or a third parte of black wampampeage, in 4. payments; namely, 500. fathome within 20. days, 500. fathome within 4. months, 500. fathome at or before next planting time, and 500. fathome within 2. years next after y^e^ date of these presents; which 2000. fathome y^e^ comissioners accepte for satisfaction of former charges expended.

2. The foresaid sagamors & deputie (on y^e^ behalfe of y^e^ Narigansett & Niantick Indeans) hereby promise & covenante that they upon demand and profe satisfie & restore unto Uncass, y^e^ Mohigan sagamore, all such captives, whether men, or women, or children, and all such canowes, as they or any of their men have taken, or as many of their owne canowes in y^e^ roome of them, full as good as they were, with full satisfaction for all such corne as they or any of theire men have spoyled or destroyed, of his or his mens, since last planting time; and y^e^ English comissioners hereby promise y^t^ Uncass shall doe y^e^ like.

3. Wheras ther are sundry differences & greevances betwixte Narigansett & Niantick Indeans, and Uncass & his men, (which in Uncass his absence cannot now be detirmined,) it is hearby agreed y^t^ Nariganset & Niantick sagamores either come them selves, or send their deputies to y^e^ next meeting of y^e^ comissioners for y^e^ collonies, either at New-Haven in Sep^t^ 1646. or sooner (upon conveniente warn-

ing, if y^e^ said comissioners doe meete sooner), fully instructed to declare & make due proofe of their injuries, and to submite to y^e^ judgmente of y^e^ comissioners, in giving or receiving satisfaction; and y^e^ said comissioners (not doubting but Uncass will either come him selfe, or send his deputies, in like maner furnished) promising to give a full hearing to both parties with equall justice, without any partiall respects, according to their allegations and profs.

4. The said Narigansett & Niantick sagamors & deputies doe hearby promise & covenante to keep and maintaine a firme & perpetuall peace, both with all y^e^ English United Colonies & their successors, and with Uncass, y^e^ Monhegen sachem, & his men; with Ossamequine, Pumham, Sokanoke, Cutshamakin, Shoanan, Passaconaway, and all other Indean sagamors, and their companies, who are in freindship with or subjecte to any of y^e^ English; hearby ingaging them selves, that they will not at any time hearafter disturbe y^e^ peace of y^e^ cuntry, by any assaults, hostile attempts, invasions, or other injuries, to any of y^e^ Unnited Collonies, or their successors; or to y^e^ afforesaid Indeans; either in their persons, buildings, catle, or goods, directly or indirectly; nor will they confederate with any other against them; & if they know of any Indeans or others y^t^ conspire or intend hurt against y^e^ said English, or any Indeans subjecte to or in freindship with them, they will without delay acquainte & give notice therof to y^e^ English comissioners, or some of them.

Or if any questions or differences shall at any time hereafter arise or grow betwext them & Uncass, or any Endeans before mentioned, they will, according to former ingagments (which they hearby confirme & ratifie) first acquainte y^e^ English, and crave their judgments & advice therin; and will not attempte or begine any warr, or hostille invasion, till they have liberty and alowance from y^e^ comissioners of y^e^ United Collonies so to doe.

5. The said Narigansets & Niantick sagamores & deputies doe hearby promise y^t^ they will forthw^th^ deliver & restore all such Indean fugitives, or captives which have at any time fled from any of y^e^ English, and are now living or abiding amongst them, or give due satisfaction for them to y^e^ comissioners for y^e^ Massachusets; and further, that they will (without more delays) pay, or cause to be payed, a yearly tribute, a month before harvest, every year after this, at Boston, to y^e^ English Colonies, for all such Pequents as live amongst them, according to y^e^ former treaty & agreemente, made at Hartford, 1638. namly, one fathome of white wampam for every Pequente man, & halfe a fathume for each Pequente youth, and one hand length for each mal-child. And if Weequashcooke refuse to pay this tribute for any Pequents with him, the Narigansetts sagamores promise to assiste y^e^ English against him And they further covenante y^t^ they will resigne & yeeld up the whole Pequente cuntrie, and every parte of it, to y^e^ English collonies, as due to them by conquest.

6. The said Narigansett & Niantick sagamores & deputie doe hereby promise & covenante y^t^ within 14. days they will bring & deliver to y^e^ Massachusetts comissioners on y^e^ behalfe of y^e^ collonies, [268] foure of their children, viz. Pessecous his eldest son, the sone Tassaquanawite, brother to Pessecouss, Awashawe his sone, and Ewangsos sone, a Niantick, to be kepte (as hostages & pledges) by y^e^ English, till both y^e^ forementioned 2000. fathome of wampam be payed at y^e^ times appoynted, and y^e^ differences betweexte themselves & Uncass be heard & ordered, and till these artickles be under writen at Boston, by Jenemo & Wipetock. And further they hereby promise & covenante, y^t^ if at any time hearafter any of y^e^ said children shall make escape, or be conveyed away from y^e^ English, before y^e^ premisses be fully accomplished, they will either bring back & deliver to y^e^

Massachusett comissioners y^e^ same children, or, if they be not to be founde, such & so many other children, to be chosen by y^e^ comissioners for y^e^ United Collonies, or their assignes, and y^t^ within 20. days after demand, and in y^e^ mean time, untill y^e^ said 4. children be delivered as hostages, y^e^ Narigansett & Niantick sagamors & deputy doe, freely & of their owne accorde, leave with y^e^ Massachusett comissioners, as pledges for presente securitie, 4. Indeans, namely, Witowash, Pumanise, Jawashoe, Waughwamino, who allso freely consente, and offer them selves to stay as pledges, till y^e^ said children be brought & delivered as abovesaid.

7. The comissioners for y^e^ United Collonies doe hereby promise & agree that, at y^e^ charge of y^e^ United Collonies, y^e^ 4. Indeans now left as pledges shall be provided for, and y^t^ the 4. children to be brought & delivered as hostages shall be kepte & maintained at y^e^ same charge; that they will require Uncass & his men, with all other Indean sagamors before named, to forbear all acts of hostilitie againste y^e^ Narigansetts and Niantick Indeans for y^e^ future. And further, all y^e^ promises being duly observed & kept by y^e^ Narigansett & Niantick Indians and their company, they will at y^e^ end of 2. years restore y^e^ said children delivered as hostiages, and retaine a firme peace with y^e^ Narigansets & Nianticke Indeans and their successours.

8. It is fully agreed by & betwixte y^e^ said parties, y^t^ if any hostile attempte be made while this treaty is in hand, or before notice of this agreemente (to stay further preparations & directions) can be given, such attempts & y^e^ consequencts therof shall on neither parte be accounted a violation of this treaty, nor a breach of y^e^ peace hear made & concluded.

9. The Narigansets & Niantick sagamors & deputie hereby agree & covenante to & with y^e^ comissioners of y^e^ United Collonies, y^t^ henceforth they will neither give, grante, sell, or in any maner alienate, any parte of their countrie, nor

any parcell of land therin, either to any of y^e^ English or others, without consente or allowance of y^e^ comissioners.

10. Lastly, they promise that, if any Pequente or other be found & discovered amongst them who hath in time of peace murdered any of y^e^ English, he or they shall be delivered to just punishmente.

In witness wherof y^e^ parties above named have interchaingablie subscribed these presents, the day & year above writen.

JOHN WINTHROP, President.
HERBERT PELHAM.
THO: PRENCE.
JOHN BROWNE.
GEO: FENWICK.
EDWA: HOPKINS.
THEOPH: EATON.
STEVEN GOODYEARE.
PESSECOUSS his mark
MEEKESANO his mark
WITOWASH his mark
AUMSEQUEN his mark the Niantick deputy.
ABDAS his mark
PUMMASH his mark
CUTCHAMAKIN his mark

This treaty and agreemente betwixte the comissioners of y^e^ United Collonies and y^e^ sagamores and deputy of Narrigansets and Niantick Indeans was made and concluded, Benedicte Arnold being interpretour upon his oath; Sergante Callicate & an Indean, his man, being presente, and Josias & Cutshamakin, tow Indeans aquainted with y^e^ English language, assisting therin; who opened & cleared the whole treaty, & every article, to y^e^ sagamores and deputie there presente.

And thus was y^e^ warr at this time stayed and prevented.

[269] *Anno Dom:* 1646.

About y^e^ midle of May, this year, came in 3. ships into this harbor, in warrlike order; they were found to be men of warr. The captains name was Crumwell, who had taken sundrie prizes from y^e^ Spaniards in y^e^ West Indies. He had a comission from y^e^ Earle of Warwick. He had abord his vessels aboute 80. lustie men, (but very unruly,) who, after they came ashore, did so distemper them selves with drinke as they became like madd-men; and though some of them were punished & imprisoned, yet could they hardly be restrained; yet in y^e^ ende they became more moderate & orderly. They continued here aboute a month or 6. weeks, and then went to y^e^ Massachusets; in which time they spente and scattered a great deale of money among y^e^ people, and yet more sine (I fear) then money, notwithstanding all y^e^ care & watchfullnes that was used towards them, to prevente what might be.

In which time one sadd accidente fell out. A desperate fellow of y^e^ company fell a quarling with some of his company. His captine cōmanded him to be quiet & surcease his quarelling; but he would not, but reviled his captaine with base language, & in y^e^ end halfe drew his rapier, & intended to rune at his captien; but he closed with him, and wrasted his rapier from him, and gave him a boxe on y^e^ earr; but he would not give over, but still assaulted his captaine. Wher-

upon he tooke y^e^ same rapier as it was in y^e^ scaberd, and gave him a blow with y^e^ hilts; but it light on his head, & y^e^ smal end of y^e^ bar of y^e^ rapier hilts peirct his scull, & he dyed a few days after. But y^e^ captaine was cleared by a counsell of warr. This fellow was so desperate a quareller as y^e^ captaine was faine many times to chaine him under hatches from hurting his fellows, as y^e^ company did testifie; and this was his end.

This Captaine Thomas Cromuell sett forth another vioage to the Westindeas, from the Bay of the Massachusets, well maned & victuled; and was out 3. years, and tooke sundry prises, and returned rich unto the Massachusets, and ther dyed the same somere, having gott a fall from his horse, in which fall he fell on his rapeir hilts, and so brused his body as he shortly after dyed therof, with some other distempers, which brought him into a feavor. Some observed that ther might be somthing of the hand of God herein; that as the forenamed man dyed of y^e^ blow he gave him with y^e^ rapeir hilts, so his owne death was occationed by a like means.

This year M^r^. Edward Winslow went into England, upon this occation: some discontented persons under y^e^ govermente of the Massachusets sought to trouble their peace, and disturbe, if not innovate, their govermente, by laying many [270] scandals upon them; and intended to prosecute against them in England, by petitioning & complaining to the Parlemente. Allso

Samuell Gorton & his company made complaints against them; so as they made choyse of M^r. Winslow to be their agente, to make their defence, and gave him comission & instructions for that end; in which he so carried him selfe as did well answer their ends, and cleared them from any blame or dishonour, to the shame of their adversaries. But by reason of the great alterations in the State, he was detained longer then was expected; and afterwards fell into other imployments their, so as he hath now bene absente this 4. years, which hath been much to the weakning of this govermente, without whose consente he tooke these imployments upon him.

Anno 1647. *And Anno* 1648.

Scandals upon them; and intended to prosecute against them in England, by petitioning & complaining to the parlemente. Also Samuell Gorton & his Company made Complaints against them. So as they made Choyse of m^r Winslow to be their Agente, to make their defence; and gaue him Comission & Instructions for that end. In which he so carried him selfe, as did well answer their ends, and cleared them from any blame, or dishonour, to the shame of their aduersaries. But by reason of the great alterations in the State he was detained longer then was expected; and afterwards fell into other Imployments their; so as he hath now bene absente this 4 years. which hath been much to the weakning of this gouermente; without whose consente, he tooke these Imployments upon him.

Anno 1647 ~~~~~ And Anno 1648

APPENDIX.

The names of those which came over first, in y^e^ year 1620. and were (by the bleſing of god) the firſt beginers, and (in a ſort) the foundation, of all the plantations, and Colonies, in New-England (and their families)

M^r^ John Carver.
katherine his wife.
8. Deſire Minter; &
2. man-ſervants
John Howland
Roger Wilder
William Latham, a boy,
& a maid ſervant & a
child y^t^ was put to him
called Jaſper More

M^r^ William Brewſter.
Mary his wife, with
6. 2. ſons, whoſe names
were Loue, & Wraſling
and a boy was put to
him called Richard More; and another of his Brothers
the reſt of his Childeren
were left behind & came
over afterwards.

M^r^ Edward Winſlow
Elizabeth his wife, &
5. 2. men ſervants, called
Georg Soule, and
Elias Story; alſo a litle
girle was put to him caled
Ellen, the ſister of Richard
More.

2. William Bradford, and
Dorothy his wife, having
but one Child, a ſone left
behind, who came afterward.

M^r^ Isaack Allerton, and
Mary his wife; with 3. Children
6. Bartholmew
Remember, &
Mary. and a ſervant boy,
John Hooke.

M^r^ Samuell fuller, and
2. a ſervant, caled
William Butten. His wife
was behind & a child, which
came afterwards.

2. John Crakston, and his ſone
John Crakston.

2. Captin myles Standiſh
and Rose his wife

M^r^ Christopher Martin,
4. and his wife; and 2. ſervants,
Salamon prower, and
John Langemore

M^r^ William Mullines, and his
5. wife; and 2. Children
Joseph & priſcila; and a ſeruant
Robart Carter.

M^r^ ~~White~~ William White, and
Susana his wife; and one ſone
6. Caled reſolued, and one borne
a ſhip-bord caled perigriene; &
2. ſervants, named
William Holbeck & Edward Thomſon

M^r^ ~~Hopkins~~ Steuen Hopkins, &
Elizabeth his wife; and 2.
Children, caled Giles, and
8. Constanta a doughter, both
by a former wife. And 2. more
by this wife, caled Damaris, &
Oceanus, the last was borne at
sea. And 2. ſervants, called
Edward Doty, and Edward Litster.

M^r^ Richard Warren, ~~dyed~~ but his
1. wife and Children were leſte
behind and came afterwards

4 John Billinton, and Elen his wife;
and 2. ſones John, & francis.

Edward Tillie, and Ann his wife,
4. and 2. Childeren that were their
Cosens; Henery Samson, and Humil.
lity Coper

3. John Tillie, and his wife, and
Elizabeth their doughter.

APPENDIX.

No. I.

[Passengers of the Mayflower.]

The names of those which came over first, in y^e^ year 1620. and were by the blessing of God the first beginers and (in a sort) the foundation of all the Plantations and Colonies in New-England; and their families.

8. M^r^. John Carver; Kathrine, his wife; Desire Minter; & 2. man-servants, John Howland, Roger Wilder; William Latham, a boy; & a maid servant, & a child y^t^ was put to him, called Jasper More.

6. M^r^. William Brewster; Mary, his wife; with 2. sons, whose names were Love & Wrasling; and a boy was put to him called Richard More; and another of his brothers. The rest of his children were left behind, & came over afterwards.

5. M^r^. Edward Winslow; Elizabeth, his wife; & 2. men servants, caled Georg Sowle and Elias Story; also a litle girle was put to him, caled Ellen, the sister of Richard More.

2. William Bradford, and Dorothy, his wife; having but one child, a sone, left behind, who came afterward.

6. M^r^. Isaack Allerton, and Mary, his wife; with 3. children, Bartholmew, Remember, & Mary; and a servant boy, John Hooke.

2. Mr. Samuell Fuller, and a servant, caled William Butten. His wife was behind, & a child, which came afterwards.

2. John Crakston, and his sone, John Crakston.

2. Captin Myles Standish, and Rose, his wife.

4. Mr. Christopher Martin, and his wife, and 2. servants, Salamon Prower and John Langemore.

5. Mr. William Mullines, and his wife, and 2. children, Joseph & Priscila; and a servant, Robart Carter.

6. Mr. William White, and Susana, his wife, and one sone, caled Resolved, and one borne a ship-bord, caled Peregriene; & 2. servants, named William Holbeck & Edward Thomson.

8. Mr. Steven Hopkins, & Elizabeth, his wife, and 2. children, caled Giles, and Constanta, a doughter, both by a former wife; and 2. more by this wife, caled Damaris & Oceanus; the last was borne at sea; and 2. servants, called Edward Doty and Edward Litster.

1. Mr. Richard Warren; but his wife and children were lefte behind, and came afterwards.

4. John Billinton, and Elen, his wife; and 2. sones, John & Francis.

4. Edward Tillie, and Ann, his wife; and 2. children that were their cossens, Henery Samson and Humillity Coper.

3. John Tillie, and his wife; and Eelizabeth, their doughter.

2. Francis Cooke, and his sone John. But his wife & other children came afterwards.

2. Thomas Rogers, and Joseph, his sone. His other children came afterwards.

3.* Thomas Tinker, and his wife, and a sone.

2. John Rigdale, and Alice, his wife.

3. James Chilton, and his wife, and Mary, their dougter. They had an other doughter, y^{t} was maried, came afterward.

3. Edward Fuller, and his wife, and Samuell, their sonne.

3. John Turner, and 2. sones. He had a doughter came some years after to Salem, wher she is now living.

3. Francis Eaton, and Sarah, his wife, and Samuell, their sone, a yong child.

10. Moyses Fletcher, John Goodman, Thomas Williams, Digerie Preist, Edmond Margeson, Peter Browne, Richard Britterige, Richard Clarke, Richard Gardenar, Gilbart Winslow.

1. John Alden was hired for a cooper, at South-Hampton, wher the ship victuled; and being a hopfull yong man, was much desired, but left to his owne liking to go or stay when he came here; but he stayed, and maryed here.

2. John Allerton and Thomas Enlish were both hired, the later to goe m^{r} of a shalop here, and y^{e} other was reputed as one of y^{e} company, but was to go back (being a seaman) for the help of others behind. But they both dyed here, before the shipe returned.

* Written *2* in MS.

There were allso other 2. seamen hired to stay a year
2. here in the country, William Trevore, and one Ely. But when their time was out, they both returned.

These, bening aboute a hundred sowls, came over in this first ship; and began this worke, which God of his goodnes hath hithertoo blesed; let his holy name have y^e^ praise.

And seeing it hath pleased him to give me to see 30. years compleated since these beginings; and that the great works of his providence are to be observed, I have thought it not unworthy my paines to take a veiw of the decreasings & increasings of these persons, and such changs as hath pased over them & theirs, in this thirty years. It may be of some use to such as come after; but, however, I shall rest in my owne benefite.

I will therfore take them in order as they lye.

M^r^. Carver and his wife dyed the first year; he in y^e^ spring, she in y^e^ somer; also, his man Roger and y^e^ litle boy Jasper dyed before either of them, of y^e^ commone infection. Desire Minter returned to her freinds, & proved not very well, and dyed in England. His servant boy Latham, after more then 20. years stay in the country, went into England, and from thence to the Bahamy Ilands in y^e^ West Indies, and ther, with some others, was starved for want of food. His maid servant maried, & dyed a year or tow after, here in this place.

His servant, John Howland, maried the doughter of John Tillie, Elizabeth, and they are both now living, and have 10. children, now all living; and their eldest
15. daughter hath 4. children. And ther 2. daughter, 1. all living; and other of their children mariagable. So 15. are come of them.

Mr. Brewster lived to very old age; about 80. years he was when he dyed, having lived some 23. or 24. years here in ye countrie; & though his wife dyed long before, yet she dyed aged. His sone Wrastle dyed a yonge man
4. unmaried; his sone Love lived till this year 1650. and dyed, & left 4. children, now living. His doughters which came over after him are dead, but have left sundry children alive; his eldst sone is still liveing, and hath 9.
2. or 10 children; one maried, who hath a child or 2.

4. Richard More his brother dyed the first winter; but he is maried, and hath 4. or 5. children, all living.

Mr. Ed: Winslow his wife dyed the first winter; and he
2. maried with the widow of Mr. White, and hath 2. children living by her marigable, besids sundry that are dead.

One of his servants dyed, as also the litle girle, soone
8. after the ships arivall. But his man, Georg Sowle, is still living, and hath 8. childrē.

William Bradford his wife dyed soone after their arivall;
4. and he maried againe; and hath 4. children, 3. wherof are maried.

Mr. Allerton his wife dyed with the first, and his servant, John Hooke. His sone Bartle is maried in England, but I know not how many children he hath. His doughter Remember is maried at Salem, & hath 3. or 4. children living. And his doughter Mary is maried here, & hath 4.
8. children. Him selfe maried againe with ye doughter of Mr. Brewster, & hath one sone living by her, but she is long since dead. And he is maried againe, and hath left this place long agoe. So I account his increase to be 8. besids his sons in England.

Mr. Fuller his servant dyed at sea; and after his wife
2. came over, he had tow children by her, which are living and growne up to years; but he dyed some 15. years agoe.

John Crakston dyed in the first mortality; and about some 5. or 6. years after, his sone dyed; having lost him selfe in y^e^ wodes, his feet became frosen, which put him into a feavor, of which he dyed.

* Captain Standish his wife dyed in the first sicknes,
4. and he maried againe, and hath 4. sones liveing, and some *are dead.*

M^r^. Martin, he & all his, dyed in the first infection not long after the arivall.

M^r^. Molines, and his wife, his sone, and his servant, dyed the first winter. Only his dougter Priscila survied,
15. and maried with John Alden, who are both living, and have 11. children. And their eldest daughter is maried, & hath five children.

M^r^. White and his 2. servants dyed soone after ther landing. His wife maried with M^r^. Winslow (as is be-
7. fore noted). His 2. sons are maried, and Resolved hath 5. children, Perigrine tow, all living. So their increase are 7.

M^r^. Hopkins and his wife are now both dead, but they lived above 20. years in this place, and had one sone and
5. 4. doughters borne here. Ther sone became a seaman, & dyed at Barbadoes; one daughter dyed here, and 2. are maried; one of them hath 2. children; & one is yet to mary. So their increase which still survive are 5. But
4. his sone Giles is maried, and hath 4. children.

12. His doughter Constanta is also maried, and hath 12. children, all of them living, and one of them maried.

* Who dyed 3. of Octob. 1655.

M^r^. Richard Warren lived some 4. or 5. years, and had his wife come over to him, by whom he had 2. sons
4. before dyed; and one of them is maryed, and hath 2. children. So his increase is 4. But he had 5. doughters more came over with his wife, who are all maried, & living, & have many children.

John Billinton, after he had bene here 10. yers, was
8. executed for killing a man; and his eldest sone dyed before him; but his 2. sone is alive, and maried, & hath 8. children.

Edward Tillie and his wife both dyed soon after their
7. arivall; and the girle Humility, their cousen, was sent for into England, and dyed ther. But the youth Henery Samson is still liveing, and is maried, & hath 7. children.

John Tillie and his wife both dyed a litle after they came ashore; and their daughter Elizabeth maried with John Howland, and hath issue as is before noted.

Francis Cooke is still living, a very olde man, and hath seene his childrens children have children; after his wife
8. came over, (with other of his children,) he hath 3. still living by her, all maried, and have 5. children; so their
4. encrease is 8. And his sone John, which came over with him, is maried, and hath 4. chilldren living.

Thomas Rogers dyed in the first sicknes, but his sone Joseph is still living, and is maried, and hath 6. children.
6. The rest of Thomas Rogers [children] came over, & are maried, & have many children.

Thomas Tinker and his wife and sone all dyed in the first sicknes.

And so did John Rigdale and his wife.

James Chilton and his wife also dyed in the first infection. But their daughter Mary is still living, and hath 9.
10. children; and one daughter is maried, & hath a child; so their increase is 10.

Edward Fuller and his wife dyed soon after they came
4. ashore; but their sone Samuell is living, & maried, and hath 4. children or more.

John Turner and his 2. sones all dyed in the first siknes. But he hath a daugter still living at Salem, well maried, and approved of.

Francis Eaton his first wife dyed in the generall sicknes; and he maried againe, & his 2. wife dyed, &
4. he maried the 3. and had by her 3. children. One of them is maried, & hath a child; the other are living, but one of them is an ideote. He dyed about 16. years agoe. His sone Samuell, who came over a sucking child,
1. is allso maried, & hath a child.

Moyses Fletcher, Thomas Williams, Digerie Preist, John Goodman, Edmond Margeson, Richard Britteridge, Richard Clarke. All these dyed sone after their arivall, in the generall sicknes that befell. But Digerie Preist had his wife & children sent hither afterwards, she being M^{r}. Allertons sister. But the rest left no posteritie here.

Richard Gardinar became a seaman, and died in England, or at sea.

Gilbert Winslow, after diverse years aboad here, returned into England, and dyed ther.

Peter Browne maried twise. By his first wife he had
6. 2. children, who are living, & both of them maried, and the one of them hath 2. children; by his second wife he had 2. more. He dyed about 16. years since.

Thomas English and John Allerton dyed in the generall siknes.

John Alden maried with Priscila, M^r^. Mollines his doughter, and had issue by her as is before related.

Edward Doty & Edward Litster, the servants of M^r^. Hopkins. Litster, after he was at liberty, went to Virginia, & ther dyed. But Edward Doty by a second wife hath 7. children, and both he and they are living.

Of these 100. persons which came first over in this first ship together, the greater halfe dyed in the generall mortality; and most of them in 2. or three monthes time. And for those which survied, though some were ancient & past procreation, & others left y^e^ place and cuntrie, yet of those few remaining are sprunge up above 160. persons, in this 30. years, and are now living in this presente year, 1650. besids many of their children which are dead, and come not within this account.

And of the old stock (of one & other) ther are yet living this present year, 1650. nere 30. persons. Let the Lord have y^e^ praise, who is the High Preserver of men.

---

*Twelfe persons liveing of the old stock this present yeare, 1679.

Two persons liveing that came over in the first shipe 1620, this present yeare, 1690. Resolved White and Mary Chusman,† the daughter of M^r^. Allerton.

And John Cooke, the son of Frances Cooke, that came in the first ship, is still liveing this present yeare, 1694; & Mary Cushman is still living, this present year, 1698.

* The following memoranda are in a later hand.

† Obviously intended for Cushman.

No. II.

[Commission for Regulating Plantations.]

Charles by y^e^ grace of God king of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, Defender of y^e^ Faith, &c.*

To the most Reve^d^ father in Christ, our wellbeloved & faithfull counsellour, William, by devine providence Archbishop of Counterbery, of all England Primate & Metropolitan; Thomas Lord Coventry, Keeper of our Great Seale of England; the most Reverente father in Christ our wellbeloved and most faithful Counselour, Richard, by devine providence Archbishop of Yorke, Primate & Metropolitan; our wellbeloved and most faithfull coussens & Counselours, Richard, Earle of Portland, our High Treasurer of England; Henery, Earle of Manchester, Keeper of our Privie Seale; Thomas, Earle of Arundalle & Surry, Earle Marshall of England; Edward, Earle of Dorsett, Chamberline of our most dear consorte, the Queene; and our beloved & faithfull Counselours, Francis Lord Cottington, Counseler, and Undertreasurour of our Eschequour; S^r^: Thomas Edmonds, knight, Treasourer of our houshould; S^r^: Henery Vane, Knight, controuler of y^e^ same houshould; S^r^: John Cooke, Knight, one of our Privie Secretaries; and Francis Windebanck, Knight, another of our Privie Secretaries,

Wheras very many of our subjects, & of our late fathers of beloved memory, our sovereigne lord James, late king of England, by means of licence royall, not only with

* See page 381. This document was written on the reverse of folio 201 et seq. of the original manuscript, and for the sake of convenience is transferred to this place.

desire of inlarging y^e^ teritories of our empire, but cheefly out of a pious & religious affection, & desire of propagating y^e^ gospell of our Lord Jesus Christ, with great industrie & expences have caused to be planted large Collonies of y^e^ English nation, in diverse parts of y^e^ world alltogether unmanured, and voyd of inhabitants, or occupied of y^e^ barbarous people that have no knowledg of divine worship. We being willing to provid a remedy for y^e^ tranquillity & quietnes of those people, and being very confidente of your faith & wisdom, justice & providente circomspection, have constituted you y^e^ aforesaid Archbishop of Counterburie, Lord Keeper of y^e^ Great Seale of England, y^e^ Archbishop of Yorke, &c. and any 5. or more, of you, our Comissioners; and to you, and any 5. or more of you, we doe give and comite power for y^e^ govermente & saftie of y^e^ said collonies, drawen, or which, out of y^e^ English nation into those parts hereafter, shall be drawne, to make lawes, constitutions, & ordinances, pertaining ether to y^e^ publick state of these collonies, or y^e^ private profite of them; and concerning y^e^ lands, goods, debts, & succession in those parts, and how they shall demaine them selves, towards foraigne princes, and their people, or how they shall bear them selves towards us, and our subjects, as well in any foraine parts whatsoever, or on y^e^ seas in those parts, or in their returne sayling home; or which may pertaine to y^e^ clergie govermente, or to y^e^ cure of soules, among y^e^ people ther living, and exercising trad in those parts; by designing out congruente porcions arising in tithes, oblations, & other things ther, according to your sound discretions, in politicall & civill causes; and by haveing y^e^ advise of 2. or 3. bishops, for y^e^ setling, making, & ordering of y^e^ bussines, for y^e^ designeing of necessary ecclesiasticall, and clargie porcions, which you shall cause to be called, and taken to you. And to make provission against y^e^ violation of those

laws, constitutions, and ordinances, by imposing penealties & mulcts, imprisonmente if ther be cause, and y^{t} y^{e} quality of y^{e} offence doe require it, by deprivation of member, or life, to be inflicted. With power allso (our assente being had) to remove, & displace y^{e} governours or rulers of those collonies, for causes which to you shall seeme lawfull, and others in their stead to constitute; and require an accounte of their rule & govermente, and whom you shall finde culpable, either by deprivation from their place, or by imposition of a mulcte upon y^{e} goods of them in those parts to be levied, or banishmente from those provinces in w^{ch} they have been gove^{r} or otherwise to cashier according to y^{e} quantity of y^{e} offence. And to constitute judges, & magistrats politicall & civill, for civill causes and under y^{e} power and forme, which to you 5. or more of you shall seeme expediente. And judges & magistrats & dignities, to causes Ecclesiasticall, and under y^{e} power & forme which to you 5. or more of you, with the bishops vicegerents (provided by y^{e} Archbishop of Counterbure for y^{e} time being), shall seeme expediente; and to ordaine courts, pretoriane and tribunall, as well ecclesiasticall, as civill, of judgmentes; to detirmine of y^{e} formes and maner of procceedings in y^{e} same; and of appealing from them in matters & causes as well criminall, as civill, personall, reale, and mixte, and to their seats of justice, what may be equall & well ordered, and what crimes, faults, or exessess, of contracts or injuries ought to belonge to y^{e} Ecclesiasticall courte, and what to y^{e} civill courte, and seate of justice.

Provided never y^{e} less, y^{t} the laws, ordinances, & constitutions of this kinde, shall not be put in execution, before our assent be had therunto in writing under our signet, signed at least, and this assente being had, and y^{e} same publikly proclaimed in y^{e} provinces in which they are to be executed, we will & com̄and y^{t} those lawes, ordinances, and constitutions more fully to obtaine strength and be ob-

served * shall be inviolably of all men whom they shall concerne.

Notwithstanding it shall be for you, or any 5. or more of you, (as is afforsaid,) allthough those lawes, constitutions, and ordinances shalbe proclaimed with our royall assente, to chainge, revocke, & abrogate them, and other new ones, in forme afforsaid, from time to time frame and make as afforesaid; and to new evills arissing, or new dangers, to apply new remedyes as is fitting, so often as to you it shall seeme expediente. Furthermore you shall understand that we have constituted you, and every 5. or more of you, the afforesaid Archbishop of Counterburie, Thomas Lord Coventrie, Keeper of y^e^ Great Seale of England, Richard, Bishop of Yorke, Richard, Earle of Portland, Henery, Earle of Manchester, Thomas, Earle of Arundale & Surry, Edward, Earell of Dorsett, Francis Lord Cottinton, S^r^ Thomas Edmonds,† knighte, S^r^ Henry Vane, knight, S^r^ Francis Windebanke, knight, our comissioners to hear, & determine, according to your sound discretions, all maner of complaints either against those collonies, or their rulers, or govenours, at y^e^ instance of y^e^ parties greeved, or at their accusation brought concerning injuries from hence, or from thence, betweene them, & their members to be moved, and to call y^e^ parties before you; and to the parties or to their procurators, from hence, or from thence being heard y^e^ full complemente of justice to be exhibted. Giving unto you, or any 5. or more of you power, y^t^ if you shall find any of y^e^ collonies afforesaid, or any of y^e^ cheefe rulers upon y^e^ jurisdictions of others by unjust possession, or usurpation, or one against another making greevance, or in rebelion against us, or withdrawing from our alegance, or our comandments, not obeying, consultation first with us in y^t^ case had, to cause those colonies, or y^e^ rulers of them,

* A superfluous *and* comes after "observed" in the manuscript.

† *Edwards* in the manuscript.

for y^e^ causes afforesaid, or for other just causes, either to returne to England, or to comand them to other places designed, even as according to your sounde discretions it shall seeme to stand with equitie, & justice, or necessitie. Moreover, we doe give unto you, & any 5. or more of you, power & spetiall com̄and over all y^e^ charters, leters patents, and rescripts royall, of y^e^ regions, provinces, ilands, or lands in foraigne parts, granted for raising colonies, to cause them to be brought before you, & y^e^ same being received, if any thing surrepticiously or unduly have been obtained, or y^t^ by the same priviledges, liberties, & prerogatives hurtfull to us, or to our crowne, or to foraigne princes, have been prejudicially suffered, or granted; the same being better made knowne unto you 5. or more of you, to com̄and them according to y^e^ laws and customs of England to be revoked, and to doe such other things, which to y^e^ profite & safgard of y^e^ afforesaid collonies, and of our subjects residente in y^e^ same, shall be necessary. And therfore we doe com̄and you that aboute y^e^ premisses at days & times, which for these things you shall make provission, that you be diligente in attendance, as it becometh you; giving in precepte also, & firmly injoyning, we doe give com̄and to all and singuler cheefe rulers of provinces into which y^e^ colonies afforesaid have been drawne, or shall be drawne, & concerning y^e^ colonies themselves, & concerning others, y^t^ have been interest therein, y^t^ they give atendance upon you, and be observante and obediente unto your warrants in those affaires, as often as, and even as in our name they shall be required, at their perill. In testimoney wherof, we have caused these our letters to be made pattente. Wittnes our selfe at Westminster the 28. day of Aprill, in y^e^ tenth year of our Raigne.

By write from y^e^ privie seale,

WILLIES.

Anno Dom: 1634.

INDEX.

INDEX.

Abdas, an Indian, 525.
Accord Pond, 442.
Acoughcouss, 445.
Adventurers. See *Merchant Adventurers.*
Alden, John, arrested in Massachusetts, 379. Party to contract, 452, 458. Settlement with, 478, 481. Family, 533, 536, 539.
Alden, Robert, 256.
Allerton, Bartholomew, 531, 535.
Allerton, Isaac, 62. Assistant, 121, 242. Goes to England, 252, 267, 274, 313, 328. Agreement with, 254 *et seq.*, 271, 272. Brings over Mr. Rogers, 292. Marries Elder Brewster's daughter, 305. Discharged, 329, 333, 358. Disciplined by church, 349. Disregards his bond, 357, 362. Referred to, 276, 278-280, 294, 296, 297, 300-303, 305-312, 318-327, 335, 336, 340-350, 357-359, 361, 363-369, 375, 394, 432, 436, 452. Family, 531.
Allerton, John, 533, 539.
Allerton, Mary, 531, 535.
Allerton, Remember, 531, 535.
Alltham, Emanuel, 256.
Amsterdam, 23, 66, 70, 73.
Anabaptistry, 461.
Andrews, Richard, adventurer, 256. Undertaker, 275, 279, 296, 307, 333, 342, 343, 394. Beaver sent to, 431, 435. Takes land at Scituate, 439. Settlement with, 452. Letter to Freeman, 482. Referred to, 410, 412, 414, 436, 447.
Andrews, Thomas, adventurer, 256.
Ann. See *Cape Ann.*
Anne, ship, 168, 171, 177, 215.
Anthony, Lawrence, 256.
Aquidnett Island, 434, 461, 515.
Argoll, Captain, 47, 48.
Arminians, 27, 28.
Arnold, Benedict, 514, 525.
Ashley, Edward, 307. His patent and business, 308 *et seq.* Sends beaver home, 318, 326. Trades with Indians, 327. Referred to, 333, 335, 337, 339, 346, 349. His death, 328.
Assistants at Plymouth, 121, 187.
Atwood, John, agent for Sherley, 449 *et seq.* Sherley's letter to, 478.
Aulney, Monsieur d.', captures Penobscot, 395, 513.
Aurelius, Marcus, 24.
Awasequin, chief, 518, 525.
Awashawe, Indian, 523.
Babb, Mr., 412.
Baker, master of the Charity, 202.
Baptism, differences respecting, 457, 461.
Barnstable, 444.
Bass, Edward, 255, 256.
Beastliness, 459 *et seq.*
Beauchamp, John, 138, 141, 255, 256, 275, 276, 296. Patent in his name, 307. Referred to, 333, 342, 343, 368, 394, 412, 414, 431, 435, 439, 451. Settlement with, 452.
Bellingham, Richard, deputy governor of Massachusetts, 399. Letters from, 400, 461.
Billirike (Billerica), Pilgrims came from, 69.
Billington, Elen, 532.
Billington, Francis, 532.
Billington, John, 218. Loses himself, 123. Tried for murder and executed, 329. Family, 532, 537.
Billington, John, Jr., 532.

Blackwell, Sir Francis, 47-50, 54.
Block Island, 418, 421.
Blossom, Thomas, 374.
Boston in England, 16.
Boston in New England, 342, 354, 383, 417, 501, 518.
Bound Brook, 442.
Bradford, Dorothy, 531, 535.
Bradford, Wm., begins writing, 9. W. B., 62. Chosen governor, 121. Illness, 111, 121. Letter to Weston, 131. Letter from Weston, 142. Letter from Pickering and Greene, 144, 272. With others appoints Sherley and Beauchamp agents, 278. Patent at Kennebec, 376. Surrenders patent, 444. Letter from, 462. Family, 531, 535.
Bradstreet, Simon, 399, 513.
Brewer, Thomas, 60, 256.
Brewster, Jonathan, letter from, 403.
Brewster, Love, 531, 535.
Brewster, Mary, 531.
Brewster, Wm., Elder, 14. Goes to Holland, 22. Assistant to Robinson, 24. Correspondence with Sandys and Worstenholme, 40-45. As to going to America, 53. Labors for sick, 111. Letters from Pickering, Greene and Weston, 144-146. Letter from Robinson, 198. Letter from Roger White, 248. Referred to, 153, 205, 208, 278, 380, 452. Dies, 487. Character, 488 *et seq.* Family, 531, 535.
Brewster, Wrestling, 531, 535.
Bristol, England, 320, 333, 338, 340, 347, 359.
Britteridge, Richard, 535, 538.
Brook, Lord, 378.
Brown, John, 513, 525.
Brown, Peter, 533, 538.
Browning, Henry, 256.
Brownists, 238.
Butten, Wm., dies, 93. Family, 532.
Callicote, Sergeant, 525.
Calvin, John, 7.
Capawack, 117, 125, 148.
Cape Ann, patent for, 192. Mentioned, 202, 204, 237, 265.
Cape Cod, 90. Arrive at, 93. Explore bay of, 101. French ship lost on, 118. Mentioned, 97, 123, 127, 132, 148, 153, 154, 186, 231, 261, 266.
Carter, Robert, 532.
Carver, John, agent to England, 40. Deacon, 40. Letter from Staresmore, 50; from Robinson, 58; from S. F. *et al.*, 61; from Cushman, 69; from Robinson, 77; from Weston, 128, 137, 140. Keeps letter, 66. Chosen governor, 109. Mentioned, 50, 54, 58, 61, 63, 67-70, 76, 131. At Southampton, 74. Dies, 121. Family, 531, 534.
Carver, Kathrine, 531, 534.
Cattle, first arrival of, 189.
Cawsumsett Neck, 445.
Charity, ship, 190, 207.
Charles I., commission by, for regulating plantations, 249, 540.
Charles River, 440.
Charlestown, 441.
Charlton, 116.
Chauncey, Charles, invited to Plymouth, 456, 558. Letter from, 467.
Chilton, James, 533, 538.
Chilton, Mary, 533, 538.
Chinnough, an Indian, 513.
Christmas at Plymouth, 134.
Church covenant, 331.
Clapham, 411, 451.
Clarke, pilot of the Mayflower, 67.
Clarke, Richard, 533, 538.
Clifton, Rev. Richard, 14.
Cobiseconte, 376.
Coddington, Wm., 332, 399.
Cohasset, 442.
Collier, Wm., 256, 340, 367. Sherley's agent, 449.
Colonies of New England, confederation of, 496.
Commissioners for the plantation, 540. Winslow petitions the, 390.
Compact of the Pilgrims, 109.
Connecticut, 371, 386, 387, 391, 402, 405, 415, 419, 424, 425, 430, 506, 509.
Cooke, Francis, 532, 537, 539.
Cooke, John, 532, 537, 539.
Cooke, Lord, 50.
Cooper, Humility, 532, 537.
Coppin, Robert, Mayflower pilot, deceived, 104.
Corbitant takes Squanto, 124, 136.
Corn. See *Indian Corn.*
Cotton, Rev. John, 332.
Coventry, Thomas, 256.
Crabe, Rev. Mr., 71.
Crackston, John, family, 532, 536.

Cromwell, Thomas, Captain, and his crew, 526, 527.
Crose, Daniel, murderer, escapes, 432.
Cushman, Mary, 539.
Cushman, Robert, agent to England, 40. Letters from, 46-49. Letter from S. F. *et al.*, 61, 62. Letters to S F. *et al.*, 63-68; to John Carver, 69; to Ed. S., 86-90. Comes in the Fortune, 126. Condemns Weston's colonists, 147. Letters from, 172, 191. Mentioned, 49, 50, 54, 58, 60, 69, 74-76, 85, 137. His death, 249.
Cutshamakin, 522, 525.
Damariscove Islands, 137, 187, 228, 251.
Dartmouth, England, 83, 86, 90.
Davenport, Lieutenant, 428.
Davidson, Wm., 488.
Davis, John, Sergeant, 514.
Delft-Haven, 72.
Dennison, Wm , 343.
Dermer, Captain, 115, 118.
Dorchester, 402, 406.
Doty, Edward, 532, 539.
Dudley, Thomas, 232, 342. Letter from, 379. Mentioned, 384, 399, 504.
Dumer, Richard, 399.
Dutch, 54, 196. Send letters, 281. Mentioned, 370, 372-374, 388.
Dutch letter, 268.
Dutchman at Hull, 17, 18, 409.
Duxbury, 362, 444, 457, 458, 474.
Earthquake in 1638, 437.
Eaton, Francis, 533, 538.
Eaton, Samuel, 533, 538.
Eaton, Sarah, 533, 538.
Eaton, Theoph., 504, 513, 525.
Elizabeth, Queen, 7.
Ely, seaman of Mayflower, 533.
Endicott, John, arrival of, with patent for Massachusetts, 286-314. Letter to Governor Bradford, 315, 442.
English, Thomas, seaman on the Mayflower, 533, 539.
Episcopius, 28.
Ewangsos, an Indian, 523.
Exeter jail, 303.
Falcon, ship, 410.
Familism, 461.
Farrar, Sir George, 63.
Fast, in Holland, 52; in Plymouth, 170.
Fells, Mr., 264, 265.
Fenwick, George, 504, 513, 525.
Fitcher, Lieutenant, at Merry-Mount, 284, 285.
Fleet Prison, 328, 393, 447.
Fletcher, Moses, 533, 538.
Fletcher, Thomas, 256.
Florida, 37.
Fogg, 339.
Fort Orange, now Albany, 282.
Fortune, arrival of the, 126. Departs, 133, 142.
France, 147, 148, 448.
Freeman, Edmund, 451, 456.
French robbery at Penobscot, 350.
French ship lost on Cape Cod, 118, 137.
Friendship, ship, 320, 328, 329, 333, 336, 338, 342, 343, 346, 347, 358, 360, 413, 455.
Fuller, Edward, and family, 533, 538.
Fuller, Samuel, letter from, 61. Letters from Cushman, 63-68. Mentioned, 93, 220, 315. His death, 374. Family, 532, 535.
Furnival's Inn, 284.
Galopp, John, 429.
Gardenar, Richard, 533, 538.
Gardiner, Sir Christopher, 352 *et seq.*
Gibbons commands, 518.
Gibbs, Mr., mate of the Sparrow, 275.
Girling, expedition of, to recover Penobscot, 396.
Glover, Rev. Mr., 408.
Goffe, Thomas, 256, 275.
Goodman, John, 533, 538.
Goodyeare, Stephen, 525.
Gorges, Sir Ferdinand, 115, 180, 300, 329, 355, 391.
Gorges, Robert, grant to, 178. Meets Mr. Weston, 179. Arrests him, 183. Returns to England, 184.
Gorton, Samuel, 528.
Gosnold, Captain, names Cape Cod, 94.
Gott, Charles, 316.
Granger, Thomas, 474.
Graves, Mr., 412.
Greene, Wm., 143, 144.
Green's harbor, 362.
Gregson, Thomas, 504, 513.
Greville, Sir Fulke, 46.
Griffin, Mr., 412.
Grimsbe and Hull, 18.
Gudburn, Peter, 256.
Guiana, 36, 55.

Hall, Mr., 410.
Hampton, 332.
Hanson, Captain, 183.
Hartford, 501, 510.
Hatherly, Timothy, 256, 296, 307, 309. Arrives in Massachusetts Bay, 319-329, 334, 335, 340. Affirms by oath, 342, 343, 345. At Bristol, 347. Again comes to America, 360, 439.
Hathorne, Wm., 513.
Haynes, John, governor of Massachusetts, 399.
Heath, Thomas, 256.
Hedgehog, fable of the, 211.
Hendrick, Prince, 249.
Hibbins, Wm., 479.
Higginson, Francis, 317.
Hingham, 439. Boundaries of, 440, 442.
Hobbamok, an Indian, 123-125, 135-137.
Hobson, Wm., 256.
Hocking, killed at the Kennebec, 377-384.
Holbeck, Wm., 532.
Holland, 15, 22, 30, 34, 42, 69, 71, 374, 393, 490.
Holland, Robert, 243, 256.
Hooke, John, 531, 535.
Hooker, Rev. Thomas, 234.
Hopkins, Constanta, 532, 536.
Hopkins, Damaris, 532.
Hopkins, Edward, 504, 513, 525.
Hopkins, Elizabeth, 532, 536.
Hopkins, Giles, 536.
Hopkins, Oceanus, born at sea, 532.
Hopkins, Stephen, 122. Visits Massasoit, 122. Family, 532, 536.
Houghe, Atherton, 399.
Howland, Elizabeth, 534.
Howland, John, falls overboard, 92, 452. Family, 531, 534.
Hubbard, Wm., historian, 329.
Huddleston, John, letter from, 150, 151.
Hudson, Thomas, 256.
Hudson's Bay, 196.
Hudson's River, 13.
Hull, 17, 18.
Humber River, 441.
Humfray, John, 399.
Hunt, Thomas, Captain, captor of Squanto, 115, 116.
Hunter, Rev. Joseph, 151, 197.
Hurricane at Plymouth, 401.
Indian corn, 100. Pilgrims take, and later pay for, 100, 123. Squanto teaches how to plant, 120. Indians raise more, 122. Pilgrims do not yet know how to raise, 152. Several hogsheads secured, 155. Each man to plant for himself, 162. Women and children set, 162. Fear about supply, 176.
Indians, expected danger from, 34, 95. First seen, 98. Their corn found, 99. About a grampus, 101. First alarm of, 102-104, 106. Skulking, 113. Mentioned, 119, 123, 127, 134, 136, 156, 157. Resolve to destroy western people, 158. Mentioned, 232, 253, 262. Value of wampum, 282. Taught by Morton, 286.
— Long Island, sachems of, 428.
— Mohawks, 427. Kill Sassacus, 430. Mentioned, 514.
— Monhiggs beat the Narragansetts, 430.
— Narragansetts, 123, 133, 135, 136, 148, 152, 186, 282, 416, 423, 424, 426, 430, 433, 496, 505. Agreement with, 521.
— Neepnetts, 429.
— Nyanticks, 512, 518. Agreement with, 521.
— Pequots, 232, 282, 371, 415, 416, 418. Attack English, 419, 420, 423-426, 430, 496, 505.
Innemo, Indian chief, 518.
Irish servants, 264.
Isle of Shoals, 291.
Jackson, Thomas, executed, 432.
James, a physician, 434.
James I., 13. Dies, 249. Named, 356.
James, ship, 192.
Jeffrey, Sergeant, 328.
Jenemo and Wipelock, 523.
Johnson, Rev. Francis, 48, 49.
Johnson, Mr., 330, 332.
Johnsone, alderman, 47.
Jonas, 525.
Jones, captain of the Discovery, 153.
Jones, captain of the Mayflower, 83.
Kean, Robert, 255, 256.
Kennebec, load of corn sent up the, 246. Mentioned, 267, 280, 282, 293, 300, 311, 326, 348, 379, 407, 421, 437. Patent at, 376.
Kent, 70.

King, Wm., 89.
Knight, Eliza, 256.
Knight, John, 256.
Knowles, Myles, 256.
Land's End, 84.
Langemore, John, 532.
Langrume, master of a ship, 410, 412.
Latham, Wm., 531, 534.
LaTour, French governor, 513.
Laud, Wm., archbishop, 391, 392.
Lee, Lord, 430.
Levett, Christopher, 179.
Leyden, 23, 54, 56, 66, 70. Departure thence, 71. Mentioned, 85, 96, 130, 143, 148, 189, 216, 249, 271, 293, 314.
Lincoln, Countess of, 51.
Lincolnshire, 13, 16.
Ling, John, 256.
Lister, Edward, 532, 539.
London, 69, 72, 73, 84, 86, 115, 195, 244. Plague in, 246, 357, 410.
London bridge, fire on, 367.
Low countries, 22, 26, 121, 296, 448, 489.
Ludlow, Mr., 428, 509.
Lyford, John, arrives, 204. Letters intercepted, 207, 208. Sets up a public meeting, 209. Cited before the court, 210. Mentioned, 213, 215, 219, 238, 292. His acknowledgment, 220. Writes to adventurers, 221. Their opinion of him, 223 *et seq* , 227, 229, 230. Censured, 232. Facts concerning, 232 *et seq*. Goes to Nantasket, 236. Dies, 237.
Lyon, ship, 363.
Maggner, Mr., 47.
Mahue, Mr., 360.
Malabar, Cape, 94.
Manamoick (Chatham), 117, 125, 155, 262.
Manoanscussett, 281, 415.
Manomet (Sandwich), 123. Pinace built at, 266. Mentioned, 281, 402.
Margeson, Edmond, 533, 538.
Marriage, first, at Plymouth, 121. By magistrates, 393.
Marshfield, 444, 458.
Martin, Christopher, 69, 70, 76, 87, 88, 532, 536.
Martyr, Peter, 164.
Mary, Queen, 7, 352.
Mary, Queen of Scots, 489.
Mary and Anne, 435.
Mason, Captain, with Gorges, 355, 391, 392.
Mason, John, Captain, and the Pequots, 428, 518.
Massachusetts, location of, 117. Bay, 149, 232, 265, 295. Gorges arrives in Bay, 178, 181. Arrival of Ralfe Smith, 314. Mr. Pierce and Mr. Hatherley come, 319, 320, 330, 342. Gardiner in, 352, 361. Roger Williams comes, 369. Mentioned, 371, 372, 382, 383, 403, 416, 419, 433. Boundaries between Massachusetts and Plymouth, 447.
Massasoit visits Plymouth, 114. Treaty with, 114. Embassy to, 122. Sends word concerning Billington, 123-125, 134, 136. Seeks Squanto's life, 137. Is sick, 158.
Masterson, Richard, 50, 374.
Maurice, Grave, dies, 249.
Mayflower, 296.
May-pole at Merry-Mount, 285, 286.
Meekesano, 525.
Merchant adventurers, agreement with, 70, 76. Weston and the, 138, 143. As to Lyford, 234. Broken up, 237. Names of, 256.
Merrimac River, 160.
Merry-Mount, 284.
Miantonimo, 505, 512.
Milford-Haven, 348.
Millsop, Thomas, 256.
Minter, Desire, 531, 534.
Mixano, 518.
Monhegan, 148, 185, 251.
Mononotto, an Indian, and his wife, 429, 430.
More, Ellen, 531.
More, Jasper, 531, 534.
More, Richard, 531, 533.
Morrell, Wm., Rev , comes with Robert Gorges, 185.
Morton, George, 59.
Morton, Thomas, at Mount Wollaston, 284 *et seq*. Arrested, 291, 302. Imprisoned in Boston, 303, 392.
Mott, Thomas, 256.
Mount Wollaston, 284 *et seq*.
Mullines, Joseph, 532, 536.
Mullines, Priscila, 532, 536, 539.
Mullines, Wm., 76. Family, 532, 536.
Nacata, 445.

Naemschatet, 445.
Namasket, 116.
Namassakett, 124.
Namskeket Creek, 263.
Nantasket, 236, 289.
Narragansetts. See *Indians*.
Nash, Mr., 61, 62.
Natawanute, 373.
Naumkeag (Salem), 235, 316.
Naunton, Sir Robert, 38.
Nauset (Eastham), 116, 123, 444.
Nequamkeck, falls of, 376.
Newbald, Fria, 256.
New-comin, John, killed by Billington, 330.
New England, 108, 115. Grant from council of, 167, 169, 178, 245. Confederation of plantations of, 496.
Newfoundland, 115.
New Haven, 458, 500–502, 509, 521.
Newtown, 399, 407.
Norton, Captain, 386.
Norton, Rev. John, 408.
Norway, 19.
Nottinghamshire, 13.
Novatians, 9.
Nowell, Increase, 399.
Nyanticks. See *Indians*.
Old-comers, 444.
Oldham, John, 206, 208. Resists Captain Standish, 209. Cited before the court, 210. Named, 216, 218, 219. Comes again, 229. Sent away, 230. Confesses, 231. Killed, 232. Mentioned, 237, 417, 418.
Oporto, 327, 343.
Orania (Orange) fort, 282.
Ossamequine, 522.
Ouse River, 441.
Paddy, Wm., 456.
Pampiamett, 513.
Paragon, ship, sent out by John Peirce, 166–168.
Partridge, Ralph, discusses baptism with Chauncey, 457. Letter from, 466.
Passaconaway, 522.
Passengers in the Mayflower, 531 *et seq*.
Patrick, Captain, 328.
Patucket River, 445.
Patuxet (Plymouth), 116.
Peach, Arthur, executed for murder, 432.
Peirce, Wm., master of Paragon, 169. Master of the Anne, 171, 186, 202, 207, 216. Comes from England, 230, 232, 234, 308, 319, 333, 361, 363. Letter from Virginia, 365-367, 412, 414. Carries Indians to West Indies, 429.
Pelham, Herbert, 525.
Pemaquid, 401.
Pemberton, John, 208.
Pennington, Wm., 256.
Penobscot, 116, 309, 326, 333, 349, 350, 382, 395, 400.
Pequots. See *Indians*.
Perkins, Mr., 9.
Perrin, Wm., 256.
Pessecuss, an Indian, 520, 524, 525.
Peters, Hugh, 479 *et seq*.
Pickering, Edward, 58, 60, 138, 140, 143. Letter to Bradford and Brewster, 144, 145.
Pierce, John, 76, 143. Likes not Weston's company, 148. Sends the Paragon, 166 *et seq*. Charter taken in name of, 167.
Pilgrims resolve to go to the low countries, 14. Fate of families left behind, 20. Remove to Leyden, 23. Obtain patent from Virginia company, 50, 51. Agreement with Weston and merchant adventurers, 56, 70. Their vessels, 71, 72. Choose governor and assistants, 83. Sail, 83. Put back, 83. Dismiss the Speedwell, 84. List of the, in the Mayflower, 531 *et seq*. Descry Cape Cod, 93. Give thanks, 94. First see Indians, 98. Find kettle and Indian corn, 99. First encounter with Indians, 102. Lay out house lots, 107. Their compact, 109. Choose John Carver governor, 109. Visited by Samoset, 113; by Squanto and Massasoit, 114. Treaty with Massasoit, 114. Harvest, 1622, 152. Their meeting house, 152.
Pinchon, 399, 404.
Piscataqua River, 160, 251, 267, 377, 383.
Plague in London, 246, 357.
Plantations, commission for regulating, 249, 540.
Pliny, 201.
Plymouth, Eng., Pilgrims put into, 84, 244.

Plymouth, N. E., 1, 90, 116, 117, 127, 160, 251, 314, 332, 349, 363, 380. Bounds between, and Massachusetts, 442.
Pocock, John, 256.
Point Care, 94.
Point Peril, 445.
Pokanokets, 116.
Poliander, John, 28.
Portsmouth, 169, 244, 246.
Pory, John, secretary, 153.
Powows, 118.
Poynton, Daniel, 256.
Preist, Digerie, 533, 538.
Prince, Thos., chosen governor, 375, 432. Mentioned, 380, 381, 452, 525.
Prices of live stock, 436.
Providence, 515.
Prower, Salamon, 532.
Punham, 522.
Pummunish, 513, 525.
Puritans, name, 8.
Quarles, Wm., 256.
Rasdell, Mr., at Mt. Wollaston, 284.
Rasieres, Isaac de, 269. Reply to his letter, 270, 281.
Rayner, John, Rev., 419, 457. Letter from, 464.
Rehoboth, 444.
Revell, John, 256.
Reynolds, 67. Captain of the Speedwell, 83. Puts back twice, 83, 84. Referred to, 147, 208.
Rigdale, Alice, 533, 537.
Rigdale, John, 533, 537.
Riggs, Sergeant, 328.
Robinson, John, Rev., 14. Goes to Holland, 22-24, 27. Disputes with Arminius, 28. Correspondence with Sir Edwin Sandys, 40–43; with Sir John Worstenholm, 43-46, 48, 54. Letters to John Carver, 58-61, 77, 78; to Pilgrims, 78-82, 88, 130, 153. Letter to Governor Bradford, 197; to Wm. Brewster, 198, 216, 238. Dead, 247 *et seq.*
Rogers, Mr., at Plymouth, 292.
Rogers, Joseph, 533, 537.
Rogers, Thomas, 533, 537.
Rome, 25, 66.
Rookes, Newman, 256.
Sagadahoc, wreck at, 251.
Salem, 235, 295, 316, 317, 330, 370, 383.
Salt-making, 191, 192, 203.
Saly (Saller), 245.
Samoset visits Plymouth, 113.
Samson, Henry, 532, 537.
Sanders, John, chief of Weston's men, 155.
Sandwich, 444.
Sandys, Sir Edwin, letter from, 40-43, 46. Governor of Virginia company, 47.
Sassacus, sachem, 427. Killed, 430.
Satucket, 116.
Say, Lord, 378, 384.
Scituate, 440-444, 458.
Scotland, 448.
Scott, false, 351.
Scurvy, Pilgrims suffer from, 110.
Seekonk, 434, 444, 518.
Seneca, 94, 200.
Sharpe, Samuel, 256.
Sheriver, Mr., 50.
Sherley, James, letters to Pilgrims, 189 *et seq.*, 193, 300, 302, 304, 321, 333. Letters to Governor Bradford, 275 *et seq.*, 295. Letters from, 335 *et seq.*, 346, 359, 367 *et seq.*, 381, 394, 410, 412, 450. Settlement with, 452. Letters to Atwood, 478; to partners, 478, 485. His release, 480. Mentioned, 249, 255, 256, 278, 279, 293, 304, 306, 307, 309, 313, 318, 340, 342, 344, 347-350, 357, 360, 363, 375, 414, 415, 431, 435, 439, 446.
Shoanan, sachem, 522.
Sibsie, Mr., 220.
Skelton, Samuel, 317.
Small-pox among Indians on the Connecticut, 388.
Smith, Francis, 514.
Smith, John, 23, 94. His map, 441.
Smith, John, Rev., 14, 23.
Smith, Ralph, Rev., 314. Resigns his ministry, 418.
Smith, Sir Thomas, 47.
Sodomy, 459 *et seq.*
Sokanoke, 522.
Southampton, 67. Arrive at, 71. Mentioned, 73, 87, 88, 533.
Souther, Nathaniel, 456.
Southworth, Edward, letter from Robt. Cushman, 86-90.
Sowams, 115.
Sowansett River, 445.

Sowle, George, 531, 535.
Spain, 115, 358.
Sparrow, ship, 145.
Speedwell, ship, 71, 72, 84.
Squanto, history of, 113-117. Teaches corn planting, 120. With embassy to Massasoit, 122. Mentioned, 124, 125, 130, 135, 148. Seeks his own ends, 136, 137. Dies, 155.
Stamford, 509.
Standish, Myles, leads a party up Cape Cod, 98. Labors for sick, 111. Goes with party about Cape Cod, 155. Rescues some of Weston's people, 159. Lyford's opinion of, 217. Sent to England, 245. Comes home, 247, 252, 272, 278. Arrests Morton, 291, 379-381. Goes to the Penobscot, 397. Mentioned, 446, 452, 458, 518, 532, 536.
Standish, Rose, 532, 536.
Stanton, Thomas, interpreter, 428.
Staresmore, Sabin (S. B.), 46. Letter to Carver, 50, 51.
Stinnings, Richard, executed for murder, 432.
Stone, Captain, influences governor of Dutch plantation, 385. Killed, 386. Mentioned, 416, 418.
Story, Elias, 531.
Stoughton, Israel, commissioner, 442.
Stoughton, Mr., 429.
Straton, 339.
Sturgs, Thomas, 481.
Taborites, 25.
Talbut, ship, 296.
Tarantines, 125.
Tassaquanawite, 523.
Taunton, 444.
Thanksgiving, first, 126.
Thomas, Wm., 565.
Thompson, David, at the mouth of the Piscataqua, 185, 251, 252.
Thompson, Edward, 532.
Thorned, Thomas, 256.
Thornhill, Matthew, 256.
Tilden, Joseph, 256.
Tillie, Ann, 532, 537.
Tillie, Edward, 532, 537.
Tillie, Elizabeth, 532, 534, 537.
Tillie, John, 532, 534, 537.
Tinker, Thomas, 533, 537.
Tirrey, Arthur, 481.
Trask, Captain, 328.
Trent, River, 441.
Trevore, Wm., 148, 533.
Trumball, Wm., 357.
Tucker's Terror, 94.
Turkeys, wild, 126.
Turner, John, 66, 67, 533, 538.
Uncas, Monhigg chief, 430, 505, 510 *et seq.*, 514, 521, 523.
Uncaway, 509.
Union of the New England colonies, 496.
Vane, Sir Harry, 419, 430.
Vines, Richard, 338.
Virginia, 36, 37, 41, 49, 55, 67, 86, 108, 117, 127, 138, 149, 150, 152, 153, 170, 181. Ship bound for, 261, 265, 266. Mentioned, 364, 385, 414.
Virginia company, 38, 39, 46, 47, 54, 108.
Virginia court and council, 46.
Walloons, 27.
Wampum, value of, 282.
Ward, Thomas, 256.
Warren, Richard, 532, 537.
Warwick, Earl of, 300, 526.
Water, first drink of, in New England, 99.
Waughwamino, 524.
Weequashcooke, 523.
Weesagascussett, 289.
Weetowish, 513, 518, 525.
Weld, Thomas, 479 *et seq.*
West, Francis, admiral for New England, 169, 178.
Weston, Andrew, 144.
Weston, Thos., 52, 54-56, 59, 60, 62, 63, 67, 69, 74, 88. Writes Governor Carver, 128, 129. Sends fishing vessel, 137. Letters to Mr. Carver, 137-140. Letter to Governor Bradford, 142-144. Remarks in letter of Pickering and Greene, 145. Mentioned, 141, 146, 149, 150, 166, 178, 186, 189. His people in trouble, 154 *et seq.* Comes in disguise, 160. His ingratitude, 161. Arrives with small ship, 179. Cited before Robert Gorges, 179 *et seq.* Arrested, 183. Dies, 184.
Westminster, 411.
Weymouth, 442.
White, Mr., counsellor, 234.
White, John, Rev., 256.
White, Peregrine, 532, 536.
White, Resolved, 532, 536, 539.

White, Roger, letter from, 248.
White, Susannah, 532, 535.
White, Wm., 532, 535, 536.
White Angel, ship, 320, 321, 326, 328, 329, 333–335, 337, 338, 343, 344, 346, 350, 361, 364, 390, 394, 395, 413, 455.
Wilder, Roger, 531, 534.
Wilkinson, Ed., master of the Falcon, 410, 412.
Willett, Thomas, agent at Penobscot, 395.
Williams, Roger, 369 *et seq.* Pacifies Indians, 434, 515.
Williams, Thomas, 533, 538.
Willson, Mr., surgeon, 430.
Wilson, John, 332.
Wincot, Jacob, 51.
Winnisimmet, 289.
Winslow, Edward, 62. Visits Massasoit, 122. Visits Captain Huddleston, 151. Brings cattle, 189. Comes from England, 230. Calls Lyford a knave, 236. Goes up the Kennebec, 247. Mentioned, 134, 177, 191, 208, 216, 234, 242, 244, 251, 278, 300, 312, 319, 329, 333, 336, 337, 344, 346, 350, 357, 380, 384, 392–394, 408, 442, 446, 452, 513, 527. Chosen governor, 366, 409, 507. In England, 389. Petition of, 390. Family, 531, 535.
Winslow, Elizabeth, 531.
Winslow, Gilbert, 533, 538.
Winslow, Josias, 452.
Winthrop, John, 330-332, 342. Letters from, 354, 417, 420, 427. Mentioned, 382-384, 399, 446, 504, 525.
Wollaston, Captain, 283. His ventures, 284.
Worstenholme, Sir John, 43, 45, 47.
Wraight, Henry, 256.
Yarmouth, 444, 445.
Yeardley, Sir Geo., 47.
Yonge, Joseph, 435.
Yorkshire, 13.
Zealand, 17.
Ziska, 25.

WITHDRAWN
No longer the property of the
Boston Public Library.
Sale of this material benefits the Library.

JAN 6 1943